ARLINGTON
EDITION

Harvey & Black.
Dec. 20, 1903

Florence H Black
Feb 22 1912

THE

Swiss Family Robinson

OR

Adventures of a Father and Mother and Four Sons in a Desert Island

ILLUSTRATED

New York
HURST & COMPANY

PREFACE

TO THE

SEVENTH EDITION OF THE SWISS FAMILY ROBINSON.

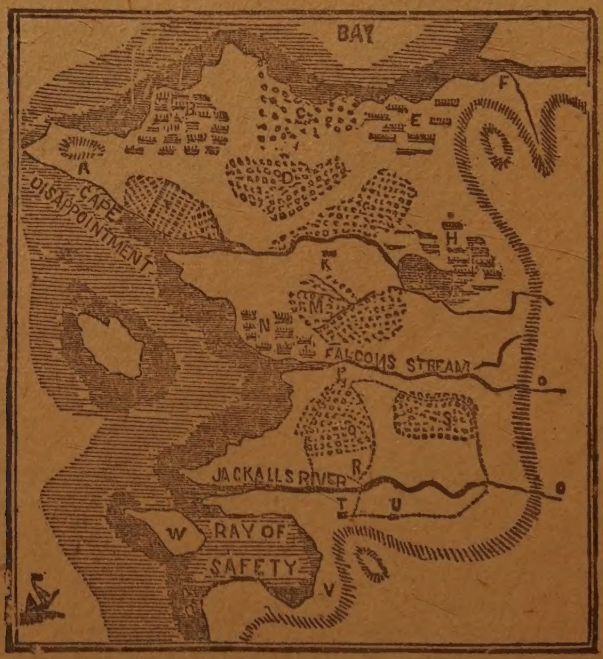
The Editor confesses that he expected the favor which has been shown by the Public to the present work, in the sale of six large editions; for the situations it exhibits of the best affections of our nature are such as to "come home to every bosom," to interest and gratify both parents and children of all ages and descriptions. In its pages the useful, the moral, and the entertaining, so naturally mix with or succeed each other, that every generous taste is suited. No story can be better calculated than this of the Swiss Pastor and his Family to awaken and reward curiosity, to excite amiable sympathies, to show the young inquirer after good, that the accidents of life may be repaired by the efforts of his own thought, and the constancy of his own industry; and to rouse the most inert to emulation.—What youthful reader of lively dispositions, who would not try to possess or dream of the posession of, a saw, a hammer, and some nails, and hurry in fancy to the contrivance of a *Family Bridge*, a *staircase* to *Falcon's Nest*, or *a parlor*, *a bedroom*, and *kitchen*, in a *Rock of Salt?* What lad who can see with unflushed cheek, *Ernest*, and *Jack*, and *Francis*, all together on the back of their ferocious but now subdued *buffalo*, and guiding his motions at their pleasure; or descry "*Fritz driving along our avenue like lightning*," on his disciplined *onagra*, without feeling his personal courage expand as he turns the page? What heart that will not swell with kindness for the exemplary mother of the family, who tastes not of the refreshing draught obtained by her own care and labor, till all her dear ones have drunk and are refreshed?—or what eye repress a tear when her little Francis, clinging to her side, cries, "*Welcome!*"

too, "*though not well knowing whether he was to be sad or merry?*" Who does not partake the affecting sentiment of the interesting group, who, "*with their heads sinking on their bosoms, took the road to Tent-House,*" when the ship had disappeared forever! And can we sufficiently admire the fortitude, the self-sacrifice, the industry, the fervor, the almost unexampled skill, that guided this affectionate pair to results so happy, in circumstances of such dismay and danger!

ADVERTISEMENT BY THE EDITOR.

A Pastor or Clergyman of West Switzerland, having lost his fortune in the Revolution of 1798, resolved, on reflecting on the family he had to bring up, to become a voluntary exile, and to seek in other climates the means of support. He sailed, accordingly, with his wife and children, four sons, from twelve to five years of age, for England, where he accepted an appointment of Missionary to Otaheite; not that he had any desire to take up his abode in that Island, but that he had conceived the plan of passing from thence to Port Jackson, and domiciliating himself there as a free settler. He possessed a considerable knowledge of agriculture, and by this means hoped, with the aid of his sons, to gain an advantageous establishment, which his own country, convulsed with the horrors of war, denied him. He turned the small remnant of his fortune into money, and bought with it seeds of various sorts, and a few cattle, as a farming stock. The family took their passage accordingly, satisfied with this consolation—that they should still remain together; and they sailed with favorable winds till in sight of New Guinea. Here they were attacked by a destructive and unrelenting tempest; and it is in this crisis of their Adventures that the Swiss Pastor, or Family Robinson, begins the Journal which is now presented to the Public.

SETTLEMENT OF THE SWISS PASTOR AND HIS FAMILY.



A. Arcadia.
B. Sugar Canes.
C. Cabbage Palm Wood.
D. Gourd Wood.
E. Bamboos.
F. Pass—Drawbridge.
G. Acorn Wood.
H. Rice Marsh.
I. Monkey Wood.
K. The Farm.
Lake.
M. Cotton Wood.
N. Flamingo Marsh.
O. Cascade.
P. Falcon's Nest.
Q. Palm Cocoa Wood.
R. Family Bridge.
S. Potato Plantation.
T. Tent-House.
U. Grotto.
V. Marsh.
W. Shark's Island.

CONTENTS.

PART I.

CHAP.		PAGE.
I.	A Shipwreck, and Preparation for Deliverance	9
II.	A Landing, and Consequent Occupations	17
III.	Voyage and Discovery	29
IV.	Return from the Voyage of Discovery;—a Nocturnal Alarm	44
V.	Return to the Wreck	56
VI.	A Troop of Animals in Cork Jackets	64
VII.	Second Journey of Discovery, performed by the Mother of the Family	72
VIII.	Construction of a Bridge	82
IX.	Change of abode	90
X.	Construction of a Ladder	99
XI.	The Settling in the Giant Tree	106
XII.	The Sabbath and the Parable	109
XIII.	Conversation, a Walk, and Important Discoveries	120
XIV.	Continuation of the preceding Chapter, and more Discoveries	125
XV.	Hopes of a Sledge;—some short Lessons in useful Things	133
XVI.	A Bathing, a Fishing, the Jumping Hare, and a Masquerade	136
XVII.	More Stores from the Wreck	142
XVIII.	The Tortoise Harnessed	146
XIX.	Another Trip to the Wreck	151
XX.	The Cracker, and the Pinnace	158
XXI.	Gymnastic Exercises;—various Discoveries;—singular Animals, &c	167
XXII.	Excursion into unknown tracts	178
XXIII.	Useful Occupations and Labors;—Embellishments;—A painful but natural Sentiment	186
XXIV.	A new Domain;—the Troop of Buffaloes;—the Vanquished Hero	193
XXV.	The Malabar Eagle;—Sago Manufactory;—Bees	202
XXVI.	Treatment of Bees;—Staircase;—Training of various Animals;—Manufactures, &c	210

CHAP. PAGE.
XXVII. The Wild Ass;—Difficulty in Breaking it;—The Heath-Fowl's Nest 217
XXVIII. Flax, and the Rainy Season 225
XXIX. Spring;—Spinning;—Salt Mine 233
XXX. House in the Salt-Rock;—Herring Fishery. 242
XXXI. New Fishery; — New Experiments; — New Discoveries, and House 247
XXXII. Completion of two Farm-Houses;—a Lake;—the Beast with a Bill;—a Boat 256
Postscript by the Editor 266

PART II.

XXXIII. A Storm 269
XXXIV. Lightning and wonderful Escape 274
XXXV Safe Return of the Boys 280
XXXVI. Adventures;—Returning Calm 283
XXXVII. Expedition in search of the Vessel 287
XXXVIII. Home Employments;—Plans, &c 292
XXXIX. A Chest;—its contents—and their appropriation 297
XL. A Forge.—Ingenious Bellows, and other improvements 301
XLI. A Grotto;—its Discovery and Enlargement 306
XLII. Journey in the Litter to Tent-House 311
XLIII. Occupation of Tent-House 316
XLIV. Expedition of Discovery;—Results;—Brown Bears 323
XLV. Bivouac;—The Stars 330
XLVI. Attempted Return;—Loss of the Canoe 333
XLVII. Bitter Disappointment at Tent-House 338
XLVIII. Voyage in the Pinnace 343
XLIX. Disembarkation and Exploration 348
L. Continued Misfortunes 351
LI. Shoal of Whales;—Pursuit of the Savages .. 359
LII. A Missionary of God 363
LIII. Joyful Re-Union 373
LIV. Madame Hirtel's Narrative 381
LV. Continuation of the Narrative 388
LVI. The Narrative Concluded 398
LVII. Embarkation for, and arrival at the Island, and return to Tent-House 403
Conclusion 412
Postscript Two Years After 415

SWISS FAMILY ROBINSON

CHAPTER I.

A SHIPWRECK, AND PREPARATIONS FOR DELIVERANCE.

* * * * ALREADY the tempest had continued six days; on the seventh its fury seemed still increasing; and the morning dawned upon us without a prospect of hope, for we had wandered so far from the right track, and were so forcibly driven toward the south-east, that none on board knew where we were. The ship's company were exhausted by labor and watching, and the courage that had sustained them, was now sinking. The shivered masts had been cast into the sea; several leaks appeared, and the ship began to fill. The sailors forbore from swearing; many were at prayer on their knees, while others offered miracles of future piety, and goodness, as the condition of their release from danger. "My beloved children," said I to my four boys, who clung to me in their fright, "God can save us, for nothing is impossible to him. We must however hold ourselves resigned, and instead of murmuring at his decree, rely that what he sees fit to do is best, and that should he call us from this earthly scene, we shall be near him in heaven, and united through eternity. Death may be well supported when it does not separate those who love."

My excellent wife wiped the tears which were falling on her cheeks, and from this moment became more tranquil; she encouraged the youngest children, who were leaning on her knees; while I, who owed them an example of firmness, was scarcely able to resist my grief at the thought of what would most likely

be the fate of beings so tenderly beloved. We all fell on our knees, and supplicated the God of Mercy to protect us; and the emotion and fervor of the innocent creatures, are a convincing proof that, even in childhood, devotion may be felt and understood, and that tranquility and consolation, its natural effects, may at that season be no less certainly experienced. Fritz, my eldest son, implored in a loud voice, that God would deign to save his dear parents and his brothers, generously unmindful of himself: the boys rose from their posture with a state of mind so improved, that they seemed forgetful of the impending danger. I myself began to feel my hopes increase as I beheld the affecting group. Heaven will surely have pity on them, thought I, and will save their parents to guard their tender years!

At this moment a cry of "Land, Land!" was heard through the roaring of the waves, and instantly the vessel struck against a rock with so violent a motion as to drive every one from his place; a tremendous cracking succeeded, as if the ship was going to pieces; the sea rushed in, in all directions; we perceived that the vessel had grounded, and could not long hold together. The captain called out that all was lost, and bade the men lose not a moment in putting out the boats. The sounds fell on my heart like a thrust from a dagger; "We are lost!" I exclaimed; and the children broke out into piercing cries. I then recollected myself, and addressing them again, exhorted them to courage, by observing that the water had not yet reached us, that the ship was near land; and that Providence would assist the brave. "Keep where you are," added I, "while I go and examine what is best to be done."

I now went on the deck. A wave instantly threw me down, and wetted me to the skin; another followed, and then another. I sustained myself as steadily as I could; and looking around, a scene of terrific and complete disaster met my eyes: the ship was shattered in all directions, and on one side there was a complete breach. The ship's company crowded into the boats till they could contain not one man more, and the last who entered, were now cutting the ropes to move off. I called to them with almost frantic entreaties to stop and receive us also, but in vain; for the roaring of the sea prevented my being heard, and the waves which rose to the height of mountains, would have made it impossible to return. All hope from this source was over, for while I spoke, the boats, and all they contained, were driving out of sight. My best consolation now was to observe, that the slanting position the ship had taken,

would afford us present protection from the water, and that the stern, under which was the cabin that enclosed all that was dear to me on earth, had been driven upwards between two rocks and seemed immovably fixed. At the same time, in the distance southward, I described through clouds and rain several nooks of land which though rude and savage in appearance, were the objects of every hope I could form in this distressing moment.

Sunk and desolate from the loss of all chance of human aid, it was yet my duty to appear serene before my family: "Courage, dear ones," cried I, on entering their cabin, "let us not desert ourselves: I will not conceal from you that the ship is aground; but we are at least in greater safety than if she were beating upon the rocks: our cabin is above water; and should the sea be more calm to-morrow, we may yet find means to reach the land in safety."

What I had just said, appeased their fears; for my family had the habit of confiding in my assurances. They now began to feel the advantage of the ship's remaining still; for its motion had been most distressing, by jostling them one against another, or whatever happened to be nearest. My wife, however, more accustomed than the children to read my inmost thoughts, perceived the anxiety which devoured me. I made her a sign which conveyed an idea of the hopelessness of our situation, and I had the consolation to see that she was resolved to support the trial with resignation; "Let us take some nourishment," said she, "our courage will strengthen with our bodies; we shall perhaps need this comfort to support a long and melancholy night."

Soon after, the night set in: the fury of the tempest had not abated; the planks and beams of the vessel separated in many parts with a horrible crash. We thought of the boats, and feared that all they contained must have sunk under the foaming surge.

My wife had prepared a slender meal, and the four boys partook of it with an appetite to which their parents were strangers. They went to bed, and exhausted by fatigue, soon were snoring soundly. Fritz, the eldest, sat up with us: "I have been thinking," said he after a long silence, "how it may be possible to save ourselves. If we had some bladders or cork-jackets for my mother and my brothers, you and I, father, would soon contrive to swim to land."

"That is a good thought" said I: "we will see what can be done."

Fritz and I looked about for some small empty firkins: these we tied two and two together with handkerchiefs or towels, leaving about a foot distance between them, and fastened them as swimming jackets under the arms of each child, my wife at the same time preparing one for herself. We provided ourselves with knives, some string, some turfs, and other necessaries which could be put into the pocket, proceeding upon the hope that if the ship went to pieces in the night, we should either be able to swim to land, or be driven thither by the waves.

Fritz, who had been up all night, and was fatigued with his laborious occupations, now lay down near his brothers, and was soon asleep; but their mother and I, too anxious to close our eyes, kept watch, listening to every sound that seemed to threaten a future change in our situation. We passed this awful night in prayer, in agonizing apprehensions, and in forming various resolutions as to what we should next attempt. We hailed with joy the first gleam of light which shot through a small opening of the window. The raging of the winds had begun to abate, the sky was become serene, and hope throbbed in my bosom, as I beheld the sun already tinging the horizon. Thus revived, I summoned my wife and the boys to the deck, to partake of the scene. The youngest children, half forgetful of the past, asked with surprise why we were there alone, and what had become of the ship's company? I led them to the recollection of our misfortune, and then added: "Dearest children, a Being more powerful than man has helped us, and will, no doubt continue to help us, if we do not abandon ourselves to a fruitless despair. Observe, our companions, in whom we had so much confidence, have deserted us, and that Divine Providence, in its goodness, has given us protecton. But, my dear ones, let us show ourselves willing in our exertions, and thus deserve support from Heaven. Let us not forget this useful maxim, and let each labor according to his strength."

Fritz advised that we should all throw ourselves into the sea, while it was calm, and swim to land,—"Ah! that may be well enough for you," said Ernest, "for you can swim; but we others should soon be drowned. Would it not be better to make a float of rafts, and to set to land altogether upon it?"

"Vastly well," answered I, "if we had the means for contriving such a float, and if after all, it were not a dangerous sort of conveyance. But come, my boys, look each of you about the ship and see what can be done to enable us to reach the land."

They now all sprang from me with eager looks, to do as I

desired. I, on my part, lost no time in examing what we had to depend upon as to provisions and fresh water. My wife and the youngest boy visited the animals, whom they found in a pitiable condition, nearly perishing with hunger and thirst. Fritz repaired to the ammunition room, Ernest in the carpenter's cabin, and Jack to the apartment of the captain; but scarcely had he opened the door, when two large dogs sprang upon him, and saluted him with such rude affection, that he roared for assistance, as if they had been killing him. Hunger, however, had rendered the poor creatures so gentle, that they licked his hands and face, uttering all the time a low sort of moan, and continuing their caresses till he was almost suffocated. Poor Jack exerted all his strength in blows to drive them away, at last he began to understand, and to sympathize in their joyful movements, and put himself upon another footing; he got upon his legs; and gently taking the largest dog by the ears, sprang upon his back, and with great gravity presented himself thus mounted before me, as I came out of the ship's hold. I could not refrain from laughing, and I praised his courage, but I added a little exhortation to be cautious, and not to go too far with animals of this species, who, in state of hunger, might be dangerous.

By and by my little company were again assembled round me, and each boasted of what he had to contribute. Fritz had two fowling pieces, some powder, and small shot, contained in horn flasks, and some bullets in bags.

Ernest produced his hat filled with nails, and held in his hands a hatchet and a hammer; in addition, a pair of pincers, a pair of large scissors, and an auger, peeped out at his pocket-hole.

Even the little Francis carried under his arm a box of no very small size, from which he eagerly produced what he called some little sharp-pointed hooks. His brothers smiled scornfully. "Vastly well, gentlemen," said I; "but let me tell you the youngest has brought the most valuable prize: and this is often the case in the world; the person who least courts the smiles of Fortune, and in the calm of his heart is scarcely conscious of her existence, is often he to whom she most readily presents herself. These little sharp-pointed hooks, as Francis calls them, are fishing-hooks, and will probably be of more use in preserving our lives, than we all may find besides in the ship. In justice, however, I must confess, that what Fritz and Ernest have contributed, will also afford essential service."

"I, for my part," said my wife, "have brought nothing; but

I have some tidings to communicate which I hope will secure my welcome: I have found on board, a cow and an ass, two goats, six sheep and a sow big with young: I have just supplied them with food and water, and I reckon on being able to preserve their lives."

"All this is admirable," said I to my young laborers; "and there is only master Jack, who, instead of thinking of something useful, has done us the favor to present us two personages, who, no doubt, will be principally distinguished by being willing to eat more than we shall have to give them."

"Ah!" replied Jack, "but if we can once get to land, you will see that they will assist us in hunting and shooting."

"True enough," said I, "but be so good as to tell us how we are to get to land, and whether you have contrived the means?"

"I am sure it cannot be very difficult," said Jack, with an arch motion of his head. "Look at these large tubs. Why cannot each of us get into one of them, and float to land? I remember I succeeded very well in this manner on the water, when I was visiting my godfather at S* * *."

"Every one's thought is good for something," cried I, "and I begin to believe that what Jack has suggested is worth a trial: quick! then, boy, give me the saw, the auger, and some nails; we will see what is to be done." I recollected having seen some empty casks in the ship's hold: we went down, and found them floating in the water which had got into the vessel; it cost us but little trouble to hoist them up, and place them on the lower deck, which was at that time scarcely above water. We saw with joy, that they were all sound, well guarded by iron hoops, and in every respect in good condition; they were exactly suited for the object; and, with the assistance of my sons, I instantly began to saw them in two. In a short time I had produced eight tubs, of equal size, and of the proper height. We now allowed ourselves some refreshment of wine and biscuit. I was surprised to see that my wife did not partake our eagerness; she sighed deeply as she looked at them: "Never, never," cried she, "can I venture to get into one of these."

"Do not decide so hastily, my dear," said I: "my plan is not yet complete; and you will see presently, that it is more worthy of our confidence than this shattered vessel, which cannot move from its place."

I then sought for a long pliant plank, and placed my eight tubs upon it, leaving a piece at each end, reaching beyond the tubs; which, bent upward, would present an outline like the

keel of a vessel; we next nailed all the tubs to the plank, and then the tubs to each other as they stood, side by side, to make them the firmer, and afterwards two other planks, of the same length as the first, on each side of the tubs. When all this was finished, we found we had produced a kind of narrow boat, divided into eight compartments, which I had no doubt would be able to perform a short course, in calm water.

But now we discovered that the machine we had contrived was so heavy, that with the strength of all united, we were not able to move it an inch from its place. I bade Fritz fetch me a crow, who soon returned with it: in the mean while, I sawed a thick round pole into several pieces, to make some rollers I then, with the crow, easily raised the foremost part of my machine, while Fritz placed one of the rollers under it.

"How astonishing," cried Ernest, "that this engine, which is smaller than any of us, can do more than our united strength was able to effect! I wish I could know how it is constituted."

I explained to him as well as I could, the power of Archimedes's lever, with which he said he could move the world, if you would give him a point from which his mechanism might act, and promised to explain the nature of the operation of the crow when we should be safe on land.

One of the points of my system of education for my sons was, to awaken their curiosity by interesting observations, to leave time for the activity of the imagination, and then to correct any error they might fall into. I contented myself now, however, with this general remark, that God sufficiently compensated the natural weakness of man by the gifts of reason, of invention, and the adroitness of the hands; and that human meditation and skill had produced a science, called mechanics, the object of which was, to teach us how to make our own natural strength act to an incredible distance, and with extraordinary force, by the intervention of instruments.

Jack here remarked, that the action of the crow was very slow.

"Better slow than never, Jack," replied I. "Experience has ever taught, and mechanical observations have established as a principle, that what is gained in speed, is lost in strength: the purpose of the crow is not to enable us to raise anything rapidly, but to raise what is exceedingly heavy; and the heavier the thing we would move, the slower is the mechanical operation. But are you aware what we have at our command, to compensate this slowness?"

"Yes: it is turning the handle quicker."

"Your guess is wrong; that would be no compensation. The true remedy, my boy, is to call in the assistance of patience and reason: with the aid of these two fairy powers, I am in hopes to set my machine afloat." As I said this, I tied a long cord to the stern, and the other end of it to one of the timbers of the ship, which appeared to be still firm, so that the cord being left loose, would serve to guide and restrain it when launched. We now put a second and third roller under, and applying the crow, to our great joy our machine descended into the water with such a velocity, that if the rope had not been well fastened, it would have gone far out to sea. But now a new difficulty presented itself: the boat leaned so much on one side, that the boys all exclaimed they could not venture to get into it. I was for some moments in the most painful perplexity; but it suddenly occurred to me, that ballast only was wanting to set it straight. I drew it near, and threw all the useless things I could find into the tubs, so as to make the weight on the light side: by degrees the machine became quite straight and firm in the water, seeming to invite us to take refuge in its protection. All now would get into the tubs, and the boys began to dispute which should be first. I drew them back, and seeking a remedy for this kind of obstacle, I recollected that savage nations make use of a paddle for preventing their canoes from upsetting. I once more set to work, to make one of these.

I took two poles of equal length, upon which the sails of the vessel had been stretched, and having descended into the machine, fixed one of them at the head, and the other at the stern, in such a manner as to enable us to turn them at pleasure to right or left, as should best answer the purpose of guiding and putting it out to sea. I stuck the end of each pole, or paddle, into the bung-hole of an empty brandy-keg, which served to keep the paddles steady, and to prevent any interruption in the management of our future enterprise.

There remained nothing more to do, but to find in what way I could clear out from the encumbrance of the wreck. I got into the first tub, and steered the head of the machine, so as to enter the cleft in the ship's side, where it could remain quiet. I then remounted the vessel, and sometimes with the saw and sometimes with the hatchet, I cleared away to right and left, everything that could obstruct our passage; and that being effected, we next secured some oars for the voyage we resolved on attempting.

We had spent the day in laborious exertions; it was already

fate; and as it would not have been possible to reach the land that evening, we were obliged to pass a second night in the wrecked vessel, which at every instant threatened to fall to pieces. We next refreshed ourselves by a regular meal; for, during the day's work, we had scarcely allowed ourselves to take a bit of bread or a glass of wine. Being now in a more tranquil and unapprehensive state of mind than the day before, we all abandoned ourselves to sleep; not, however, till I had used the precaution of tying the swimming apparatus round my three youngest boys and my wife, in case the storm should again come on. I also advised my wife to dress herself in the clothes of one of the sailors, which were so much more convenient for swimming, or any other exertions she might be compelled to engage in. She consented, but not without reluctance, and left us to look for some that might best suit her size. In a quarter of an hour she returned, dressed in the clothes of a young man who had served as volunteer on board the ship. She could not conceal the timid awkwardness so natural to her sex in such a situation; but I soon found means to reconcile her to the change, by representing the many advantages it gave her, till she at length joined in the merriment her dress occasioned, and one and all crept into our separate hammocks, where a delicious repose prepared us for the renewal of our labors.

CHAPTER II.

A LANDING AND CONSEQUENT OCCUPATIONS.

By break of day we were all awake and alert, for hope as well as grief is unfriendly to lengthened slumbers. When we had finished our morning prayer, I said, "We now, my best beloved, with the assistance of Heaven, must enter upon the work of our deliverance. The first thing to be done is to give each poor animal on board a hearty meal. We will then put food enough before them for several days. We cannot take them with us, but we will hope it may be possible, if our voyage succeeds, to return and fetch them. Are you now all ready? Bring together whatever is absolutely necessary for our wants. It is my wish that our first cargo should consist of a barrel of gun-powder, three fowling pieces, and

three carbines, with as much small shot and lead, and as many bullets as our boat will carry; two pair of pocket-pistols, and one of large ones, not forgetting a mould to cast balls in; each of the boys, and their mother also, should have a bag to carry game in; you will find plenty of these in the cabins of the officers."—We added a chest containing cakes of portable soup, another full of hard biscuits, an iron pot, a fishing rod, a chest of nails, and another of different utensils, such as hammers, saws, pincers, hatchets, augers, &c., and lastly, some sail-cloth to make a tent. Indeed, the boys brought so many things, that we were obliged to reject some of them, though I had already exchanged the worthless ballast for articles of use in the question of our subsistence.

When all was ready, we stepped bravely each into a tub. At the moment of our departure the cocks and hens began to cluck, as if conscious that we had deserted them, yet were willing to bid us a sorrowful adieu. This suggested to me the idea of taking the geese, ducks, fowls, and pigeons with us; observing to my wife, that if we could not find means to feed them, at least they would feed us.

We accordingly executed this plan. We put ten hens and an old and a young cock into one of the tubs, and covered it with planks; we set the rest of the poultry at liberty, in the hope that instinct would direct them toward the land, the geese and ducks by water, and the pigeons by the air.

We were waiting for my wife, who had the care of this last part of our embarkation, when she joined us loaded with a large bag, which she threw into the tub that already contained her youngest son. I imagined that she intended it for him to sit upon, or perhaps to confine him so as to prevent his being tossed from side to side. I therefore asked no questions concerning it. The order of our departure was as follows:

In the first tub, at the boat's head, my wife, the most tender and exemplary of her sex placed herself.

In the second, our little Francis, a lovely boy six years old, remarkable for the sweetest and happiest temper, and for his affection to his parents.

In the third, Fritz, our eldest boy, between fourteen and fifteen years of age, a handsome curl-pated youth, full of intelligence and vivacity.

In the fourth was the barrel of gunpowder, with the cocks and hens and the sail-cloth.

In the fifth, the provisions of every kind.

In the sixth, our third son Jack, a light-hearted enterprising, audacious, generous lad, about ten years old.

In the seventh, our second son Ernest, a boy of twelve years old, of a rational, reflecting temper, well-informed for his age, but somewhat disposed to indolence and pleasures of the senses.

In the eighth, a father to whose paternal care the task of guiding the machine for the safety of his beloved family was entrusted. Each of us had useful implements within reach; the hand of each held an oar, and near each was a swimming apparatus in readiness for what might happen. The tide was already at half its height when we left the ship, and I had counted on this circumstance as favorable to our want of strength. We held the two paddles longways, and thus we passed without accident through the cleft of the vessel into the sea. The boys devoured with their eyes the blue land they saw at a distance. We rowed with all our strength, but long in vain, to reach it: the boat only turned round and round. At length I had the good fortune to steer in such a way that it proceeded in a straight line. The two dogs perceiving we had abandoned them, plunged into the sea and swam to the boat; they were too large for us to think of giving them admittance, and I dreaded lest they should jump in and upset us. Turk was an English dog, and Flora a bitch of the Danish breed. I was in great uneasiness on their account, for I feared it would not be possible for them to swim so far. The dogs, however, managed the affair with perfect intelligence. When fatigued, they rested their fore-paws on one of the paddles, and thus with little effort, proceeded.

Jack was disposed to refuse them this accommodation, but he soon yielded to my argument that it was cruel and unwise to neglect creatures thrown on our protection, and who indeed might hereafter protect us in their turn, by guarding us from harm, and assisting in our pursuit of animals for food. "Besides," added I, "God has given the dog to man to be his faithful companion and friend."

Our voyage proceeded securely, though slowly; but the nearer we approached the land, the more gloomy and unpromising its aspect appeared. The coast was clothed with barren rocks, which seemed to offer nothing but hunger and distress. The sea was calm; the waves, gently agitated, washed the shore, and the sky was serene. In every direction we perceived casks, bales, chests, and other vestiges of shipwrecks, floating round us. In the hope of obtaining some

good provisions, I determined on endeavoring to secure some of the casks. I bade Fritz have a rope, a hammer, and some nails ready, and to try to seize them as we passed. He succeeded in laying hold of two, and in such a way that we could draw them after us to the shore. Now that we were close on land, its rude outline was much softened; the rocks no longer appeared one undivided chain. Fritz with his hawk's eye already descried some trees and exclaimed that they were palm trees. Ernest expressed his joy that he should now get much larger and better cocoa-nuts than those of Europe. I for my part was venting audibly my regret, that I had not thought of bringing a telescope that I knew was in the captain's cabin, when Jack drew a small one from his pocket and with a look of triumph presented it to me.

The acquisition of the telescope was of great importance; for with its aid I was able to make the necessary observations and was more sure of the route I ought to take. On applying it to my eye, I remarked that the shore before us had a desert and savage aspect, but that towards the left, the scene was more agreeable; but when I attempted to steer in that direction, a current carried me irresistibly towards the coast that was rocky and barren. By and by we perceived a little opening between the rocks, near the mouth of a creek, towards which all our geese and ducks betook themselves; and I, relying on their sagacity, followed in the same course. This opening formed a little bay; the water was tranquil, and neither too deep nor too shallow to receive our boat. I entered it, and cautiously put on shore on a spot where the coast was about the same height above the water as our tubs, and where at the same time, there was a quantity sufficient to keep us afloat. The shore extended inland in something of the form of an icosceles triangle, the upper angle of which terminated among the rocks, while the margin of the sea formed the basis.

All that had life in the boat jumped eagerly on land. Even little Francis, who had been wedged in his tub like a potted herring, now got up and sprang forward; but, with all his efforts, he could not succeed without his mother's help. The dogs who had swam on shore, received us as if appointed to do the honors of the place, jumping round us with every demonstration of joy; the geese kept up a loud cackling, to which the ducks, from their broad yellow beaks, contributed a perpetual thorough-bass: the cocks and hens, which he had already set at liberty, clucked: the boys chattering all at

once, produced altogether an overpowering confusion of sounds: to this was added the disagreeable scream of some penguins and flamingos, which we now perceived, some flying over our heads, others sitting on the points of rocks at the entrance of the bay. By and by the notes of the latter had the ascendant, from their numbers; and our annoyance was increased by a comparison we could not avoid making, between the sounds they uttered and the harmony of the feathered musicians of our own country. I had however one advantage in perspective;—it was that, should we hereafter be short of food, these very birds might serve for our subsistence.

The first thing we did on finding ourselves safe on *terra firma*, was to fall on our knees, and return our thanks to the Supreme Being who had preserved our lives, and to recommend ourselves with entire resignation to the care of his paternal kindness.

We next employed our whole attention in unloading the boat. Oh! how rich we thought ourselves in the little we had been able to rescue from merciless abyss of the waters! We looked about for a convenient place to set up a tent under the shade of the rocks; and having all consulted and agreed upon a place, we set to work. We drove one of our poles firmly into a fissure of the rock; this rested upon another pole, which was driven perpendicularly into the ground, and formed the ridge of our tent. A frame for a dwelling was thus made secure. We next threw some sail-cloth over the ridge, and stretching it to a convenient distance on each side, fastened its extremities to the ground with stakes. Lastly, I fixed some tenter-hooks along the edge of one side of the sail-cloth in front, that we might be able to enclose the entrance during the night, by hooking in the opposite edge. The chest of provisions and other heavy matters we left on the shore. The next thing was to desire my sons to look about for grass and moss, to be spread and dried in the sun, to serve us for beds. During this operation in which even the little Francis could take a share, I erected near the tent a kind of little kitchen. A few flat stones I found in the bed of a fresh-water river, served for a hearth. I got a quantity of dry branches with the largest I made a small enclosure round it; and with the little twigs, added to some of our turf, I made a brisk cheering fire. We put some of the soup-cakes, with water, into our iron pot, and placed it over the flame: and my wife, with her little Francis for a scullion, took charge of preparing dinner.

In the meanwhile Fritz had been reloading the guns, with one of which he had wandered along the side of the river. He had proposed to Ernest to accompany him: but Ernest replied, that he did not like a rough stony walk, and that he should go to the sea-shore. Jack took the road towards a chain of rocks which jutted out at sea, with the intention of gathering some of the muscles which grew upon them.

My own occupation was now an endeavor to draw the two floating casks on shore, but in which I could not succeed; for our place of landing, though convenient enough for our machine, was too steep for the casks. While I was looking about to find a more favorable spot, I heard loud cries proceeding from a short distance, and recognized the voice of my son Jack. I snatched my hatchet, and ran anxiously to his assistance. I soon perceived him up to his knees in water in a shallow, and that a large sea lobster had fastened its claws in his leg. The poor boy screamed pitiably, and made useless efforts to disengage himself. I jumped instantly into the water; and the enemy was no sooner sensible of my approach, than he let go his hold, and would have scampered out to sea, but that I indulged the fancy of a little malice against him, for all the alarm he had caused us. I turned quickly upon him, and took him up by the body and carried him off, followed by Jack, who shouted our triumph all the way. He begged me at last to let him hold the animal in his own hand, that he might himself present so fine a booty to his mother. Accordingly, having observed how I held it to avoid the grip, he laid his own hand upon it in exactly the same manner; but scarcely had he grasped it, than he received a violent blow on the face from the lobster's tail, which made him loose his hold, and the animal fell to the ground. Jack again began to bawl out, while I could not refrain from laughing heartily. In his rage he took up a stone and killed the lobster with a single blow. I was a little vexed at this conclusion to the scene.—"This is what we call killing an enemy when he is unable to defend himself, Jack; it is wrong to revenge an injury while we are in a state of anger: the lobster it is true, had given you a bite: but you on your part, would have eaten the the lobster. So the game was at least equal. Another time, I advise you to be both more prudent and more merciful."—"But pray, father, let me carry it to my mother," said Jack, fearless now of further warfare; and accordingly he carried it to the kitchen, triumphantly exclaiming, "Mother, mother, a sea lobster!—Ernest, a sea lobster! Where is Fritz? Where

is Fritz? Take care, Francis, he will bite you." In a moment all were round him to examine the wonderful creature, and all proclaimed their astonishment at his enormous size, while they observed that its form was precisely that of the common lobster so much in use in Europe.

"Yes, yes," said Jack, holding up one of the claws, "you may well wonder at his size: this was the frightful claw which seized my leg, and if I had not had on my thick sea pantaloons, he would have bit it through and through; but I have taught him what it is to attack *me:* I have paid him well."

"Oh, oh! Mr. Boaster," cried I, "you give a pretty account of the matter. Now *mine* would be, that if I had not been near, the lobster would have shown you another sort of game; for the slap he gave you in the face compelled you, I think, to let go your hold. And it is well it should be thus; for he fought with the arms with which nature had supplied him, but you had recourse to a great stone for your defence. Believe me, Jack, you have no great reason to boast of the adventure."

Ernest, ever prompted by his savory tooth, bawled out that the lobster had better be put into the soup, which would give it an excellent flavor: but this his mother opposed, observing, that we must be more economical of our provisions than that, for the lobster of itself would furnish a dinner for the whole family. I now left them and walked again to the scene of this adventure, and examined the shallow. I then made another attempt upon my two casks, and at length succeeded in getting them into it, and in fixing them there securely on their bottoms.

On my return I complimented Jack on his being the first to procure an animal that might serve for subsistence, and promised him for his own share, the famous claw, which had furnished us with so lively a discussion.

"Ah! but I have seen something too, that is good to eat," said Ernest; "and I should have got it if it had not been in the water, so that I must have wetted my feet——"

"Oh, that is a famous story," cried Jack: "I can tell you what he saw,—some nasty muscles: why, I would not eat one of them for the world.—Think of my lobster!"

"That is not true, Jack; for they were oysters, and not muscles, that I saw: I am sure of it, for they stuck to the rock, and I know they must be oysters."

"Fortunate enough, my dainty gentleman," interrupted I, addressing myself to Ernest; "since you are so well acquainted

with the place where such food can be found, you will be so obliging as to return and procure us some. In such a situation as ours, every member of the family must be actively employed for the common good; and, above all, must not be afraid of so trifling an inconvenience as wet feet."

"I will do my best with all my heart," answered Ernest; "and at the same time I will bring home some salt, of which I have seen immense quantities in the holes of the rocks, where I have reason to suppose it is dried by the sun. I tasted some of it, and it was excellent. Pray father, be so good as to inform me whether this salt was not left there by the sea?

"—No doubt it was, Mr. Reasoner, for where else do you think it could come from? You would have done more wisely if you had brought a bag of it instead of spending your time in profound reflections upon operations so simple and obvious; and if you do not wish to dine upon a soup without flavor, you had better run and fetch a little quickly."

He set off and soon returned: what he brought had the appearance of sea salt, but was so mixed with earth and sand that I was on the point of throwing it away; but my wife prevented me, and by dissolving, and afterwards filtering some of it through a piece of muslin, we found it admirably fit for use.

"Why could we not have used some sea-water," asked Jack, "instead of having all this trouble!"

"Sea-water," answered I, "is more bitter than salt, and has, besides, a sickly taste." While I was speaking, my wife tasted the soup with a little stick with which she had been stirring it and pronounced that it was all the better for the salt, and now quite ready. "But," said she, Fritz is not come in. And then how shall we manage to eat our soup without spoons or dishes? Why did we not remember to bring some from the ship?"—"Because, my dear, one cannot think of everything at once. We shall be lucky if we have not forgotten even more important things."—"But, indeed," said she, "this is a matter which cannot easily be set to rights. How will it be possible for each of us to raise this large boiling pot to his lips?"

I soon saw that my wife was right. We all cast our eyes upon the pot with a sort of stupid perplexity, and looked a little like the fox in the fable, when the stork desires him to help himself from a vessel with a long neck. Silence was at length broken by all bursting into a hearty laugh at our want

of every kind of utensil, and at the thought of our own folly in not recollecting that spoons and forks were things of absolute necessity.

Ernest observed, that if we could but get some of the nice cocoa-nuts he often thought about, we might empty them, and use the pieces of shells for spoons.

"Yes, yes," replied I; *if we could but get*,—but we have them not; and if wishing were to any purpose, I had as soon wish at once for a dozen silver spoons. But alas! of what use is wishing?"

"But at least," said the boy, "we can use some oyster-shells for spoons."

"Why, this is well, Ernest," said I, "and is what I call a useful thought. Run then quickly for some of them. But, gentlemen, I give you notice, that no one of you must give himself airs because his spoon is without a handle, or though he chance to grease his fingers in the soup."

Jack ran first, and was up to his knees in the water before Ernest could reach the place. Jack tore off the fish with eagerness, and threw them to slothful Ernest, who put them into his handkerchief, having first secured in his pocket one shell he had met with of a large size. The boys came back together with their booty.

Fritz not having yet returned, his mother was beginning to be uneasy, when we heard him shouting to us from a small distance, to which we answered by similar sounds. In a few minutes he was among us, his two hands behind him, and with a sort of would-be-melancholy air, which none of us could understand.—"What have you brought?" asked his brothers; "let us see your booty, and you shall see ours."—"Ah! I have unfortunately nothing."—What, nothing at all?" said I.—"Nothing at all," answered he. But now, on fixing my eye upon him, I perceived a smile of proud success through his assumed dissatisfaction. At the same instant Jack, having stolen behind him exclaimed: "A sucking pig! a sucking pig!" Fritz, finding his trick discovered, now proudly displayed his prize, which I immediately perceived, from the description I had read in different books of travels, was an agouti, an animal common in that country, and not a sucking pig, as the boys had supposed. "The agouti," says M. de Courtills, in his voyage to St. Domingo, "is of the size of a hare, and runs with the same swiftness; but its form is more like a pig, and he makes the same grunting noise. He is not a voracious animal, but is nice in the choice of his food.

When his appetite is satisfied, he buries what remains, and keeps it for another time. He is naturally of a gentle temper; but if provoked, his hair becomes erect, he bites, and strikes the ground with his hind feet like the rabbit, which he also resembles in digging himself a burrow under ground: but this burrow has but one entrance. He conceals himself in it during the hottest part of the day, taking care to provide himself with a store of patates and bananas. He is usually taken by coursing, and sometimes by dogs, or with nets. When it is found difficult to seize him, the sportsman has only to whistle. As soon as the agouti hears the sound he is instantly still, remains resting on his hind feet, and suffers himself to be taken. His flesh is white, like that of the rabbit; but it is dry, has no fat, and never entirely loses a certain wild flavor, which is disagreeable to Europeans. He is held in great esteem by the natives, particularly when the animal has been feeding near the sea on plants impregnated with salt. They are therefore caught in great numbers, and for this reason the species is much diminished."—"Where did you find him? How did you get at him? Did he make you run a great way?" asked all at once the young brothers. "Tell me, tell us all * * *," etc. I, for my part, assumed a somewhat serious tone.—"I should have preferred," observed I, "that you had in reality brought us nothing, to your asserting a falsehood. Never allow yourself, even in jest, my dear boy, to assert what you know to be an untruth. By such trifles as these, a habit of lying, the most disgusting of vices, may be induced. Now then that I have given you this caution, let us look at the animal. Where did you find it?"

Fritz related, that he had passed over to the other side of the river. "Ah," continued he, "it is quite another thing from this place: the shore is low, and you can have no notion of the quantity of casks, chests, and planks, and different sorts of things washed there by the sea. Ought we not to go and try to obtain some of these treasures?"—"We will consider of it soon," answered I, but first we have to make our voyage to the vessel, and fetch away the animals; at least you will agree, that of the cow we are pretty much in want."—"If our biscuit were soaked in milk, it would not be so hard," observed our dainty Ernest.—"I must tell you too," continued Fritz, that over on the other side there is as much grass for pasturage as we can desire: and, besides, a pretty wood, in the shade of which we can repose. Why, then, should we remain on this barren desert side?"—"Patience," replied I, "there is a

time for everything, friend Fritz; we shall not be without something to undertake to-morrow, and even after to-morrow. But, above all, I am eager to know if you discovered, in your excursion, any traces of our ship companions?"—"Not the smallest trace of man, dead or alive, on land or water; but I have seen some other animals, that more resemble pigs than the one I have brought you, but with feet more like those of the hare: the animal I am speaking of leaps from place to place; now sitting on his hind legs, rubbing his face with his front feet, and then seeking for roots and gnawing them like the squirrel. If I had not been afraid of his escaping me, I should have tried to catch him with my hands, for he appeared almost tame."

We had now noticed that our soup was ready, and each hastened to dip his shell into the pot, to get out a little; but, as I had foreseen, each drew out a scalded finger, and it was who could scream the loudest. Ernest was the only one who had been too cautious to expose himself to this misfortune; he quietly took his muscle-shell, as large and deep as a small saucer, from his pocket, and carefully dipping it into the pot, drew it out filled with as much as was his fair share, and casting a look of exaltation on his brothers, he set it down till it should be cold enough to eat.

"You have taken good care of yourself, I perceive," said I. "But now answer me, dear boy, is the advantage worth the pains you take to be better off than your companions? Yet this is the constant failing of your character. As your best friend, I feel it my duty to balk you of the expected prize: I therefore adjudge your dish of delicious soup to our faithful followers, Turk and Flora. For ourselves, we will all fare alike; we will simply dip our shells into the pot till hunger is appeased; but the picked dish for the dogs, Ernest; and *all the rest alike!*"

This gentle reproach sunk, I perceived, into his heart; he placed the shell filled with soup upon the ground, and in an instant the dogs had licked up every drop. We on our parts were as sharp beset as they, and every eye was fixed on the pot, watching for the steam to subside a little, that we might begin dipping; when, on looking round we saw Turk and Flora standing over the agouti, gnawing and tearing him fiercely with their teeth and paws. The boys all screamed together; Fritz seized his gun, and struck them with it; called them the unkindest names, threw stones at them; and was so furious that if I had not interfered, it is probable he would have killed them. He had already bent his gun with the

blows he had given them, and his voice was raised so high as to be re-echoed from the rocks.

When he had grown a little cool, I seriously remonstrated with him on his violence of temper. I represented to him what distress he had occasioned his mother and myself for the event of a rage so alarming: that his gun that might have been so useful, was now spoiled; and that the poor animals, upon whose assistance we should probably so much depend, he had no doubt greatly injured. "Anger," continued I, "is always a bad counsellor, and may even lead the way to crimes: you are not ignorant of the history of Cain, who, in a moment of violent anger killed his brother."—"Say no more, my dearest father," interrupted Fritz in a tone of horror.—"Happy am I to recollect on this occasion," resumed I, "that it was not human creatures you treated thus. But an angry person never reasons; he scarcely knows whom he attacks. The most convincing proof of this is, that *you* just now fell upon two dumb animals, incapable of judgment, and who most likely thought your agouti was placed there, as the soup had been before, for them to eat. Confess, too, that it was vanity which excited the furious temper you exhibited. If another than yourself had killed the agouti, you would have been more patient under the accident." Fritz agreed that I was right, and, half drowned in tears, entreated my forgiveness.

Soon after we had our meal, the sun began to sink into the west. Our little flock of fowls assembled round us, pecking here and there what morsels of our biscuit had fallen on the ground. Just at this moment my wife produced the bag she had so mysteriously huddled into the tub. Its mouth was now opened: it contained the various sorts of grain for feeding poultry—barley, peas, oats, etc., and also different kinds of seeds and roots of vegetables for the table. In the fulness of her kind heart she scattered several handfuls at once upon the ground, which the fowls began eagerly to seize. I complimented her on the benefits her foresight had secured for us; but I recommended a more sparing use of so valuable an aquisition, observing, that the grain, if kept for sowing would produce a harvest, and that we could fetch from the ship spoiled biscuit enough to feed the fowls. Our pigeons sought a roosting place among the rocks; the hens, with the two cocks at their head, ranged themselves in a line along the ridge of the tent; and the geese and ducks betook themselves in a body, cackling and quacking as they proceeded, to a

marshy bit of ground near the sea, where some thick bushes afforded them shelter.

A little later, we began to follow the example of our winged companions, by beginning our preparations for repose. First, we loaded our guns and pistols, and laid them carefully in the tent: next, we assembled together and joined in offering our thanks to the Almighty for the succor afforded us, and supplicating his watchful care for our preservation. With the last ray of the sun we entered our tent, and after drawing the sail-cloth over the hook to close the entrance, we laid ourselves down close to each other on the grass and moss we had collected in the morning.

The children observed, with surprise, that darkness came upon us all at once; that night succeeded to day without an intermediate twilight.—"This," replied I, "makes me suspect that we are not far from the equator, or at least between the tropics, where this is of ordinary occurrence; for the twilight is occasioned by the rays of the sun being broken in the atmosphere; the more obliquely they fall, the more their feeble light is extended and prolonged, while, on the other hand, the more perpendicular the rays, the less their declination, consequently, the change from day to night is much more sudden when the sun is under the horizon."

I looked once more out of the tent to see if all was quiet around us. The old cock, awaking at the rising of the moon, chanted our vespers, and then I lay down to sleep. In proportion as we had been during the day oppressed with heat we were now in the night inconvenienced with the cold, so that we clung to each other for warmth. A sweet sleep began to close the eyes of my beloved family; I endeavored to to keep awake till I was sure my wife's solicitude had yielded to the same happy state, and then I closed my own. Thanks to the fatigue we had undergone, our first night in the desert island was very tolerably comfortable.

CHAPTER III.

VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY.

I was roused at the dawn of day by the crowing of the cocks. I awoke my wife, and we consulted together as to the occupations we should engage in. We agreed, that we

would seek for traces of our late ship companions, and at the same time examine the nature of the soil on the other side of the river, before we determined on a fixed place of abode. My wife easily perceived that such an excursion could not be undertaken by all the members of the family; and full of confidence in the protection of Heaven, she courageously consented to my proposal of leaving her with the three youngest boys, and proceeding myself with Fritz on a journey of discovery. I entreated her not to lose a moment in giving us our breakfast. She gave us notice that the share of each would be but small, there being no more soup prepared.—"What then," I asked, "is to become of Jack's lobster?"—"That he can best tell you himself," answered his mother. "But now pray step and awake the boys, while I make the fire and put on some water."

The children were soon roused; even our slothful Ernest submitted to the hard fate of rising so early in the morning. When I asked Jack for his lobster, he ran and fetched it from a cleft in the rock, in which he had concealed it: "I was determined," said he, "that the dogs should not treat my lobster as they did the agouti, for I knew them for a sort of gentlemen to whom nothing comes amiss."—"I am glad to see, son Jack," said I, "that that giddy head upon your shoulders can be prevailed upon to reflect. 'Happy is he who knows how to profit by the misfortunes of others,' says the proverb. But will you not kindly give Fritz the great claw, which bit your leg (though I promised it to you), to carry with him for his dinner in our journey?"

"What journey?" asked all the boys at once. "Ah! we will go too: a journey! a journey!" repeated they, clapping their hands, and jumping round me like little kids.—"For this time," said I, "it is impossible for all of you to go; we know not yet what we are to set about, nor whither we are going. Your eldest brother and myself shall be better able to defend ourselves in any danger without you; besides that, with so many persons we could proceed but slowly. You will then all three remain with your mother in this place, which appears to be one of perfect safety, and you shall keep Flora to be your guard, while we will take Turk with us. With such a protector, and a gun well loaded, who shall dare treat us with disrespect? Make haste, Fritz, and tie up Flora, that she may not follow us; and have your eye on Turk, that he may be at hand to accompany us; and see the guns are ready."

At the word guns, the color rose in the cheeks of my poor boy. His gun was so bent as to be of no use; he took it up and tried in vain to straighten it. I let him alone for a short time; but at length I gave him leave to take another, perceiving with pleasure that the vexation had produced a proper feeling in his mind. A moment after, he attempted to lay hold of Flora to tie her up; but the dog recollecting the blows she had so lately received began to snarl, and would not go near him. Turk behaved the same, and I found it necessary to call with my own voice, to induce them to approach us. Fritz then in tears entreated for some biscuit of his mother, declaring that he would willingly go without his breakfast to make his peace with the dogs; he accordingly carried them some biscuit, stroked and caressed them; and in every motion seemed to ask their pardon. As of all animals, without excepting man, the dog is least addicted to revenge, and at the same time is the most sensible of kind usage, Flora instantly relented, and began to lick the hands that fed her; but Turk, who was of a more fierce and independent temper, still held off, and seemed to feel a want of confidence in Fritz's advances.—"Give him a claw of my lobster" cried Jack, "for I mean to give it all to you for your journey."

"I cannot think why you should give it all," interrupted Ernest, "for you need not be uneasy about their journey. Like Robinson Crusoe, they will be sure enough to find some cocoa-nuts, which they will like much better than your miserable lobster; only think, a fine round nut, Jack, as big as my head, and with at least a teacupful of delicious sweet milk in it!"

"Oh! brother Fritz, pray do bring me some," cried little Francis.

We now prepared for our departure. We took each a bag for game and a hatchet: I put a pair of pistols in the leather band round Fritz's waist, in addition to the gun, and provided myself with the same articles, not forgetting a stock of biscuit and a flask of fresh river water. My wife now called us to breakfast when all attacked the lobster; but its flesh proved so hard, that there was a great deal left when our meal was finished, and we packed it for our journey without further regret from any one. The sea-lobster is an animal of considerable size, and its flesh is much more nutritious, but less delicate than the common lobster.

Fritz urged me to set out before the excessive heat came on.—"With all my heart," said I, "but we have forgot one

thing."—"What is that?" asked Fritz, looking round him; "I see nothing to do but to take leave of my mother and my brothers."—"I know what it is," cried Ernest; we have not said our prayers this morning."—"That is the very thing, my dear boy," said I. We are too apt to forget God, the Giver of all, for the affairs of this world; and yet never had we so much need of his care, particularly at the moment of undertaking a journey in an unknown soil."

Upon this our pickle Jack began to imitate the sound of church-bells, and to call "Bome! bome! bidi bome, bidi-man, bome. To prayers, to prayers, bome, bome!" "Thoughtless boy!" cried I, with a look of displeasure, "when, oh! when will you be sensible of that sacredness in devotion that banishes for the time every thought of levity or amusement? Recollect yourself, and let me not have again to reprove you on a subject of so grave a nature."

In about an hour we had completed the preparations for our departure. I had loaded the guns we left behind, and I now enjoined my wife to keep by day as near the boat as possible, which in case of danger was the best and most speedy means of escape. My next concern was to shorten the moment of separation, judging by my own feelings those of my dear wife; for neither could be without painful apprehensions of what new misfortune might occur on either side during the interval. We all melted into tears;—I seized this instant for drawing Fritz away, and in a few moments the sobs and often repeated adieus of those we left behind, died away in the noise of the waves which we now approached, and which turned our thoughts upon ourselves and the immediate object of our journey.

The banks of the river were everywhere steep and difficult, excepting at one narrow slip near the mouth on our side, where we had drawn our fresh water The other side presented an unbroken line of sharp, high, perpendicular rocks. We therefore followed the course of the river till we arrived at a cluster of rocks at which the stream formed a cascade: a few paces beyond, we found some large fragments of rock which had fallen into the bed of the river: by stepping upon these, and making now and then some hazardous leaps, we contrived to reach the other side. We proceeded a short way along the rock we ascended in landing, forcing ourselves a passage through tall grass, which twined with other plants, and were rendered more capable of resisting by being half dried by the sun. Perceiving, however, that walking on this

kind of surface in so hot a sun would exhaust our strength, we looked for a path to descend and proceed along the river, where we hoped to meet with fewer obstacles, and perhaps to discover traces of our ship companions.

When we had walked about a hundred paces we heard a loud noise behind us, as if we were pursued, and perceiving a rustling motion in the grass, which was almost as tall as ourselves, I was a good deal alarmed, thinking that it might be occasioned by some frightful serpent, a tiger, or other ferocious animal. But I was well satisfied with Fritz, who instead of being frightened and running away, stood still and firm to face the danger, the only motion he made being to see that his piece was ready, and turning himself to front the spot from whence the noise proceeded. Our alarm was, however, short; for what was our joy on seeing rush out, not an enemy, but our faithful Turk, whom in the distress of the parting scene we had forgotten, and whom no doubt our anxious relatives had sent on to us! I received the poor creature with lively joy, and did not fail to recommend both the bravery and discretion of my son, in not yielding to even a rational alarm, and for waiting till he was sure of the object before he resolved to fire: had he done otherwise, he might have destroyed an animal likely to afford us various kinds of aid, and to contribute by the kindness of his temper to the pleasures of our domestic scene.—"Observe, my dear boy," said I, "to what dangers the tumult of the passion exposes us: the anger which overpowered you yesterday, and the error natural to the occasion we have this moment witnessed, if you had unfortunately given way to it, might either of them have produced an irretrievable misfortune."

Fritz assured me he was sensible of the truth and importance of my remarks; that he would watch constantly over the defects of his temper: and then he fell to caressing the faithful and interesting animal.

Conversing on such subjects as these, we pursued our way On our left was the sea, and on our right the continuation of the ridge of rocks which began at the place of our landing, and ran along the shore, the summit everywhere adorned with fresh verdure and a great variety of trees. We were careful to proceed in a course as near the shore as possible, casting our eyes alternately upon its smooth expanse and upon the land in all directions, to discover our ship companions, or the boats which had conveyed them from us; but our endeavors were in vain. Fritz proposed to fire his gun from time to time,

that, should they be anywhere concealed near us, they might thus be led to know of our pursuit.

"This would be vastly well," I observed. "if you could contrive that the savages, who are most likely not far distant, should not hear the sound and come in numbers upon us."—"I am thinking, father," interrupted Fritz, "that there is no good reason we should give ourselves so much trouble and uneasiness about persons who abandoned us so cruelly: and thought only of their own safety."

"There is not only one good reason, but many," replied I, "first, we should not return evil for evil; next, it may be in their power to assist us; and, lastly, they are perhaps at this moment in the greatest want of assistance. It was their lot to escape with nothing but life from the ship, if indeed they are still alive, while we had the good fortune to secure provisions enough for present subsistence to a share of which they are as fully entitled as ourselves."

"But, father, while we are wandering here, and losing our time almost without a hope of benefit to them, might we not be better employed in returning to the vessel, and saving the animals on board?"

"When a variety of duties present themselves for our choice, we should always give the preference to that which can confer the most solid advantage. The saving of the life of a man is a more exalted action than the contributing to the comfort of a few quadrupeds, whom we have already supplied with food for several days; particularly as the sea is in so calm a state, that we need entertain no apprehension that the ship will sink or go entirely to pieces just at present."

My son made no reply to what I said, and we seemed by mutual silent consent to take a few moments for reflection.

When we had gone about two leagues, we entered a wood situated a little further from the sea; here we threw ourselves on the ground, under the shade of a tree, by the side of a running stream, and took out some provisions and refreshed ourselves. We heard the chirping, singing, and motion of birds in the trees, and observed, as they now and then came out to view, that they were more attractive by their splendid plumage than by any charm of note. Fritz assured me that he had caught a glimpse of some animals like apes among the bushes, and this was confirmed by the restless movements of Turk, who began to smell about him, and to bark so loud that the wood resounded with the noise. Fritz stole softly about to be sure, and presently stumbled on a small round

body which lay on the ground: he brought it to me, observing that it must be the nest of some bird. "What makes you of that opinion?" said I, "It is, I think much more like a cocoa-nut."

"But I have read that there are some kinds of birds which build their nests quite round; and look, father, how the outside is crossed and twined."

"But do you not perceive that what you take for straws crossed and twined by the beak of a bird, is in fact a coat of fibres formed by the hand of nature? Do you not remember to have read, that the nut of a cocoa shell is enclosed within a round, fibrous covering, which is again surrounded by a skin of a thin and fragile texture? I see that in the one you hold in your hand, this skin has been destroyed by time, which is the reason that the twisted fibres (or any inner covering) are so apparent; but now let us break the shell, and you will see the nut inside."

We soon accomplished this; but the nut, alas! from lying on the ground, had perished, and appeared but little different from a bit of dried skin, and not the least inviting to the palate.

Fritz was much amused at this adventure. "How I wish Ernest could have been here!" cried he. "How he envied me the fine large cocoa-nuts I was to find, and the whole tea-cupful of delicious milk which was to spring out upon me from the inside!—But, father, I myself believed that the cocoa-nut contained a sweet refreshing liquid, a little like the juice of almonds: travellers surely tell untruths!"

"Travellers certainly do sometimes tell untruths, but not, I believe, on the subject of the cocoa-nut, which is well known to contain the liquid you describe, just before they are in a state of ripeness. It is the same with our European nuts, with the difference of quantity; and one property is common to both, that as the nut ripens, the milk diminishes by thickening, and becoming the same substance as the nut. If you put a ripe nut a little way under the earth, in a good soil, the kernel will shoot and burst the shell; but if it remain above ground, or in a place that does not suit its nature, the principle of vegetation is extinguished by internal fermentation, and the nut perishes as you have seen."

"I am now surprised that this principle is not extinguished in every nut; for the shell is so hard, it seems impossible for a softer substance to break it."

"The peach-stone is no less hard; the kernel, notwithstanding, never fails to break it, if it is placed in a well-nurtured soil."

"Now I begin to understand. The peach-stone is divided into two parts, like a muscle shell; it has a kind of seam round it, which separates of itself when the kernel is swelled by moisture: but the cocoa-nut in my hand is not so divided, and I cannot conceive of its separating."

"I grant that the cocoa-nut is differently formed; but you may see by the fragments you have just thrown on the ground, that nature has in another manner stepped in to its assistance. Look near the stalk, and you will discover three round holes, which are not, like the rest of its surface, covered with a hard impenetrable shell, but are stopped by a spongy kind of matter; it is through these that the kernel shoots."

"Now, father, I have the fancy of gathering all the pieces together and giving them to Ernest, and telling him these particulars: I wonder what he will say about it, and how he will like the withered nut."

"Now the fancy of your father, my dear boy, would be to find you without so keen a relish for a bit of mischief. Joke with Ernest, if you will, about the withered nut, but I should like to see you heal the disappointment he will feel, by presenting him at last with a sound and perfect nut, provided we should have one to spare."

After looking for some time, we had the good luck to meet with one single nut. We opened it, and finding it sound, we sat down and ate it for our dinner, by which means we were enabled to husband the provisions we had brought. The nut it is true, was a little oily and rancid; yet, as this was not a time to be nice, we made a hearty meal, and then continued our route. We did not quit the wood, but pushed our way across it, being often obliged to cut a path through the bushes overrun by creeping plants, with our hatchet. At length we reached a plain which afforded a more extensive prospect and a path less perplexed and intricate.

We next entered a forest to the right, and soon observed that some of the trees were of a singular kind. Fritz, whose sharp eye was continually on a journey of discovery, went up to examine them closely. "O heavens! father, what odd trees with wens growing all about their trunks! I had soon the surprise and satisfaction of assuring him that they were of the gourd-tree kind, the trunks of which bear fruit. Fritz, who had never heard of such a tree, could not conceive the meaning of what he saw, and asked me if the fruit was a sponge or a wen.—"We will see," I replied, "if we cannot

unravel the mystery. Try to get down one of them, and we will examine it minutely."

"I have got one," cried Fritz, "and it is exactly like a gourd, only the rind is thicker and harder."

"It then, like the rind of that fruit, can be used for making various utensils," observed I; "plates, dishes, basins, flasks. We will give it the name of the gourd-tree."

Fritz jumped for joy.—"How happy my mother will be!" cried he in ecstasy; "she will no longer have the vexation of thinking, when she makes soup, that we shall all scald our fingers!"

"What, my boy, do you think is the reason that this tree bears its fruit only on the trunk and on its topmost branches?"

"I think it must be because the middle branches are too feeble to support such a weight."

"You have guessed exactly right."

"But are these gourds good to eat?"

"At worst they are, I believe, harmless; but they have not a very tempting flavor. The negro savages set as much value on the rind of this fruit as on gold, for its use to them is indispensable. These rinds serve them to keep their food and drink in, and sometimes they even cook their victuals in them."

"O father! it must be impossible to cook their victuals in them, for the heat of the fire would soon consume such a substance."

"I did not say the rind was put upon the fire."

"How droll! pray how are victuals to be cooked without fire?"

"Nor did I say that victuals could be cooked without a fire; but there is no need to put the vessel that contains the food upon the fire."

"I have no idea what you mean; there seems to be a miracle."

"So be it my son. A little tincture of enchantment is the lot of man. When he finds himself deficient in intelligence, or is too indolent to give himself the trouble to reflect, he is driven by his weakness to ascribe to a miracle, or to witchcraft, what is, most likely, nothing but the most ordinary operation of Art or nature."

"Well, father, I will then believe in what you tell me of these rinds."

"That is, you will cut the matter short, by resolving to be sure on the word of another: this is a good way to let your own reason lie fallow. Come, come, no such idleness; let me

help you to understand this amazing phenomenon. When it is intended to dress food in one of these rinds, the process is to cut the fruit into two equal parts, and scoop out the inside; some water is put into one of the halves, and into the water some fish, a crab, or whatever else is to be dressed, then some stones red hot, beginning with one at a time, are thrown in, which imparts sufficient heat to the water to dress the food, without the smallest injury to the pot."

"But is not the food spoiled by ashes falling in, or by pieces of the heated stones separating in the water?"

"Certainly it is not easy to make fine sauces or ragouts in such a vessel; but a dressing of the meat is actually accomplished, and the negroes and savages, who are the persons to make use of what is thus cooked, are not very delicate: but I can imagine a tolerable remedy for even the objection you have found. The food might be enclosed in a vessel small enough to be contained in our capacious half of a gourd, and thus be cooked upon the principle so much used in chemistry; the application of a milder heat than fire. And this method of cooking has also another advantage, that the thing contained cannot adhere to the sides or bottom of the vessel."

We next proceeded to the manufacture of our plates and dishes. I taught my son how to divide the gourd with a bit of string, which would cut more equally than a knife: I tied the string round the middle of the gourd as tight as possible striking it pretty hard with the handle of my knife, and I drew tighter and tighter till the gourd fell apart, forming two regular shaped bowls or vessels; while Fritz, who had used a knife for the same operation had entirely spoiled his gourd by the irregular pressure of his instrument. I recommended his making some spoons with the spoiled rind, as it was good for no other purpose. I, on my part, had soon completed two dishes of convenient size, and some smaller ones to serve as plates.

Fritz was in the utmost astonishment at my success.—"I cannot imagine, father," said he, "how this way of cutting the gourd could occur to you?"

"I have read the description of such a process;" replied I, "in books of travels; and also that such of the savages as have no knives, and who make a sort of twine from the bark of trees, are accustomed to use it for this kind of purpose. So you see what benefit may be derived from reading, and from afterwards reflecting on what we read."

"And the flasks, father, in what manner are they made?"

"For this branch of their ingenuity they make preparation a long time beforehand. If a negro wishes to have a flask or bottle with a neck, he binds a piece of string, linen, bark of a tree, or anything he can get, round the part nearest the stalk of a very young gourd; he draws this bandage so tight, that the part at liberty soon forms itself to a round shape, while the part which is confined contracts, and remains ever after narrow. By this method it is that they obtain flasks or bottles of a perfect form."

"Are then the bottle-shaped gourds I have seen in Europe trained by a similar preparation?"

"No, they are of another species; and what you have seen is their natural shape."

Our conversation and our labor thus went on together. Fritz had completed some plates, and was not a little proud of the achievement. "Ah, how delighted my mother will be to eat upon them!" cried he. "But how shall we convey them to her? They will not, I fear, bear travelling well."

"We must leave them here on the sand for the sun to dry them thoroughly; this will be accomplished by the time of our return this way, and we can then carry them with us; but care must be taken to fill them with sand, that they may not shrink or warp in so ardent a heat." My boy did not dislike this task; for he had no great fancy to the idea of carrying such a load on our journey of further discovery. Our sumptuous service of porcelain was accordingly spread upon the ground, and for the present abandoned to its fate.

We amused ourselves as we proceeded, in endeavoring to fashion some spoons from the fragments of the gourd-rinds. I had the fancy to try my skill upon a piece of cocoa-nut; but I must needs confess that what we produced had not the least resemblance to those I had seen in the Museum at London, and which were shown there as the work of some of the islanders of the Southern Seas. A European without instruments must always find himself excelled in such attempts by the superior adroitness and patience of savages; in this instance, too, of ourselves, we had the assistance of knives, while the savages have only flat stones with a sharp edge to work with.

"My attempt has been scarcely more successful than your own," I cried; "and to eat soup with either your spoon or mine, we ought to have mouths extending from ear to ear."

"True enough, father," answered Fritz, "but it is not my

fault. In making mine, I took the curve of my bit of rind for a guide; if I had made it smaller, it would have been too flat, and it is still more difficult to eat with a shovel than with an oyster-shell. But I am thinking that they may serve till I have improved upon my first attempt, and I am quite sure of the pleasure they will afford my mother. I imagine it pleases God sometimes to visit his creatures with difficulties, that they may learn to be satisfied with a little."

"That is an excellent remark, my boy," said I, "and gives me more pleasure than a hundred crowns would do." Fritz burst into a fit of laughter.—"You do not rate my remark very high when you say this, father," cried he, "for of what use would a hundred crowns be to you at present? If you had said a good soup, or a hundred cocoa-nuts, I should be much prouder for having made it."

"But as it is, my son, you have a right to be proud. I am well pleased to find you are beginning to estimate things according to their real value and usefulness, instead of considering them as good, or bad, like children, without understanding the true reason. Money is only a means of exchange in human society; but here, on this solitary coast, Nature is more generous than man, and asks no payment for the benefits she bestows."

While these conversations and our labors had been going on we had not neglected the great object of our pursuit,—the making every practicable search for our ship companions. But our endeavors, alas! were all in vain.

After a walk of about four leagues in all, we arrived at a spot where a slip of land reached far out into the sea, on which we observed a rising piece of ground or hill. On a moment's reflection we determined to ascend it, concluding we should obtain a clear view of all adjacent parts, which would save us the fatigue of further rambles. We accordingly accomplished the design.

We did not reach the top of the hill without many efforts and a plentiful perspiration: but when there, we beheld a wild and solitary beauty, comprehending a vast extent of land and water. It was, however, in vain that we used our telescope in all directions; no trace of man appeared. A truly embellished nature presented herself; and we were in the highest degree sensible of her thousand charms. The shore, rounded by a bay of some extent: the bank of which ended in a promontory on the further side; the agreeable blue tint of its surface; the sea, gently agitated by waves in which

the rays of the sun were reflected; the woods of variegated hues and verdure, formed altogether a picture of such magnificence, of such new and exquisite delight, that, if the recollection of our unfortunate companions, ingulfed perhaps in this very ocean, had not intruded to depress our spirits, we should have yielded to the ecstasy the scene was calculated to inspire. In reality, from this moment we began to lose even the feeble hope we had entertained, and sadness stole involuntarily into our hearts. We, however, became but the more sensible of the goodness of the Divine Being, in the special protection afforded to ourselves, in conducting us to a home where there was no present cause for fear of danger from without, where we had not experienced the want of food, and where there was a prospect of future safety for us all. We had encountered no venomous or ferocious animals; and, as far as our sight could yet reach, we were not threatened by the approach of savages. I remarked to Fritz, that we seemed destined to a solitary life, and that it was a rich country which appeared to be allotted us for a habitation;—"At least, my son, our habitation it must be, unless some vessel should happen to put on the same coast, and be in a condition to take us back to our native land. And God's will be done!" added I, "for he knows what is best for us. Having left our native country, fixed in the intention of inhabiting some propitious soil [See the introduction], it was natural at first to encounter difficult adventures. Let us, therefore, consider our situation as no disappointment in any essential respect. We can pursue our scheme for agriculture. We shall learn to invent arts. Our only want is numbers."

"As for me, "answered Fritz, "I care but little about being so few of us. If I have the happiness of seeing you and my mother well, in health and easy, I shall not give myself much uneasiness about those wicked unkind ship companions of ours."

"No, my boy; they were not all bad people; and they would have become better men here, because not exposed to the temptations of the world. Common interest, united exertions, mutual services and counsels with the reflections which would have grown in such a state as this, tend to improvement of the heart's affections."

"We however, of ourselves," observed Fritz, "form a larger society than was the lot of Adam before he had children; and, as we grow older, we will perform all the necessary labor, while you and my mother enjoy ease and quiet."

"Your assurances are as kind as I can desire, and they encourage me to struggle with what hardships may present themselves. Who can foresee in what manner it may be the will of Heaven to dispose of us? In times of old, God said to one of his chosen, 'I will cause a great nation to descend from thy loins.'"

"And why may not we too become patriarchs, father?"

"Why not? you ask;— and I have not now time to answer. But come, my young patriarch, let us find a shady spot, that we may not be consumed with the fierce heat of the sun before the patriarchal condition can be conferred upon us. Look yonder at that inviting wood: let us hasten thither to take a little rest, then eat our dinner, and return to our dear expecting family."

We descended the hill, and made our way to a wood of palms, which I had just pointed out to Fritz: our path was clothed with reeds, entwined with other plants, which greatly obstructed our march. We advanced slowly and cautiously, fearing at every step to receive a mortal bite from some serpent that might be concealed among them. We made Turk go before, to give us timely notice of anything dangerous. I also cut a reed-stalk of uncommon length and thickness, for my defence against any enemy. It was not without surprise that I perceived a glutinous sap proceed from the divided end of the stalk. Prompted by curiosity I tasted this liquid, and found it sweet and of a pleasant flavor, so that not a doubt remained that we were passing through a plantation of sugar-canes. I again applied the cane to my lips, and sucked it for some moments, and felt singularly refreshed and strengthened. I determined not to tell Fritz immediately of the fortunate discovery I had made: preferring that he should find it out himself. As he was at some distance before me, I called out to him to cut a reed for his defence. This he did, and, without any remark, used it simply for a stick, striking lustily with it on all sides to clear a passage. The motion occasioned the sap to run out abundantly upon his hand, and he stopped to examine so strange a circumstance. He lifted it up and still a larger quantity escaped. He now tasted what was on his fingers. Oh! then for the exclamations—"Father, father, I have found some sugar!—some syrup! I have a sugar-cane in my hand! Run quickly, father!"—We were soon together, jointly partaking of the pleasure we had in store for his dear mother and his younger brothers. In the mean time Fritz kept sucking the juice of the single cane he had cut, till his

relish for it was appeased. I thought this a profitable moment to say a word about excesses; of the wisdom of husbanding even our lawful pleasures; of the advantage of moderation in our most rational enjoyments.

"But, father, we will take home a good provision of sugar-canes however. I shall only just taste of them once or twice as I walk along. But it will be so delightful to regale my mother and my little brothers with them!"

"I have no objection; but do not take too heavy a load, for you have other things to carry, and we have yet far to go."

Counsel was given in vain. He persisted in cutting at least a dozen of the largest canes, tore off their leaves, tied them together, and, putting them under his arm, dragged them as well as he was able, through thick and thin, to the end of the plantation. We regained the wood of palms without accident; here we stretched our limbs in the shade, and finished our repast. We were scarcely settled, when a great number of large monkeys, terrified by the sight of us and the barking of Turk, stole so nimbly, and yet so quietly up the trees, that we scarcely perceived them till they had reached the topmost parts. From this height they fixed their eyes upon us, grinding their teeth, making horrible grimaces, and saluting us with screams of hostile import. Being now satisfied that the trees were palms, bearing cocoa-nuts, I conceived the hope of obtaining some of this fruit in a milky state through the monkeys. Fritz, on his part, prepared to shoot at them instantly. He threw his burdens on the ground, and it was with difficulty I, by pulling his arm, could prevent him from firing.

"Ah, father, why did you not let me fire? Monkeys are such malicious, mischievous animals! Look how they raise their backs in derision of us!"

"And is it possible that this can excite your vengeance, my most reasonable Mr. Fritz? To say the truth, I have no predelection for monkeys, who, as you say, are naturally prone to be malicious. But as long as an animal does no injury, or that his death can in no shape be useful in preserving our own lives, we have no right to destroy it, and still less to torment it for our amusement, or from an insensate desire of revenge. But what will you say if I show you that we may find means to make living monkeys contribute to our service? See what I am going to do;—but step aside, for fear of your head. If I succeed, the monkeys will furnish us with plenty of our much desired cocoa-nuts."

I now began to throw some stones at the monkeys, and though I could not make them reach to half the height at which they had taken refuge, they showed every mark of excessive anger. With their accustomed trick of imitation, they furiously tore off, nut by nut, all that grew upon the branches near them, to hurl them down upon us; so that it was with difficulty we avoided the blows; and in a short time a great number of cocoa-nuts lay on the ground round us. Fritz laughed heartily at the excellent success of our stratagem; and as the shower of cocoa-nuts began to subside we set about collecting them. We chose a place where we could repose at our ease, to feast on this rich harvest. We opened the shells with a hatchet, but first enjoyed the sucking of the milk through the three small holes, where we found it easy to insert the point of a knife. The milk of the cocoa-nut has not a pleasant flavor; but it is excellent for quenching thirst. What we liked best was a kind of solid cream which adheres to the shell, and which we scraped off with our spoons. We mixed with it a little of the sap of our sugar-canes, and it made a delicious repast.

Our meal being finished, we prepared to leave the wood of palms. I tied all the cocoa-nuts which had stalks together, and threw them across my shoulder. Fritz resumed his bundle of sugar-canes. We divided the rest of the things between us, and continued our way towards home.

CHAPTER IV.

RETURN FROM THE VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY.—A NOCTURNAL ALARM.

My poor boy now began to complain of fatigue; the sugar-canes galled his shoulders, and he was obliged to shift them often. At last, he stopped to take breath.—"No," cried he, "I never could have thought that a few sugar-canes could be so heavy. How sincerely I pity the poor negroes who carry heavy loads of them. Yet how glad I shall be when my mother and Ernest are tasting them!"

While we were conversing and proceeding onward, Fritz perceived that from time to time I sucked the end of a sugar-cane, and he would needs do the same. It was in vain, however, that he tried; scarcely a drop of the sap reached his

eager lips.—"What can be the reason," said he, "that though this cane is full of juice, I cannot get out a drop?"

"The reason is," answered I, "that you make use neither of reflection nor of your imagination."

"Ah! I recollect now; is it not a question about air? Unless there were a particular opening in the cane, I may suck in vain; no juice will come."

"You have explained the nature of the difficulty; but how will you manage to set it right?"

"Father, lend me your cane an instant."

"No, no, that will not do; what I wish is, that you should yourself invent the remedy."

"Let me see: I imagine that I have only to make a little opening above the first knot, and then the air can enter."

"Exactly right. But tell me what you think would be the operation of this opening near the first knot: and in what manner can it make the juice get into your mouth?

"The pith of the cane being completely interrupted in its growth by each knot, the opening made below could have no effect upon the part above: in sucking the juice, I draw in my breath, and thus exhaust the air in my mouth; the external air presses at the same time through the hole I have made, and fills this void; the juice of the cane forms an obstacle to this effort, and is accordingly driven into my mouth. But how shall I manage when I have sucked this part dry to get at the part above?"

"Oh, oh, Mr. Philosopher, what should prevent you, who have been reasoning so well about the force and fluidity of the air, from immediately conceiving so simple a process as that of cutting away the part of the cane you have already sucked dry, and making a second perforation in the part above, so that——"

"Oh, I have it, I have it, I understand;—but if we should become too expert in the art of drawing out the juice, I fear but few of the canes will reach our friends in the tent."

"I also am not without my apprehensions, that of our acquisition we shall carry them only a few sticks for fire-wood; for I must bring another circumstance to your recollection: the juice of the sugar-cane is apt to turn sour soon after cutting, and the more certainly in such heat as we now experience; we may suck them, therefore, without compunction at the diminution of their numbers."

"Well, then, if we can do no better with the sugar canes, at least I will take them a good provision of the milk of cocoa-

nuts, which I have here in a tin bottle; we shall sit round on the grass and drink it so deliciously!"

"In this too, my generous boy, I fear you will be disappointed. You talk of milk; but the milk of the cocoa-nut, no less than the juice of the sugar-cane, when exposed to the air and heat, turns soon to vinegar. I would almost wager that it is already sour; for the tin bottle which contains it is particularly liable to become hot in the sun."

"Oh heavens, how provoking! I must taste it this very minute."—The tin bottle was lowered from his shoulder in the twinkling of an eye, and he began to pull the cork; as soon as it was loose, the liquid flew upwards hissing and frothing like champagne.

"Bravo, Mr. Fritz! you have manufactured there a wine of some mettle. I must now caution you not to let it make you tipsy."

"Oh, taste it, father, pray taste it, it is quite delicious; not the least like vinegar; it is rather like excellent new wine; its taste is sweet, and it is so sparkling! do take a little, father. Is it not good? If all the milk remains in this state, the treat will be better even than I thought."

"I wish it may prove so, but I have my fears; its present state is what is called the first degree of fermentation; the same thing happens to honey, dissolved in water, of which hydromel is made. When this fermentation is past, and the liquid is clear, it is become a sort of wine or other fermented liquor, the quality of which depends on the materials used. By the application of heat, there next results a second and more gradual fermentation, which turns the fluid into vinegar. But this may be prevented by extraordinary care, and by keeping the vessel which contains it in a cool place. Lastly, a third fermentation takes place in the vinegar itself, which entirely changes its character, and deprives it of its taste, its strength, and its transparency. In the intense temperature of this climate, this triple fermentation comes on very rapidly, so that it is not improbable that, on entering our tent, you might find your liquid turned to vinegar, or even to a thick liquid of ill odor; we may therefore venture to refresh ourselves with a portion of our booty, that it may not all be spoiled. Come, then, I drink your health and that of our dear family. I find the liquor at present both refreshing and agreeable; but I am pretty sure that, if we would arrive sober, we must not venture on frequent libations."

Our regale imparted to our exhausted frames an increase

of strength and cheerfulness. We reached the place where we had left our gourd utensils upon the sands; we found them perfectly dry, as hard as bones, and not the least misshapen. We now, therefore, could put them into our game bags conveniently enough, and this done, we continued our way. Scarcely had we passed through the little wood in which we breakfasted when Turk sprang away to seize upon a troop of monkeys, who were skipping about and amusing themselves without observing our approach. They were thus taken by surprise; and before we could get to the spot, our ferocious Turk had already seized one of them; it was a female who held a young one in her arms, which she was caressing almost to suffocation, and which incumbrance deprived her of the power of escaping. The poor creature was killed, and afterwards devoured: the young one hid himself in the grass, and looked on, grinding his teeth all the time that this horrid feat was performing. Fritz flew like lightning to make Turk let go his hold. He lost his hat, threw down his tin bottle, canes, etc., but all in vain; he was too late to prevent the murder of the interesting mother.

The next scene that presented itself was of a different nature, and comical enough. The young monkey sprang nimbly on Fritz's shoulders, and fastened his feet in the stiff curls of his hair; nor could the squalls of Fritz, nor all the shaking he gave him, make him let go his hold. I ran to them, laughing heartily, for I saw that the animal was too young to do him any injury, while the panic visible in the features of the boy made a ludicrous contrast with the grimaces of the monkey, whom I in vain endeavored to disengage. "There is no remedy, Fritz," said I, "but to submit quietly and carry him; he will furnish an addition to our stock of provisions, though less alluring I must needs confess, than for your mother's sake we could wish. The conduct of the little creature displays a surprising intelligence; he has lost his mother, and he adopts you for his father; perhaps he discovered in you something of the air of a father of a family."

"Or rather the little rogue found out that he had to do with a chicken-heart, who shrinks from the idea of ill-treating an animal which has thrown itself on his protection.—But I assure you, father, he is giving me some terrible twitches, and I shall be obliged to you to try once more to get him off."

With a little gentleness and management I succeeded. I took the creature in my arms as one would an infant, nor could I help pitying and caressing him. He was no larger

than a kitten, and quite unable to help himself: its mother was at least as tall as Fritz.

"What shall I do with thee, poor orphan?" cried I; "and how, in our condition, shall I be able to maintain thee? We have already more mouths to fill than food to put into them, and our workmen are too young to afford us much hope from their exertions."

"Father," cried Fritz, "do let me have this little animal to myself. I will take the greatest care of him: I will give him all my share of the milk of the cocoanuts till we get our cows and goats; and who knows? his monkey instinct may one day assist us in discovering some wholesome fruits."

"I have not the least objection," answered I. "You have conducted yourself throughout the tragi-comic adventure like a lad of courage and sensibility, and I am well satisfied with every circumstance of your behavior. It is therefore but just that the little protégé should be given up to your management and discretion; much will depend on your manner of educating him; by and by we shall see whether he will be fittest to aid us with his intelligence, or to injure us by his malice; in this last case we shall have nothing to do but to get rid of him.

While Fritz and I were talking about the young monkey, Turk was taking his fill of the remains of its unfortunate mother. Fritz would have driven him away, but besides the difficulty of restraining him, we had to consider that we might ourselves be in danger from the pressing hunger of so powerful an animal; all the food we had before given him in the day seemed too little for the appeasing his unbounded appetite.

We now thought of resuming our journey. The little orphan jumped again on the shoulder of his protector, while I on my part relieved my boy of the bundle of canes. Scarcely had we proceeded a quarter of a league when Turk overtook us in a gallop. Fritz and I received him without the usual marks of kindness, and reproached him with the cruel action he had committed, as if he could feel and understand us; but he showed no sign of concern about the matter, following behind Fritz with an air of cool and perfect satisfaction. The young monkey appeared uneasy from seeing him so near, and passed round and fixed himself on his protector's bosom, who did not long bear so great an inconvenience without having recourse to his invention for a remedy. He tied some string round Turk's body in such a way, as to ad-

mit of the monkey's being fastened on his back with it, and then in a tone of genuine pity, he said, "Now, Mr. Turk, since you had the cruelty to destroy the mother, it is for you to take care of her child." At first the dog was restive, and resisted; but by degrees, partly by menaces, and partly by caresses, we succeeded in gaining his good-will, and quietly he consented to carry the little burden; and the young monkey, who also had made some difficulties, at length found himself perfectly accommodated. Fritz put another string around Turk's neck, by which he might lead him, a precaution he used to prevent him from going out of sight. I must confess, we had not the sin of too great haste to answer for, so that I had leisure for amusing myself with the idea, that we should arrive at home with something of the appearance of keepers of rare animals for show. I enjoyed in foresight the jubilations of our young ones when they should see the figure we made.—"Ah!" cried Fritz, "I promise you, brother Jack will draw materials enough from the occasion for future malicious jokes."—"Do you then, my son," said I, "like your admirable mother, who never fails to make allowance for the buoyant spirits of youth, and is ever ready to find a charitable motive in everything. As for the question of Turk, let me observe that it would in our situation be dangerous to teach our dogs not to attack and kill, if they can, what unknown animals they meet with. You will see that he will soon regard your little monkey as a member of our family; already he is content to carry him on his back. But we must not discourage him in his fancy for attacking wild beasts. Heaven bestowed the dog on man to be his safeguard and ally, and the horse the same. How conspicuous is the goodness of the Almighty, in the natural dispositions he has bestowed on these useful creatures, who discover so much affection for man, and so easily submit to the slavery of serving him! A man on horseback, and accompanied by a troop of well-conditioned dogs, need not fear any species of wild beasts, not even the lion, nor the hyæna; he may baffle the voracious rapacity of the tiger."

"I feel how fortunate we are in the possession of two such creatures: but what a pity that the horses we had on board died during our voyage, and left us with only an ass!"

"Let us take care how we treat even our ass with disdain. I wish we had him safe on land. Fortunately he is large and strong, and not of the common kind. We may train him to do us the same services as are performed by the horse; and it is

not improbable that he will even improve under our care, and from the excellent pasture he will find in this climate."

In such conversation as this, on subjects equally interesting to both, we forgot the length of our journey, and soon found ourselves on the banks of the river, and near our family before we were aware. Flora from the other side announced our approach by a violent barking, and Turk replied so heartily, that his motions unseated his little burden, who in his fright jumped the length of his string from his back to Fritz's shoulder, which he could not afterwards be prevailed upon to leave. Turk, who began to be acquainted with the country, ran off to meet his companion, and shortly after, our much-loved family appeared in sight, with demonstrations of unbounded joy at our safe return. They advanced along by the course of the river, till they on one side, and we on the other, had reached the place we crossed in the morning. We repassed it again in safety, and threw ourselves into each others arms. Scarcely had the young ones joined their brother than they began their joyful exclamations: "A monkey, a live monkey! Papa, mamma, a live monkey! Oh, how delightful! how happy shall we be! How did you catch him? What a droll face he has!" "He is very ugly," said little Francis, half afraid to touch him. "He is much prettier than you," returned Jack; "only see, he is laughing: I wish I could see him eat." "Ah! if we had but some cocoa-nuts!" cried Ernest, "could you not find any? Are they nice?" "Have you brought me any milk of almonds?" asked Francis. "Have you met with any unfortunate adventure?" interrupted my wife. In this manner, questions and exclamations succeeded to each other with such rapidity as not to leave us time to answer them.

At length, when all became a little tranquil, I answered them thus: "Most happy am I to return to you again, my beloved, and God be praised! without any new misfortune. We have even the pleasure of presenting you with many valuable acquisitions; but in the object nearest my heart, the discovery of our ship companions, we have entirely failed."

"Since it pleases God that it should be so," said my wife, "let us endeavor to be content, and let us be grateful to Him for having saved us from their unhappy fate, and for having once more brought us all together. I have had much uneasiness about your safety, and imagined a thousand evils that might beset you. The day appeared an age. But now I see you once more safe and well! But put down your bur-

dens; we will all help you; for though we have not spent the day in idleness, we are less fatigued than you. Quick then, my boys, and take the loads from your father and your brother. Now then sit down, and tell us your adventures."

Jack received my gun, Ernest the cocoa-nuts, Francis the gourd-rinds, and my wife my game-bag. Fritz distributed the sugar-canes, and put his monkey on the back of Turk, to the great amusement of the children, at the same time begging Ernest to relieve him of his gun. But Ernest, ever careful of his ease, assured him, that the large heavy bowls with which he was loaded were the most he had strength to carry. His mother, a little too indulgent to his lazy humor, relieved him of these; and thus we proceeded altogether to our tent.

Fritz whispered to me, that if Ernest had known what the large heavy bowls were, he would not so readily have parted with them. Then turning to his brother, "Why, Ernest," cried he, do you know that those bowls are cocoa-nuts, your dear cocoa-nuts, and full of the sweet nice milk you have so much wished to taste?"

"What, really and truly cocoa-nuts, brother? Pray give them to me, mother; I will carry them, if you please, and I can carry the gun too."

"No, no, Ernest," answered his mother, "you shall not tease us with more of your long-drawn sighs about fatigue: a hundred paces, and you would begin again." Ernest would willingly have asked his mother to give him the cocoa-nuts, and take the gun herself, but this he was ashamed to do: "I have only," said he, "to get rid of these sticks, and carry the gun in my hand."

"I would advise you not to find the sticks heavy, either," said Fritz, drily; "I know you will be sorry if you do, and for this good reason—the sticks are sugar-canes!"

"Sugar-canes! sugar-canes!" exclaimed they all; and surrounding Fritz, made him give them full instructions on the sublime art of sucking sugar-canes.

My wife also, who had always entertained a high respect for the article of sugar in her household management, was quite astonished, and earnestly entreated we would inform her of all particulars. I gave her an account of our journey and our new acquisitions, which I exhibited one after the other for her inspection. No one of them afforded her more pleasure than the plates and dishes, because to persons of decent habits, they were articles of indispensable

necessity. We now adjourned to our kitchen, and observed with pleasure the preparations for an excellent repast. On one side of the fire was a turn-spit, which my wife had contrived by driving two forked pieces of wood in the ground, and placing a long even stick, sharpened at one end, across them. By this invention she was enabled to roast fish, or other food; with the help of little Francis, who was entrusted with the care of turning it round from time to time. On the occasion of our return, she had prepared us the treat of a goose, the fat of which ran off into some oyster-shells placed there to serve the purpose of a dripping-pan. There was besides, a dish of fish, which the little ones had caught; and the iron pot was upon the fire, provided with a good soup, the odor of which increased our appetite. By the side of these most exhilerating preparations stood one of the casks which we had recovered from the sea, the head of which my wife had knocked out, so that it exposed to our view a cargo of the finest sort of Dutch cheeses, contained in round tins. All this display was made to excite the appetite of two travellers, who had fared but scantily during the day; and I must needs observe, that the whole was very little like such a dinner as one should expect to see on a desert island.

"What you call a goose," said my wife, "is a kind of wild bird, and is the booty of Ernest, who calls him by a singular name, and assures me that it is good to eat."

"Yes, father, I believe that the bird which I have caught is a kind of penguin, or we might distinguish him by the surname of *Stupid*. He showed himself to be a bird so destitute of even the least degree of intelligence, that I killed him with a single blow with my stick."

"What is the form of his feet, and of his beak?" asked I.

"His feet are formed for swimming; in other words, he is called web-footed; the beak is long, small, and a little curved downward: I have preserved his head and neck, that you might examine it yourself; it reminds me exactly of the penguin, described as so stupid a bird in my natural history."

"You now then perceive, my son, of what use it is to read, and to extend our knowledge, particularly of the productions of nature: by this study and knowledge we are enabled to recognize at the moment, the objects which chance throws in our way, whether we have seen them before or not. Tell me now what birds there are with feet like those you have just described, and which are so formed to enable the creature to strike the water and prevent himself from sinking?"

"There are the man of-war bird, cormorants, and pelicans, father."

"By what mark do you distinguish the kind to which you just now said the *penguin* or *Stupid* belonged."

"Upon my word," interrupted his mother, "I must give the answer myself; and it shall be a petition that you will take some other time for your catechism on birds: when once you begin a subject, one never sees the end of it. Now to my mind there is a time for everything: Ernest killed the bird, and was able to tell his kind; we on our parts shall eat him; what more therefore is necessary? Do you not see, husband, that the poor child is thinking all the while of his cocoa-nuts? Let me intercede on his behalf, and prevail upon you to let him have the pleasure of examining and tasting them."

"Ah! thank you, my good mother; I shall be very glad if papa will consent."

Father.—Well, well, you have my full permission. But first you will be obliged to learn from Fritz the best manner of opening them, so as to preserve the milk: and one word more: I recommend to you not to forget the young monkey, who has no longer his mother's milk for food.

Jack.—I cannot prevail upon him to taste a bit: I have offered him every thing we have.

Father.—This is not surprising, for he has not yet learned how to eat; you must feed him with the milk of cocoa-nuts till we can procure something more suitable.

Jack.—I will give the poor little creature my share with all my heart.

Ernest.—I have, however, the greatest desire to taste this milk myself, just to know what it is like.

"And so have I," said little Francis.

"However, gentlemen, the monkey must live," cried Jack, a little maliciously.

"And we and our children must live too," answered their mother. "Come then, the supper is ready and the cocoa-nuts shall be for the dessert."

We seated ourselves on the ground; my wife had placed each article of the repast in one of our new dishes, the neat appearance of which exceeded all our expectations. My sons had not the patience to wait, but had broken the cocoa-nuts, and already convinced themselves of their delicious flavor; and then they fell to making spoons with the fragments of the shells. The little monkey, thanks to the kind temper of Jack,

had been served the first, and each amused himself with making him suck the corner of his pocket-handkerchief, dipped in the milk of the cocoa-nut. He appeared delighted with the treatment he received, and we remarked with satisfaction that we should most likely be able to preserve him.

The boys were preparing to break some more of the nuts with the hatchet, after having drawn out the milk through the three little holes, when I pronounced the word *hall*, and bade them bring me a saw;—the thought had struck me that by dividing the nuts carefully with this instrument, the two halves, when scooped, would remain with the form of tea-cups or basins already made to our hands. Jack, who was on every occasion the most active brought me the saw. I performed my undertaking in the best manner I could, and in a short time each of us was provided with a convenient receptacle for food. My wife put the share of soup which belonged to each into the new basins. The excellent creature appeared delighted that we should no longer be under the necessity, as before, of scalding our fingers by dipping into the pot; and I firmly believe, that never did the most magnificent service of china occasion half the pleasure of its possessor, as our utensils manufactured by our own hands from gourds and cocoa-nuts, excited in the kind heart of my wife. Fritz asked me if he might not invite our company to taste his fine champagne which he said would not fail to make us all the merrier. "I have not the least objection," answered I, "but remember to taste it yourself before you serve it to your guests." He ran to draw out the stopple and to taste it—"How unfortunate!" said he, "it is already turned to vinegar."

"What, is it vinegar?" exclaimed my wife: "How lucky! it will make the most delicious sauce for our bird, mixed with the fat which has fallen from it in roasting, and will be as good a relish as a salad." No sooner said than done. This vinegar produced from cocoa-nut proved a corrective of the wild and fishy flavor of the penguin. The same sauce improved our dish of fish also. Each boasted most of what he himself had been the means of procuring: it was Jack and Francis who had caught the fish in one of the shallows, while Ernest was employed with very little trouble to himself in securing his penguin *the Stupid*. My poor wife had herself performed the most difficult task of all, that of rolling the cask of Dutch cheeses into the kitchen, and then knocking out its head.

By the time we had finished our meal, the sun was retiring from our view; and recollecting how quickly the night would fall upon us, we were in great haste to regain our place of rest. My wife had considerately collected a tenfold quantity of dry grass, which she had spread in the tent, so that we anticipated with joy the prospect of stretching our limbs on a substance somewhat approaching to the quality of mattresses, while, the night before our bodies seemed to touch the ground. Our flock of fowls placed themselves as they had done the preceding evening; we said our prayers, and, with an improved serenity of mind, lay down in the tent, taking the young monkey with us, who was become the little favorite of all. Fritz and Jack contended for a short time which should enjoy the honor of his company for the night: and it was at last decided that he should be laid between them; after which each would have a hand in covering him carefully, that he might not catch cold. We now all lay down upon the grass, in the order of the night before, myself remaining last to fasten the sail-cloth in front of the tent; when, heartily fatigued by the exertions of the day, I, as well as the rest, soon fell into a profound and refreshing sleep.

But I had not long enjoyed this pleasing state, when I was awaked by the motion of the fowls on the ridge of the tent and by a violent barking of our vigilent safe-guards, the dogs. I was instantly on my legs; my wife and Fritz, who had also been alarmed, got up also: we each took a gun and sallied forth.

The dogs continued barking with the same violence, and at intervals even howled. We had not proceeded many steps from the tent, when to our surprise we perceived by the light of the moon a terrible combat. At least a dozen of jackals had surrounded our brave dogs, who defended themselves with the stoutest courage. Already the fierce champions had laid three or four of their adversaries on the ground, while those that remained began a timid kind of a moan, as if imploring pity and forbearance. Meanwhile, they did not the less endeavor to entangle and surprise the dogs, thus thrown off their guard, and thus secure to themselves the advantage. But our watchful combatants were not so easily deceived; they took good care not to let the enemy approach them too nearly.

I, for my part, had apprehended something worse than jackals. "We shall soon manage to set these gentlemen at

rest," said I. "Let us both fire together, my boy; but let us take care how we aim, for fear of killing the dogs; mind how you fire that you may not miss, and I shall do the same." We fired, and two of the intruders fell instantly dead upon the sands. The others made their escape; but we perceived it was with difficulty, in consequence, no doubt, of being wounded. Turk and Flora afterwards pursued them and put the finishing stroke to what we had begun; and thus the battle ended: but the dogs, true Caribbees by nature, made a hearty meal on the flesh of their fallen enemies. My wife, seeing all quiet, entreated us to lie down again and finish our night's sleep; but Fritz asked me to let him drag the jackal towards the tent, that he might exhibit him the next morning to his brothers. I however observed to Fritz, that if Turk and Flora were still hungry, we ought to give them this last jackal in addition, as a recompense for their courageous behavior.

We had now done with this affair. The body of the jackal was left on the rock, by the side of the tent, in which were the little sleepers, who had not once awaked during the whole of the scene which had been passing. Having therefore, nothing further to prevent us, we lay down by their side till day began to break, and till the cocks, with their shrill morning salutations, awoke us both. The children being still asleep, afforded us an excellent opportunity to consult together respecting the plan we should pursue for the ensuing day.

CHAPTER V.

RETURN TO THE WRECK.

I broke a silence of some moments, with observing to my wife, that I could not but view with alarm the many cares, and exertions to be made! "In the first place, a journey to the vessel. This is of absolute necessity; at least, if we would not be deprived of the cattle and other useful things, all of which from moment to moment, we risk losing by the first heavy sea. What ought we to resolve upon? For example, would not our very first endeavor be the contriving a better sort of habitation, and a more secure retreat from wild beasts, also

a separate place for our provisions? I own I am at a loss what to begin first."

"All will fall into the right order by degrees," observed my wife; "patience and regularity in our plans will go as far as actual labor. I cannot, I confess, help shuddering at the thought of this voyage to the vessel; but if you judge it to be of absolute necessity, it cannot be undertaken too soon. In the mean while, nothing that is immediately under my own care shall stand still, I promise you. Let us not be over anxious about to-morrow; 'sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.' These were the words of the true friend of mankind, and let us use so wise a counsel for our own benefit."

"I will follow your advice," said I, "and without further loss of time. You shall stay here with the three youngest boys; and Fritz, being so much stronger and more intelligent than the others, shall accompany me in the undertaking."

At this moment I started from my bed, crying out loudly and briskly, "Get up, children, get up; it is almost light and we have some important projects for to-day; it would be a shame to suffer the sun to find us still sleeping, we who are to be the founders of a new colony!"

At these words Fritz sprang nimbly out of the tent, while the young ones began to gap and rub their eyes, to get rid of their sleepiness. Fritz ran to visit his jackal, which during the night had become cold and perfectly still. He fixed him upon his legs, and placed him like a sentinel at the entrance of the tent, joyously anticipating the wonder and exclamations of his brothers at so unexpected an appearance. But no sooner had the dogs caught sight of him, than they began to howl, and set themselves in motion to fall upon him instantly, thinking he was alive. Fritz had enough to to do restrain them, and succeeded only by dint of coaxing and perseverance.

In the mean time, their barking had awakened the younger boys, and they ran out of the tent, curious to know what could be the occasion. Jack was the first who appeared, with the young monkey on his shoulders; but when the little creature perceived the jackal, he sprang away in terror, and hid himself at the furthest extremity of the grass which composed our bed, and covered himself with it so completely that scarcely could the tip of his nose be seen.

The children were much surprised at the sight of a yellow colored animal standing without motion at the entrance of the

tent.—"Oh heavens!" exclaimed Francis, and stepping back a few paces for fear: "it is a wolf!" "No, no," said Jack going near the jackal, and taking one of his paws; it is a yellow dog, and he is dead; he does not move at all." "It is neither a dog nor a wolf," interrupted Ernest in a consequential tone; "do you not see that it is a golden fox?" "Best of all, most learned professor!" now exclaimed Fritz. "So you can tell an agouth when you see him, but you cannot tell a jackal; for a jackal is the creature you see before you, and I killed him myself in the night?"

Ernest.—In the night, you say, Fritz. In your sleep, I suppose——

Fritz.—No, Mr. Ernest; not in my sleep, as you so good naturedly suppose, but broad awake, and on the watch to protect you from wild beasts! But I cannot wonder at this mistake in one who does not know the difference between a jackal and a golden fox!

Ernest.—You would not have known it either, if papa had not told you——

"Come, come, my lads, I will have no disputes," interrupted I. "Fritz, you are to blame in ridiculing your brother for the mistake he made. Ernest, you are also to blame for indulging that little peevishness of yours. But as to the animal you all are right and all are wrong; for he partakes at once of the dog, the wolf, and the fox." The boys in an instant became friends; and then followed questions, answers and wonders in abundance. "And now, my boys, let me remind you, that he who begins the day without first addressing the Almighty, ought to expect neither success nor safety in his undertakings. Let us therefore acquit ourselves of this duty before we engage in other occupations."

Having finished our prayers, the next thing thought of was breakfast; for the appetites of all young boys open with their eyes. To-day their mother had nothing to give them for their morning meal but some biscuit, which was so hard and dry, that it was with difficulty we could swallow it. Fritz asked for a piece of cheese to eat with it, and Ernest cast some searching looks on the second cask we had drawn out of the sea, to discover whether it also contained Dutch cheeses. In a minute he came up to us, joy sparkling in his eyes: "Father," said he, "if we had but a little butter spread upon our biscuit, do you not think it would improve it?"

"That indeed it would; but *if, if;* these never-ending *ifs* are but a poor dependance. For my part, I had rather eat a

bit of cheese with my biscuit at once, than think of *ifs*, which bring us so meagre a harvest.

Ernest.—Perhaps, though, the *ifs* may be found to be worth something, if we were to knock out the head of this cask.

Father.—What cask my boy? and what are you talking of?

Ernest.—I am talking of this cask, which is filled with excellent salt butter. I made a little opening in it with a knife; and see, I got out enough to spread nicely upon this piece of biscuit.

"That glutton instinct of yours for once is of some general use," answered I. "But now let us profit by the event. Who will have some butter on his biscuit?" The boys surrounded the cask in a moment, while I was in some perplexity as to the best method of getting at the contents. Fritz was for taking off the topmost hoop, and thus loosening one of the ends. But this I objected to, observing that the great heat of the sun would not fail to melt the butter, which would then run out, and be wasted. The idea occurred to me, that I would make a hole in the bottom of the cask, sufficiently large to take out a small quantity of butter at a time; and I set about manufacturing a little wooden shovel, to use for the purpose. All this succeeded vastly well, and we sat down to breakfast, some biscuits and a cocoa-nut shell full of salt butter being placed on the ground, round which we all assembled. We toasted our biscuit, and while it was hot, applied the butter and contrived to make a hearty breakfast.

"One of the things we must not forget to look for in the vessel," said Fritz, "is a spiked collar or two for our dogs, as a protection to them should they again be called upon to defend themselves from wild beasts, which I fear is too probable will be the case."

"Oh!" says Jack, "I can make spiked collars, if my mother will give me a little help."

"That I will, most readily my boy; for I should like to see what new fancy has come into your head," cried she.

"Yes, yes," pursued I, "as many new inventions as you please; you cannot better employ your time; and if you produce something useful, you will be rewarded with the commendations of all. But now for work. You, Mr. Fritz, who, from your superior age and discretion, enjoy the high honor of being my privy counsellor, must make haste and get yourself ready, and we will undertake to-day our voyage to the vessel, to bring away whatever may be possible. You younger

boys will remain here, under the wing of your kind mother. I hope I need not mention, that I rely on your perfect obedience to her will, and general good behavior."

While Fritz was getting the boat ready, I looked about for a pole, and tied a piece of white linen to the end of it; this I drove into the ground, in a place where it would be visible from the vessel; and I concerted with my wife, that in case of any accident that should require my prompt assistance, they should take down the pole and fire a gun three times as a signal of distress, in consequence of which I would immediately turn back. But I gave her notice, that there being so many things to accomplish on board the vessel, it was probable that we should not otherwise return at night; in which case I, on my part, also promised to make signals. My wife had the good sense and courage to consent to my plan. She, however, extorted from me a promise that we should pass the night in our tubs, and not on board the ship. We took nothing with us but our guns and a recruit of powder and shot, relying that we should find provisions on board; yet I did not refuse to indulge Fritz in the wish he expressed, to take the young monkey, as he wished to see how the little creature would like some milk from the cow, or from a goat.

We embarked in silence, casting our anxious looks on the beloved objects we were quitting. Fritz rowed steadily, and I did my best to second his endeavors, by rowing from time to time, on my part, with the oar which served me for a rudder. When we had gone some distance, I remarked a current which was visible a long way. To take advantage of this current, and to husband our strength by means of it, was my first care. Little as I knew of the management of sea affairs, I succeeded in keeping our boat in the direction in which it ran, by which means we were drawn gently on till at length the gradual diminution of its force obliged us again to have recourse to our oars; but our arms having now rested for some time, we were ready for new exertions. A little afterwards we found ourselves safely arrived at the cleft of the vessel, and fastened our boat securely to one of its timbers.

Fritz the first thing went with his young monkey on his arm to the main deck, where he found all the animals we had left on board assembled. I followed him, well pleased to observe the generous impatience he showed to relieve the wants of the poor abandoned creatures, who, one and all, now saluted us by the sounds natural to its species! It was not so much the want of food, as the desire of seeing their accustomed

human companions, which made them manifest their joy in this manner, for they had a portion of the food and water we had left them still remaining. The first thing we did was to put the young monkey to one of the goats, that he might suck; and this he did with such evident pleasure, and such odd grimaces, that he afforded us much amusement. We next examined the food and water of the other animals taking away what was half spoiled, and adding a fresh supply, that no anxiety on their account might interrupt our enterprise. Nor did we neglect the care of renewing our own strength by a plentiful repast.

While we were seated, and appeasing the calls of hunger, Fritz and I consulted what should be our first occupation, when, to my surprise the advice he gave was, that we should contrive a sail for our small boat. "In the name of heaven," cried I, "what makes you think of this at so critical a moment, when we have so many things of indispensable necessity to arrange?" "True father," said Fritz; "but let me confess that I found it very difficult to row for so long a time, though I assure you I did my best and did not spare my strength. I observed that, though the wind blew strong in my face, the current still carried us on. Now, as the current will be of no use in our way back, I was thinking that we might make the wind supply its place. Our boat will be very heavy when we have loaded it with the things we mean to take away, and I am afraid I shall not be strong enough to row to land: so do you not think that a sail would be a good thing just now?"

"Ah, ah, Mr. Fritz! You wish to spare yourself a little trouble, do you? But seriously, I perceive much good sense in your argument, and feel obliged to my privy counsellor for his good advice. The best thing we can do is, to take care not to overload the boat and thus avoid the danger of sinking, or of being obliged to throw some of our stores overboard. We will, however, set to work upon your sail; it will give us a little trouble. But come, let us begin."

I assisted Fritz to carry a pole strong enough for a mast, and another not so thick, for a sailyard. I directed him to make a hole in a plank with a chisel, large enough for the mast to stand upright in it. I then went to the sail-room, and cut a large sail down to a triangular shape: I made holes along the edges, and passed cords through them. We then got a pulley, and with this and some cords, and some contrivance in the management of our materials, we produced a sail.

Fritz, after taking observations through a telescope of what was passing on land, and which we had already done several times, imparted the agreeable tidings that all was well with our dear family. He had distinguished his mother walking tranquilly along the shore. He soon after brought me a small streamer, which he had cut from a piece of linen, and which he entreated me to tie to the extremity of the mast, as much delighted with the streamer as with the sail itself. He gave to our machine the name of *The Deliverance;* and in speaking of it, instead of calling it a *boat*, it had now the title of *the little vessel.*

"But now father," said Fritz, looking kindly on me as he spoke, "as you have eased me of the labor of rowing, it is *my* turn to take care of *you.* I am thinking to make you a better contrived rudder; one that would enable you to steer the boat both with greater ease and greater safety."—"Your thought would be a very good one," said I, "but that I am unwilling to lose the advantage of being able to proceed this way and that, without being obliged to veer. I shall therefore fix our oars in such a manner as to enable me to steer the raft from either end." Accordingly, I fixed bits of wood to the stem and stern of the machine, in the nature of grooves, which were calculated to spare us a great deal of trouble.

During these exertions the day advanced, and I saw that we should be obliged to pass the night in our tubs, without much progress in our task of emptying the vessel. We had promised our family to hoist a flag as a signal, if we passed the night from home, and we found the streamer precisely the thing we wanted for this purpose.

We employed the remnant of the day in emptying the tubs of the useless ballast of stones, and putting in their place what would be of service, such as nails, pieces of cloth, and different kinds of utensils, &c., &c. The Vandals themselves could not have made a more complete pillage than we had done. The prospect before us of entire solitude, made us devote our attention to the securing as much powder and shot as we could, as a means of catching animals for food, and of defending ourselves against wild beasts to the latest moment possible. Utensils for every kind of workmanship, of which there was a large provision in the ship, were also objects of incalculable value to us. The vessel, which was now a wreck, had been sent out as a preparation for the establishment of a colony in the South Seas, and had been provided with a variety of stores not commonly included in the loading of a ship.

Among the rest, care had been taken to have on board considerable numbers of European cattle; but so long a voyage had proved unfavorable to the oxen and horses, the greatest part of which had died, and the others were in so bad a condition, that it had been found necessary to destroy them. The quantity of useful things which presented themselves in the store-chambers made it difficult for me to select among them, and I much regretted that circumstances compelled me to leave some of them behind. Fritz, however, already meditated a second visit; but we took good care not to lose the present occasion for securing knives and forks and spoons, and a complete assortment of kitchen utensils. In the captain's cabin we found some services of silver, dishes and plates of high-wrought metal, and a little chest filled with bottles of many sorts of excellent wine. Each of these we put into our boat. We next descended to the kitchen, which we stripped of grid-irons, kettles, pots of all kinds, a small roasting-jack, &c. Our last prize was a chest of choice eatables intended for the table of the officers, containing Westphalia hams, Bologna sausages, and other savory food. I took good care not to forget some sacks of maize, of wheat, and other grain, and some potatoes. We next added such implements for husbandry as we could find; shovels, hoes, spades, rakes, harrows, &c., &c. Fritz reminded me that we had found sleeping on the ground both cold and hard, and prevailed upon me to increase our cargo by some hammocks, and a certain number of blankets; and as guns had hitherto been the source of his pleasures, he added such as he could find of a peculiar costliness or structure, together with some sabres and clasp knives. The last articles we took were a barrel of sulphur, a quantity of ropes, some small string, and a large roll of sail-cloth. The vessel appeared to us to be in so wretched a condition, that the least tempest must make her go to pieces. It was then quite uncertain whether we should be able to approach her any more.

Our cargo was so large, that the tubs were filled to the very brim, and no inch of the boat's room was lost. The first and last of the tubs were reserved for Fritz and me to seat ourselves in and row the boat, which sunk so low in the water, that, if the sea had not been quite calm, we should have been obliged to ease her of some of the loading: we, however, used the precaution of putting on our swimming-jackets for fear of any misfortune.

It will easily be imagined that the day had been laboriously employed. Night suddenly surprised us, and we lost all hope

of returning to our family the same evening. A large blazing fire on the shore soon after greeted our sight,—the signal agreed upon for assuring us that all was well, and to bid us close our eyes in peace. We returned the compliment by tying four lanterns with lights in them to our mast-head. This was answered, on their part, by the firing of two guns; so that both parties had reason to be satisfied and easy.

After offering up our earnest prayers for the safety of all, and not without some apprehension for our own, we resigned ourselves to sleep in our tubs, which appeared to us to be safer than the vessel. Our night passed tranquilly enough: my boy Fritz slept as if he had been in bed; while I, haunted by the recollection of the nocturnal visit of the jackals, could neither close my eyes, nor keep them from the direction of the tent. I had however, great reliance that my valiant dogs would do their duty, and was thankful to Heaven for having enabled us to preserve so good a protection.

CHAPTER VI.

A TROOP OF ANIMALS IN CORK JACKETS.

Early the next morning, though scarcely light, I mounted the vessel, hoping to gain a sight of our beloved companions through a telescope. Fritz prepared a substantial breakfast of biscuit and ham; but before we sat down, we recollected that in the captain's cabin we had seen a telescope of much superior size and power, and we speedily conveyed it to the deck. While this was doing, the brightness of the day had come on. I fixed my eye to the glass, and discovered my wife coming out of the tent and looking attentively towards the vessel and at the same moment perceived the motion of the flag upon the shore. A load of anxiety was thus taken from my heart; for I had the certainty that all were in good health, and had escaped the dangers of the night. "Now that I have had a sight of your mother," said I to Fritz, "my next concern is for the animals on board; let us endeavor to save the lives of some of them, at least, and to take them with us."

"Would it be possible to make a raft, to get them all upon it and in this way get them to shore?" asked Fritz.

"But, what a difficulty in making it, and how could we induce a cow, an ass, and a sow, either to get upon a raft, or, when there, to remain motionless and quiet? The sheep and goats one might perhaps find means to remove, they being of a more docile temper; but for the larger animals, I am at a loss how to proceed."

"My advice, father, is to tie a long rope round the sow's neck, and throw her without ceremony into the sea: her immense weight will be sure to sustain her above water; and we can draw her after the boat."

"Your idea is excellent; but unfortunately it is of no use but for the pig; and she is the one I care the least about preserving."

"Then there is another idea, father: let us tie a swimming-jacket round the body of each animal, and contrive to throw one and all into the water; you will see that they will swim like fish, and we can draw them after us in the same manner."

"Right, very right, my boy; your invention is admirable: let us therefore not lose a moment in making the experiment."

We hastened to the execution of our design: we fixed a jacket on one of the lambs, and threw it into the sea; and full of anxious curiosity, I followed the poor beast with my eyes. He sunk at first, and I thought him drowned; but he soon reappeared, shaking the water from his head, and in a few seconds he had learned completely the art of swimming. After another interval, we observed that he appeared fatigued, gave up his efforts, and suffered himself to be borne along by the course of the water, which sustained and conducted him to our complete satisfaction. "Victory!" exclaimed I, hugging my boy with delight: "these useful animals are all our own; let us not lose a moment in adopting the same means with those that remain; but take care not to lose our little lamb." Fritz now would have jumped into the water to follow the poor creature, who was still floating safely on the surface; but I stopped him till I had seen him tie on a swimming-jacket. He took with him a rope, first making a slip knot in it, and soon overtaking the lamb, threw it around his neck, and drew him back to our boat; and then took him out of the water.

We next got four small water-butts. I emptied them, and then carefully closed them again; I united them with a large piece of sail-cloth, nailing one end to each cask. I strengthened this with a second piece of sail-cloth, and this contrivance I destined to support the cow and the ass, two casks to each, the animal being placed in the middle with a cask on

either side. I added a thong of leather, stretching from the casks across the breast and haunches of the animal, to make the whole secure; and thus, in less than an hour, both my cow and my ass were equipped for swimming.

It was next the turn of the smaller animals: of these, the sow gave us the most trouble; we were first obliged to put on her a muzzle to prevent her biting; and then we tied a large piece of cork under her body. The sheep and goats were more accommodating, and we had soon accoutred them for our adventure. And now we had succeeded in assembling our whole company on deck, in readiness for the voyage; we tied a cord to either the horns or the neck of each animal, and to the other end of the cord a piece of wood similar to the mode used for marking nets, that it might be easy for us to take hold of the ropes, and so draw the animals to us if it should be necessary. We struck away some more of the shattered pieces of wood from the fissure of the vessel, by which we were again to pass. We began our experiment with the ass, by conducting him as near as possible to the brink of the vessel, and then suddenly shoving him off. He fell into the water, and for a moment disappeared, but we soon saw him rise, and in the action of swimming between his two barrels, with a grace which really merited our commendation.

Next came the cow's turn; and as she was infinitely more valuable than the ass, my fears increased in due proportion. The ass had swam so courageously, that he was already at a considerable distance from the vessel, so that there was sufficient room for our experiment on the cow. We had more difficulty in pushing her overboard, but she reached the water in as much safety as the ass had done before; she did not sink so low in it, and was no less perfectly sustained by the empty barrels; and she made her way with gravity, and, if I may so express it a sort of dignified composure. According to this method we proceeded with our whole troop, throwing them one by one into the water, where by and by they appeared in a group floating at their ease, and seemingly well content. The sow was the only exception; she became quite furious, set up a loud squalling, and struggled with so much violence in the water, that she was carried to a considerable distance, but fortunately in a direction towards the landing-place we had in view. We had now not a moment to lose. Our last act was to put on our cork-jackets and then we descended without accident through the cleft; took our station in the boat, and were soon in the midst of our troop

of quadrupeds. We carefully gathered all the floating bits of wood, and fastened them to the stern of the machine, and drew them after us. When every thing was adjusted, and our company in order, we hoisted our sail, which soon filling with a favorable wind, conducted us all safe to the land.

We now perceived how impossible it would have been for us to have succeeded in our enterprise without the aid of a sail; for the weight of so many animals sunk the boat so low in the water, that all our exertions to row to such a distance would have been ineffectual; while by means of the sail, she proceeded completely to our satisfaction, bearing in her train our company of animals; nor could we help laughing heartily at the singular appearance we made. Proud of the success of so extraordinary a feat, we were in high spirits and seated ourselves in the tubs, where we made an excellent dinner. Fritz amused himself with the monkey while I was occupied in thinking of those I had left on land, and of whom I now tried to take a view through my telescope. My last act on board the vessel had been to take one look more at those beloved beings, and I perceived my wife and the three boys all in motion, and seeming to be setting out on some excursion; but it was in vain that I endeavored by any thing I saw, to conjecture what their plan might be. I therefore seized the first moment of quiet to make another trial with my glass, when a sudden exclamation from Fritz filled me with alarm. "O Heavens!" cried he, "we are lost! a fish of an enormous size is coming up to the boat."

"And why lost?" said I half angry, and, yet half partaking of his fright. "Be ready with your gun, and the moment he is close upon us, we will fire upon him." He had nearly reached the boat, and with the rapidity of lightning had seized the foremost sheep: at this instant Fritz aimed his fire so skilfully, that the balls of the gun were lodged in the head of the monster, which was an enormous shark. The fish half turned himself round in the water and hurried off to sea, leaving us to observe the lustrous roundness of his belly, and that as he proceeded he stained the water red, which convinced us he had been severely wounded. I determined to have the best of our guns at hand the rest of the way, least we should be again attacked by the same fish, or another of his species.

The animal being now out of sight and our fears appeased, I resumed the rudder; and as the wind drove us straight towards the bay, I took down the sail, and continued rowing till we reached a convenient spot for our cattle to land. I had

then only to untie the end of the cords from the boat, and they stepped contentedly on shore. Our voyage thus happily concluded, we followed their example.

I had already been surprised and uneasy at finding none of my family looking out for us on the shore; we could not however, set out in search of them, till we had disencumbered our animals of their swimming apparatus. Scarcely had we entered upon this employment, when I was relieved by the joyful sounds which reached our ears, and filled our hearts with rapture. It was my wife and the youngest boys who uttered them, the latter of whom were soon close up to us, and their mother followed not many steps behind, each and all of them in excellent health, and eager for our salutations. When the first burst of happiness at meeting had subsided, we all sat down on the grass, and I began to give them an account of our occupations in the vessel, of our voyage and of all our different plans and their success, in the order in which they occurred. My wife could find no words to express her surprise and joy at seeing so many useful animals round us; and the hearty affection she expressed for them, in language the most simple and touching, increased my satisfaction at the completion of our enterprise.

"Yes," said Fritz, a little consequentially, "for this once the privy-counsellor has tried his talents at invention."

"This indeed is very true," replied I; "in all humility have I to confess, that to Fritz alone all praise belongs, and that to his sagacity it is that we are indebted for our success." His mother could not refrain from giving him a hearty kiss. "Our gratitude is due to both," said she; "for both have labored to give us the possession of this troop of animals, an acquisition beyond any other, agreeable and serviceable to us in the situation in which it has pleased Providence to place us."

Ernest and Jack now ran to the boat, and began to shout their admiration of the mast, the sail, and the flag, desiring their brother to explain to them how all the things they saw had been effected and what he himself did of them. In the mean time we began to unpack our cargo, while Jack stole aside and amused himself with the animals, took off the jackets from the sheep and goats, bursting from time to time into shouts of laughter at the ridiculous figure of the ass, who stood before them adorned with his two casks and his swimming apparatus, and braying loud enough to make us deaf.

By and by I perceived, with surprise, that Jack had round

his waist a belt of metal covered with yellow skin, in which were fixed two pistols. "In the name of heaven," exclaimed I, "where did you procure this curious costume, which gives you the look of a smuggler?"

"From my own manufactory," replied he; "and if you cast your eyes upon the dogs, you will see more of my specimens."

Accordingly I looked at them, and perceived that each had on a collar similar to the belt round Jack's waist, with, however, the exception of the collars being armed with nails, the points of which were outwards, and exhibited a formidable appearance. "And is it you, Mr. Jack," cried I, "who have invented and executed these collars and your belt?"

"Yes, father, they are indeed my invention, with a little of my mother's assistance when it was necessary to use the needle."

"But where did you get the leather the thread and the needle?"

"Fritz's jackal furnished the first," answered my wife; "and as to the last, a good mother of a family is always provided with them. Then have I not an enchanted bag, from which I draw out such articles as I stand in need of? So, if you have a particular fancy for any thing, you have only to acquaint me with it." I tenderly embraced her, to express my thanks for this effort to amuse by so agreeable a raillery, and Jack too came in for his share of the caresses and our hearty commendations. But Fritz was both discontented and angry on finding that Jack had taken upon him to dispose of his jackal, and to cut his beautiful skin into strips. He, however, concealed his ill-humor as well as he could; but presently he called out suddenly, holding his nose as he spoke, "What a filthy smell! does it perchance proceed from you, Mr. Currier? Is this the perfume we may expect from your manufactory?" "It is rather yours than mine," replied Jack in a resentful tone; "for it was your jackal which you hung up in the sun to dry." "And which would have been dried in a whole skin, if it had not pleased your sublime fancy to cut it to pieces, instead of leaving me the power to do what I please with my own booty," answered his brother.

"Son Fritz," said I, in a somewhat angry tone, "this is not generous on your part. Of what importance is it who cut up the skin of the jackal, if by so doing it has contributed to our use? My dear children, we are here in this desert island in just such a situation as that of our first parents when they were driven out of Eden; it was still in their power to enjoy

happiness in the fertile land in which God permitted them to live; and this happiness was to proceed from their obedience, from the work of their hands and the sweat of their brow; a thousand and a thousand blessings were granted for their use, but they suffered the passion of jealousy, envy, and hatred to take root in their bosoms: Cain killed his brother Abel, and thus plunged his unhappy parents into the deepest affliction, so that he and his race were cursed by God. This is the horrid crime to which the habit of disputing may conduct. Let us then avoid such an evil, let us share one with the other in every benefit bestowed upon us, and from this moment may the words *yours* and *mine* be banished from our happy circle! What is discovered or produced by one of you, should be equally for the service of all, without distinction. It is quite certain, Jack, that the belt round your waist, not being dry, has an offensive smell; the pleasure of wearing what you had ingeniously contrived makes you willing to bear the inconvenience: but we should never make our own pleasure the pain of another. I therefore desire that you will take it off and place it in the sun to dry, and take care that it does not shrink during the operation; and then you can join your brothers, and assist them to throw the jackal into the sea."

Fritz's ill-humor was already over; but Jack, whose temper was less docile, still retained the belt, and walked about in it with somewhat of an air of resistance. His brothers continued their warfare, pretending to avoid him, and crying out "What a smell! What a smell!" till at length Jack, tired with the part he had been acting, suddenly stripped off the belt, and joined the others in dragging the dead jackal to the sea, where he no longer offended any one.

Perceiving that no preparations were making for supper, I told Fritz to bring us the Westphalia ham. The eyes of all were now fixed upon me with astonishment, believing that I could only be in jest; when Fritz returned displaying with exultation a large ham, which we had begun to cut in the morning. "A ham!" cried one and all; "a ham! and ready dressed. What a nice supper we shall have!" said they, clapping their hands to give a hearty welcome to the bearer of so fine a treat. "It comes quite in the nick of time too," interrupted I; "for, to judge by appearances, a certain careful steward I could name seems to have intended to send us supperless to bed, little thinking, I suppose, that a long voyage by water is apt to increase the appetite."

"I will tell you presently," replied my wife, "what it was

that prevented me from providing a supper for you all at an early hour: your ham, however, makes you ample amends; and I have something in my hand with which I shall make a pretty side-dish; in the twinkling of an eye you shall see it make its entrance." She now showed us about a dozen of turtle's eggs, and then hurried away to make an omelette of some of them.

"Look, father," said Ernest, "if they are not the very same which Robinson Crusoe found in his island! See, they are like white balls, covered with a skin like wetted parchment! We found them upon the sands along the shore."

"Your account is perfectly just, my dear boy," said I; "by what means did you make so useful a discovery!" "Oh, that is part of our history," interrupted my wife; "for I also have a history to relate, when you will be so good as to listen to it."

"Hasten then, my love, and get your pretty side-dish ready, and we will have the history for the dessert. In the meantime I will relieve the cow and the ass from their jackets. Come along, boys, and give me your help." I got up, and all followed me gaily to the shore. We were not long in effecting our purpose with the cow and the ass, who were animals of a quiet and kind temper; but when it was the sow's turn, our success was neither so easy nor so certain; for no sooner had we untied the rope than she escaped from us, and ran so fast that none of us could catch her. The idea occurred to Ernest of sending the two dogs after her, who caught at her ears and sent her back, while we were half-deafened with the hideous noise she made; at last she suffered us to take off her cork jacket. We now laid the accoutrements across the ass's back, and returned to the kitchen; our slothful Ernest highly delighted that he was likely in future to have our loads carried by a servant.

In the meanwhile the kind mother had prepared the omelette, and spread a table-cloth on the end of the cask of butter, upon which she had placed some of the plates and silver spoons we had brought from the ship. The ham was in the middle, and the omelette and the cheese opposite to each other; and altogether made a figure not to be despised by the inhabitants of a desert island. By and by the two dogs, the fowls, the pigeons, the sheep, and the goats, had all assembled round us, which gave us something like the air of sovereigns of the country. It did not please the geese and ducks to add themselves to the number of these our royal subjects, they deserted

us for a marshy swamp, where they found a kind of little crabs in great abundance, and which furnished a delicious food for them, and relieved us of the care of providing for their support.

When we had finished our repast, I bade Fritz present our company with a bottle of Canary wine, which we had brought from the Captain's cabin, and I desired my wife to indulge us with the promised history.

CHAPTER VII.

SECOND JOURNEY OF DISCOVERY, PERFORMED BY THE MOTHER OF THE FAMILY.

"You pretend," said my wife, with a little malicious smile, to be curious about my history, yet you have not let me speak a single word in all this time; but the longer a torrent is pent up, the longer it flows when once let loose. Now then that you are in the humor to listen, I shall give vent to a certain little movement of vanity which is fluttering at my heart. Not, however, to intrude too long upon your patience, we will skip the first day of your absence, in the course of which nothing took place except my anxiety on your account, which confined me for the most part to the spot from whence you embarked, and from which I could see the vessel. But this morning, when I was made happy by the sight of your signal, and had set up mine in return, I looked about, before the boys were up, in hopes to find a shady place where we might now and then retire from the heat of the sun; but I found not a single tree. This made me reflect a little seriously on our situation. It will be impossible, said I to myself, to remain in this place with no shelter but a miserable tent, under which the heat is even more excessive than without. Courage then! pursued I; my husband and my eldest son are at this moment employed for the general good; why should not I be active and enterprising also? why not undertake, with my youngest sons, to do something that shall add some one comfort to our existence? I will pass over with them to the other side of the river, and with my own eyes examine the country respecting which my husband and Fritz have related such wonders. I will try to find out some well-shaded

agreeable spot, in which we may all be settled. I now cast another look towards the vessel; but perceiving no sign of your return, I determined to share a slight dinner with the boys, and then we set out resolutely on a journey of discovery for a habitation better sheltered from the sun.

"In the morning Jack had slipped to the side of the tent where Fritz had hung the jackal, and with his knife, which he sharpened from time to time upon the rock, he cut some long strips of skin from the back of the animal, and afterwards set about cleaning them, Ernest discovered him in this uncleanly occupation; and as he is, as we all know, a little delicate and afraid to soil his fingers, he not only refused to give Jack any assistance, but thought fit to sneer a little at the currier-like trade which he had engaged in. Jack, who, as we also know, has not the most patient temper in the world, raised his hand to give him a little cuff. Ernest made his escape, more alarmed, I believe, by Jack's dirty hands than by the expected blow; while I, for my part, ran to set them right, and to give a mother's reproof to both. Jack persisted that he had a justification full and undeniable in the great usefulness of the said dirty work; 'for,' observed he, 'it is intended to make some collars, which I shall arm with spikes, and the dogs will wear them for our defence.' I saw in an instant that Ernest had been the aggressor, and on him fell the reproof: I represented how little a squeamishness like his suited with the difficulties of our situation, in which one and all were called upon to assist in any employment that should promise to contribute to the general good.

"Jack returned to his strips of skin, the cleaning of which he completed very cleverly. When he had finished this part of his undertaking, he looked out from the chest of nails those that were longest, and which had the largest and flattest heads: these he stuck through the bits of skin intended for the collars, at small distances. He next cut a strip of sailcloth the same breadth as the leather, and, laying it along on the heads of the nails, politely proposed to me the agreeable occupation, of sewing them together, to prevent the heads of the nails from injuring the dogs. I begged to be excused; but seeing the good-humor with which he tried to sew them for himself, and that, with all his good-will, it was too hard a task, I rewarded him by doing it myself; few mothers refuse the sacrifice of a little personal convenience, to afford delight to a virtuous child.

"But now having yielded the first time, I found I had made

myself liable to further claims. The next thing was a belt for himself, which he had manufactured of the same materials, and was impatient to see completed, it being intended to contain his pistols. 'We shall see,' said he, strutting about as he spoke,' if the jackals will dare to attack us now.' 'But, dear Jack, you do not foresee what will happen; a piece of skin not entirely dry is always liable to shrink when exposed to the heat; so, after all, you will not be able to make use of it.' My little workman, as I said this, struck his forehead, and betrayed other marks of impatience. 'What you say is true,' said he,' and I had not well considered; but I know of an effectual remedy.' He then took a hammer and some nails, and stretched his strips of leather on a plank, which he laid in the sun to dry quickly, thus preventing the possibility of their shrinkng. I applauded his invention, and promised him I would not fail to give you a full account of his proceedings.

"I next assembled them round me, and informed them of my plans for an excursion, and you may believe I heard nothing like a dissenting voice. They lost not a moment in preparing themselves; they examined their arms, their game-bags, looked out for the best clasp-knives, and cheerfully undertook to carry the provision-bags; while I, for my share, was loaded with a large flask of water and a hatchet, for which I thought it likely we might find a use. I also took the light gun which belongs to Ernest, and gave him in return a carbine, which might be loaded with several balls at once. We took some refreshment, and then sallied forth, attended by the two dogs for our escort. Turk, who had already accompanied you in the same direction, seemed well aware that he knew the way, and proceeded at the head of the party in quality of a conductor. We arrived at the place at which you had crossed the river, and succeeded in passing over, though not without difficulty.

"As we advanced, I reflected that our safety depended in some measure on the two boys, because it was they only who knew how to use the guns. I now for the first time began to feel how fortunate it was that you had accustomed them from infancy to face danger of every kind; but I am now convinced that the parent who adopts a hardy scheme of education acts the wisest part. But now for the passing of the river.

"Ernest was first in reaching the other side. The little Francis entreated me to carry him on my back, which was difficult enough. At length we found means to manage pretty

well, thanks to Jack, who relieved me of my gun and the hatchet. But for himself, finding he was scarcely able to stand under his added weight, he resolved to go straight into the water at once, rather than run the risk of slipping, by stepping on loose wet pieces of stone so heavily loaded. I myself had great difficulty to keep myself steady with the dear little burden at my back, who joined his hands round my neck, and leaned with all his weight upon my shoulders. After having filled my flask with river water, we proceeded on our way till we had reached to the top of the hill which you described to us as so enchanting, and where I partook of the pleasure you had experienced. I continued for some time to look around and admire in silence; and for the first time since the event of our dreadful accident at sea, I felt my heart begin to open to a sense of enjoyment and of hope.

"In casting my eyes over the vast extent before me, I had observed a small wood of the most inviting aspect. I had so long sighed for a little shade, that I resolved to bend our course towards it: for this, however, it was necessary to go a long way through a strong kind of grass, which reached above the heads of the little boys; an obstacle which, on trial, we found too difficult to overcome. We therefore resolved to walk along the river, and turn at last upon the wood. We found traces of your footsteps, and took care to follow them till we had come to a place which seemed to lead directly to it; but here again we were interrupted by the height and thickness of the grass, which nothing but the utmost exhausting endeavors could have enabled us to get through. Jack was now loitering a little behind, and I frequently turned round to observe what he could be doing: at last I saw him tearing off some handfuls of grass and wiping his clothes with it, and then shake his pocket-handkerchief, which was wet, and lay it on his shoulders to dry. I hastened back to inquire what had happened.

"'Oh, mother,' said he, 'I believe all the water of the river we have crossed has got into my pockets: only see, everything I had in them is wet, pistols, turfs, everything.'

"'Good Heavens!' interrupted I in great alarm, 'had you put your pistols in your pocket? They were not loaded I hope?'

"'I am sure I do not know, mother; I only put them there while my belt was drying, that I might always have them about me.'

"'Thoughtless, yet fortunate boy!' exclaimed I. 'Do you

know what an escape you have had? . If with the suddenness of your motions the pistols had gone off, they would have infallibly have killed you. Take care, I entreat you, not to commit such an imprudence in future.' 'There is nothing, I believe to fear, mother, for this time,' replied he, holding the pistols so as to let the water run out of them. And in reality I perceived, by the condition they were in, that there was little danger of their going off. While we were talking of what had happened, our attention was interrupted by a sudden noise, and looking about, we perceived a large bird rising from the thickest part of the grass, and mounting in the air. Each of the boys prepared to fire, but before they could be ready the bird was out of the reach of shot. Ernest was bitterly disappointed, and instantly exchanged the gun for the carbine I had given him, crying, 'What a pity! If I had but had the lightest gun! if the bird had not got away so fast, I would lay any wager I should have killed him.

"'The mischief was, no doubt, that you did not let him know beforehand that it was your pleasure he should wait till you could be quite ready,' observed I laughing.

"'But, mother, how could I possibly suppose that the bird could fly away in less than the twinkling of an eye? Ah, if one would but come at this very moment!'

"'A good sportsman, Ernest, always holds himself in readiness, this being, as I understand, one of his great arts; for you must know, that birds do not send messages to give notice of their coming.'

"'I wish I could but know,' said Jack, 'what bird it was: I never saw any the least like it.'

"'I am sure it was an eagle,' said the little Francis, 'for I have read in my book of fables, that an eagle can carry off a sheep, and this bird was terribly large.'

"'O yes,' said Ernest scoffingly, 'as if all large birds must be eagles! why do you not know that there are some birds much larger even than eagles? The ostrich, for example, which travellers sometimes name the Condor or the Candor. I must confess it would have afforded me the highest pleasure to have examined this bird minutely.'

"'If you had had time to examine him, you would have had time to kill him,' said I; 'but as the opportunity is gone, let us look for the place in the grass from which he mounted; we may judge at least of his size by the mark he will have left there.' The boys now all scampered away to the place, when suddenly a second bird exactly like the first, except

that he was a little larger, rushed out with a great noise and mounted above their heads.

"The boys remained stupid with astonishment, following him with their eyes and open mouths without speaking a word, while for my own part I could not help laughing heartily 'Oh! such fine sportsmen as we have here!' cried I: 'they will never let us be in want of game, I plainly perceive. *Ah! if one would but come at this moment!*' Ernest, always a little disposed to vent uneasiness by crying, now began to whimper; while Jack, with a curious mixture of tragic-comic bravery upon his features, his eyes darting upon the mountain traveller, takes off his hat, makes a profound bow, and roars out, as if the bird could hear· 'Have the goodness, Mr. Traveller, to indulge me once more with a little visit, only for a single minute: you cannot imagine what good sort of people we are: I entreat that we may have the pleasure of seeing you once again.' We now minutely examined the place from which the birds had mounted, and found a kind of large nest formed of dry plants, of clumsy workmanship; the nest was empty, with the exception of some broken shells of eggs. I inferred from this, that their young had lately been hatched; and observing at this moment a rustling motion among some plants of shorter growth, at some distance from the spot on which we stood, I concluded that the young covey were scampering away in that direction; but as the motion soon ceased, we had no longer a guide to conduct us to their retreat. We next reached a little wood; and here our son Ernest had an opportunity of recognizing many of the originals of the engravings in his book of natural history, and of displaying his knowledge, or his ignorance, to his heart's content. A prodigious quantity of unknown birds were skipping and warbling on the branches of the trees, without betraying the least alarm at our vicinity. The boys wanted to fire on them; but this I absolutely forbade, and with the less scruple, as the trees were of so enormous a height as to be out of gun-shot reach. No, my dear husband, you cannot possibly form an idea of the trees we now beheld! You must somehow have missed this wood; or so extraordinary a sight could not have escaped your observation. What appeared to us at a distance to be a wood, was only a group of about fourteen of them, the trunks of which seemed to be supported in their upright position by arches on each side, these arches being formed by the roots of the tree.

"Jack climbed with considerable trouble upon one of these

arch-formed roots, and with a packthread in his hand measured the actual circumference of the tree itself. He found that it measured more than fifteen braches (the brach is equal to twenty-two inches and a half). I made thirty-two steps in going round one of these giant productions at the roots; and its height, from the ground to the place where the branches begin to shoot, may be about thirty-six braches. The twigs of the tree are strong and thick; its leaves moderately large in size, and bearing some resemblance to the hazel tree of Europe; but I was unable to discover that it bore any fruit. The soil immediately round and under its branches produced in great abundance a short thick kind of plant, unmixed with any of the thistle kind, and of a perfectly smooth surface. The large breadth of shade which presented itself, seemed to invite us to make this spot the place of our repose; and my predilection for it grew so strong, that I resolved to go no further, but to enjoy its delicious coolness till it should be time to return. I sat down in this verdant elysium with my three sons around me. We took out our provision bags: a charming stream formed to increase the coolness and beauty of the scene flowed at our feet, and supplied us with a fresh and salutary beverage. Our dogs were not long in reaching us; they had remained behind sauntering about the skirts of the wood. To my great surprise, they did not ask for any thing to eat, but lay down quietly, and were soon asleep at our feet. For my own part, I felt that I could never tire of beholding and admiring this enchanting spot; it occurred to me, that if we could but contrive a kind of tent that could be fixed in one of the trees, we might safely come and make our abode here. I had found nothing in any other direction that suited us so well in every respect; and I resolved to look no further. When we had shared our dinner among us, and well rested from our fatigue, we set out on our return, again keeping close to the river, half expecting to see along the shore some of the pieces or other vestiges of the vessel, which the waves might have washed there.

"But before we left our enchanting retreat, Jack entreated me to stay and finish sewing the linen strips to his leather belt. The little coxcomb had so great an ambition to strut about and exhibit himself in this new ornament, that he had taken the trouble to carry the piece of wood, on which he had nailed his skin to dry, along with him through the whole of our expedition. Finding that the skin was really dry, I granted his request, preferring, since work I must, to do it

now when I had the advantage of being in the shade. When I had finished, he eagerly fastened on the belt, and placed his pistols in it; he set himself before us in a marching step, with the knuckles of his hand turned back upon his hip, leaving to Ernest the care of putting on the dogs' collars; which he insisted should be done, for it would give them, he said, a martial air. The self-imagined hero was all impatience for you and Fritz to see him in his new accoutrement; so that I had enough to do to walk quick enough to keep sight of him; for in a country where no track of the foot of man is to be found, we might easily lose each other. I became more tranquil respecting him when we had got once more together on the sea-shore; for, as I expected, we found there pieces of timber, poles, large and small chests, and other articles which I knew had come from the vessel. None of us, however, were strong enough to bring them away; we therefore contented ourselves with dragging all we could reach to the dry sands, beyond the reach of the waves at high water. Our dogs, for their part, were fully employed in catching crabs, which they drew with their paws to the shore as the waves washed them up, and on which they made an excellent repast. I now understood that it was this sort of prey which had appeased their hunger before they joined us at dinner. Heaven be praised, cried I, that our animals have found means to procure sustenance at so cheap a rate! for I really begun to think that, with their enormous appetites, they might some day take it into their heads to eat their masters.

"We now suddenly cast our eyes on Flora, whom we perceived employed in turning over a round substance she had found in the sands, some pieces of which she swallowed from time to time. Ernest also perceived her motions, and did us the favor, with his usual composure, to pronounce just these words: 'They are turtle's eggs!'

"'Run, my children,' cried I, 'and get as many as you can; they are excellent, and I shall have the greatest pleasure in being able to regale our dear travellers on their return with so new and delicious a dish.' We found it difficult to make Flora leave the eggs, to which she had taken a great fancy. At length, however, we succeeded in collecting near two dozen of them, which we secured in our provision-bags. When we had concluded this affair, we by accident cast our eyes upon the sea, and to our astonishment perceived a sail, which seemed to be joyfully approaching towards the land. I knew not what to imagine; but Ernest exclaimed that it

was you and Fritz; and we soon had the happiness of being convinced that it was indeed our well beloved! We ran eagerly towards the river, which Jack and Ernest recrossed as before, by leaping from one great stone to another; while I also resumed my burden of little Francis at my back, and in this manner soon arrived at the place of your landing, when we had nothing further to do but to throw ourselves into your arms!"

"And you think we could set up a tent in one of those giant trees at a distance of sixty-six feet from the ground! And by what means are we to ascend this tree? for at present I have no clear view of this important part of the subject."

I perceived a tear stealing into my wife's eye, that she could not prevail upon me to think as she wished of her discovery, and that I treated the subject of her giant trees with so little respect: I therefore endeavored to soothe and relieve her somewhat wounded sensibility.

"Do you recollect," said she, "the large lime-tree in the public walk of the town we lived in; and the pretty little room which had been built among its branches, and the flight of stairs which led to it? What should hinder us from effecting such a contrivance in one of my giant trees, which afford even superior facilities in the enormous size and strength of their branches, and the peculiar manner of their growth?"

"Well, well, we shall see about it. In the meanwhile, my boys, let us extract a little lesson in arithmetic from the subject of these marvellous trees; for this, at least, will be deriving a real benefit from them. Tell me, learned Mr. Ernest, how many feet there are in thirty-six braches? for that, your mother assures us, is the height of the trees."

Ernest.—To answer this question, I must know first how many feet or inches the brache contains.

Father.—The brache, or half-ell, contains one foot ten inches, or twenty-two inches. Now then make your calculation.

Ernest.—I do not find it so easy as I thought. You must help me, Fritz: you are older than I am.

Fritz.—With all my heart. First we take thirty-six braches; then multiply 36 by 22, the number of inches each brache contains, and you have 792; divide this by 12, the number of inches in a foot, and it will give us 66 for the number of feet. Is that right father?

Father.—Yes, quite right. So, my dear wife, you will have

every evening to climb sixty-six feet to get to bed, which, as we have no ladder, is not the easiest thing imaginable. Now then let us see how many feet the tree is in circumference, taking it round the roots. Your mother found that she walked round it in thirty-two steps. Tell us then, Ernest, how many feet do you think these thirty-two steps would make?

Ernest.—You always ask me the things that I know nothing at all about: you should tell me, at least, how many feet there are in a step.

Father.—Well, say two feet and a half to each step.

Ernest.—Twice 32 makes 64; the half of 32 is 16; which added to 64 makes 80 feet.

Father.—Very well. Tell me now, if you recollect the proper term in geometry for the circumference of a circle, or say of a tree, since we are talking of trees.

Ernest.—Oh, you may be sure that I could not forget that it is called the periphery.

Father.—Right. And what is the term for any line which may be drawn from one point of the periphery to another passing through the centre? Now, Jack, you may show us what a great geometrician you intend to be.

Jack.—I believe it is called the diameter.

Father.—So far right. Next, can you tell me what is the diameter of a periphery of eighty feet, and what distance there is between the extremities of the roots of the giant tree and its trunk?

The boys all began to reckon, and soon one said one number, one another, at random; but Fritz called out louder than the rest, that the distance was twenty-six feet.

Father.—You are pretty near. Tell me, did you make a calculation, or was it a mere guess?

Fritz.—No, father, not a guess; but I will tell you; in the town in which we lived, I have often taken notice that the hatter, when he was about to bind the edge of a hat, always measure three times the length of the diameter, and a trifle over, for the quantity of ribbon he should use.

Father.—So; height from the ground to the branches, sixty-six feet; thickness, eight feet in diameter, and twenty-eight feet distance from the extremities of the roots to the trunk; they really, with propriety, may be called giant trees.

We now performed our devotions, and retired to rest, grateful to find ourselves once more together, and in health. We soon closed our eyes, and enjoyed tranquil slumbers till break of day.

CHAPTER VIII.

CONSTRUCTION OF A BRIDGE.

When my wife and I awakened the next morning, we resumed the question of our change of abode. I observed to her, that it was a matter of difficulty, and that we might have reason to repent such a step. "My own opinion is," said I, "that we had better remain here, where Providence seems to have conducted us; the place is favorable to our personal safety, and is near the vessel, from which we may continue to enrich ourselves: we are on all sides protected by the rocks; it is an asylum inaccessible but by the sea, or by the passage of the river, which is not easily accomplished. Let us then have patience yet a little longer at least, till we have got all that can be removed, or that would be useful to us, from the ship."

My wife replied, that the intense heat of the sands was insupportable; that by remaining, we lost all hope of procuring fruits of any kind, and must live on oysters, or on such wild birds as that we found so unpalatable. "As for the safety you boast of," pursued she, "the rocks did not prevent our receiving a visit from the jackals; nor is it improbable that tigers or other animals might follow their example. Lastly, as to the treasures we might continue to draw from the vessel, I renounce them with all my heart. We are already in possession of provisions and other useful things; and to say the truth, my heart is always filled with distressing apprehensions, when you and Fritz are exposed to the danger of that perfidious element the sea."

"We will then think seriously of the matter; but let us have a well-digested scheme of operation before we leave this spot for your favorite wood. First, we must contrive a store-house among the rocks for our provisions and other things, and to which, in case of invasion in the wood, we can retreat and defend ourselves. This agreed, the next thing is to throw a bridge across the river, if we are to pass it with all our family and baggage."

"A bridge!" exclaimed my wife: "can you possibly think of such a thing? If we stay while you build a bridge, we

may consider ourselves as fixed for life. Why should we not cross the river as we did before? the ass and the cow will carry all we possess upon their backs."

"But do you recollect, that to keep what they carry dry, they must not perform their journey as they did from the vessel! for this reason, then, if for no other, we must contrive a bridge. We shall want also some sacks and baskets to contain our different matters; you may therefore set about making these, and I will undertake the bridge, which, the more I consider, the more I find to be of indispensable necessity; for the stream will, no doubt, at times increase, and the passage become impracticable in any other way. At this moment it would be found so for our short-legged animals, and I am sure you would not wish to see them drowned."

"Well, then, a bridge let it be," said my wife, "and you will leave our stock of gunpowder here, I hope; for I am never easy with it so near us: a thunder storm, or some thoughtless action of one of the boys, might expose us to serious dangers."

"You are right, my love; and I will carefully attend to your suggestion. We will keep on hand only a sufficient quantity for daily use; I will contrive a place in the rock for the rest, where it will be safe from the chance of fire or dampness. It is an article which, according to the use which is made of it, may become, on the one hand, a most dangerous enemy, and on the other, a most useful friend."

Thus, then, we decided the important question of removing to a new abode; after which we fixed upon a plan of labor for the day, and then awaked the boys. Their delight on hearing of our project may easily be conceived, but they expressed their fear that it would be a long while before a bridge could be built; a single hour appearing an age to them, with such a novelty in view as the prospect of removing to the wood, to live under the giant trees. They, in the fulness of their joy, entreated that the place might be called *The promised Land.*

We now began to look about for breakfast; Fritz taking care not to neglect his monkey, who sucked one of the goats as contentedly as if she had been its mother. My wife undertook to milk another, and then the cow, and afterwards gave some of the milk to each of the children; with a part of what remained she made a sort of soup with biscuits, and the rest she put into one of the flasks, to accompany us in our expedition. During this time, I was preparing the boat for another

journey to the vessel, to bring away a sufficient quantity of planks and timbers for the bridge. After breakfast we set out; and now I took with me Ernest as well as Fritz, that we might accomplish our object in a shorter time.

We rowed stoutly till we had reached the current, which soon drew us on beyond the bay; but scarcely had we passed a little islet, lying on one side of us, than we perceived a prodigious quantity of seagulls and other birds. I had a curiosity to discover what could be the reason of such an assemblage of these creatures. I steered for the spot; but finding that the boat made but little way, I hoisted my sail.

To Ernest our expedition afforded the highest delight. He was in ecstacies at seeing the sail begin to swell, and the motion of the streamer in the air. Fritz, on his part, did not for a moment take his eyes from the islet where the birds were. Presently he suddenly exclaimed, "I see what it is; the birds are all pecking, tooth and beak, at a monstrous fish, which lies dead upon the soil."

I approached near enough to step upon the land, and after bringing the boat to an anchor with a heavy stone, we stole softly up to the birds. We soon perceived that the object which attracted them was in reality an enormous fish, which had been thrown there by the sea. So eagerly were they occupied with the feast, that not one of them attempted to fly off. We observed with astonishment the extreme voracity of this plumed group: each bird was so intent upon its prey, that we might have killed great numbers of them with our sticks alone. Fritz did not cease to express his wonder at the monstrous size of the animal, and asked me by what means he could have got there?

"I believe," answered I, "you were yourself the means, there is every appearance that it is the very shark you wounded yesterday. See, here are the two balls which you discharged at its head."

"Yes, yes, it is the very same," said my young hero, skipping about for joy: "I well remember I had two balls in my gun, and here they are, lodged in his hideous head."

"I grant it is hideous enough," continued I; "its aspect even when dead makes one shudder, particularly when I recollect how easy it would have been for him to have devoured us. See what a huge mouth he has, and what a rough and prickly skin! one might almost use it for a file; and his length must be above twenty feet. We ought to be thankful to Providence, and a little to our Fritz also, for having delivered us

from such a monster! But let us take away with us some pieces of his skin, for I have an idea that it may in some way or other be useful to us. But how to get at him is the difficulty."

Ernest drew out the iron ramrod from his gun, and by striking with it to the right and left among the birds, soon dispersed them. Fritz and I then advanced and cut several long strips of the skin from the head of the shark, with which we were proceeding to our boat, when I observed, lying on the ground, some planks and timbers which had recently been cast by the sea on this little island. On measuring the largest, we perceived they would answer our purpose; and, with the assistance of the crow and a lever we had brought with us, found means to get them into the boat, and thus spare ourselves the trouble of proceeding to the vessel. With great exertion of our strength, we contrived to bind the timbers together, with the planks upon them, in the manner of a raft, and tied them to the end of the boat; so that, through this adventure, we were ready to return in four hours from the time of departure, and might boast of having done a good day's work. I accordingly pushed again for the current, which soon drove us out to sea; then I tacked about, and resumed the direct route for the bay. All this succeeded to my utmost wishes; I unfurled my sail, and a brisk wind soon conveyed us to our landing-place.

While we were sailing, Fritz, at my request, had nailed the strips of skin we cut from the shark to the mast to dry; and he now observed to me that this was wrong, as they had taken its round shape in drying, and could not be made flat again.

"That was precisely my intention," replied I; "they will be more useful to us round than flat; besides, you have still some left, which you may dry flat; and then we shall have a fine provision of shagreen, if we can find a good method to rub off the sharp points, and afterwards to polish it."

"I thought," said Ernest, "that shagreen was made of ass's skin." "And you were not mistaken," rejoined I; "the best shagreen is made in Turkey, Persia, and Tartary, from skin taken from the back of the ass and the horse. While the skin is yet moist, it is stretched upon a kind of hard fat; they then beat the skin, by which means the fat is incorporated, and gives the surface the appearance of a kind of file; but very good shagreen is also made from the skin of sea-fish, particularly in France."

Ernest asked his brother if he knew why the mouth of the

shark is not, as in other animals, placed in the middle of the snout, but directly under. Fritz confessed his inability to answer this question.

"I suppose," rejoined Ernest," that the mouth of the shark is thus placed, with the intention of preventing him from depopulating the sea and the land. With so excessive a voraciousness of appetite as he possesses, nothing would escape him if he had the power to seize his prey without turning his body; but as it is, there is time enough for a smaller animal to make his escape."

"Well reasoned my young philosopher," cried I; "and though we should not always be able to comprehend the intention of the Creator in the objects which surround us, at least the conjectures we are induced to form respecting them cannot fail of being a useful exercise to the mind."

We were once more landed safely on our shore, but no one of our family appeared. We called to them as loud as we could, which was answered by the same sounds in return, and in a few minutes my wife appeared between her two little boys returning from the river, a rising piece of ground having concealed her from our sight: each carried a handkerchief in hand, which appeared filled with some new prize; and little Francis had a small fishing-net formed like a bag and strung upon a stick, which he carried on his shoulder. No sooner did they hear our voices, than they flew to meet us, surprised at our quick return. Jack reached us before the rest; and his first act was to open the handkerchief he held, and pour out a large number of lobsters at our feet: their mother and little Francis produced each as many more, forming all together a prodigious heap, and all alive; so that we were sure of excellent dinners for some days at least. Some of the animals tried to escape in different directions; and the boys, in following them, were kept in full chase, sometimes pleased and sometimes angry; sometimes laughing, sometimes scolding at the bootless trouble they were engaged in; for no sooner had they seized on the deserter, than ten more had followed his example.

"Now, have I not been very lucky, papa?" said little Francis; "for you must know it was I who found them out. Look, there are more than two hundred of them, and see how large they are, and what fine claws they have? I am sure they will be quite delicious!"

Father.—Excellent indeed, my little fellow, and particularly if it was your industry that first discovered them.

Jack.—Yes, father, it was Francis who saw them first; but it was I who ran to tell mamma, and it was I who fetched the net and put it to rights, and it was I who went up to my knees in water to catch them.

Father.—You make a charming story of it together, my boys, but as it is an interesting subject, you may tell me as many particulars as you please; it is indeed an event of some importance for our kitchen, and I have great pleasure in looking forward to partaking of a dish of your providing.

Jack.—Well then, papa, as soon as you were gone, mamma sat down outside the tent and began to work, while Francis and I took a little walk towards the river, to find a proper place for you to begin the bridge.

Father.—Bravo, Mr. Architect; but joking apart I am much gratified to find that careless head of yours for once employed upon a useful subject. Did you find a proper place for me to begin the bridge?

Jack.—Yes, father, yes. But listen and you will know all. When we reached the river we saw a large stone just at the edge, and little Francis kneeling down, and touching it, suddenly cried out, "Jack, Jack, Fritz's jackal is covered all over with lobsters! Run as fast as you can." I sprang to him in an instant, and saw not only the jackal covered with them, but legions more coming in with the stream. I ran to tell mamma, who quickly got the net you brought from the vessel. Partly with this net, and partly with our hands, we caught those you see in a very few minutes; and we should have caught a much larger number if we had not heard you call, for the river is quite full of them. "You took quite enough for once, my boy," said I: "A little at a time is the maxim that suits us best, and I should even advise your taking the smallest of them back to the river, where they will grow larger; we shall still have sufficient for several magnificent repasts." This, then, said I, to myself, is a new source for our support: even here, in these arid regions, we find means to procure not only the necessaries of life, but even luxuries. May we never cease to evince our gratitude to Providence, by the exercise of a more than ordinary care and industry!

After giving in our turn an account of our voyage, my wife set about dressing one of the lobsters, and in the meantime Fritz and I employed ourselves in untying the raft of timbers and planks, and in moving them from the boat. I then imitated the example of the Laplanders, in harnessing their

reindeer for drawing their sledges. Instead of traces, haltera &c., I put a piece of rope, with a running knot at the end, round the neck of the ass, and passed the other end between its legs, to which I tied the piece of wood which I wished to be removed. The cow was harnessed in the same manner, and we were thus enabled to carry our materials, piece by piece, to the spot which architect Jack had chosen at the river, as the most eligible for our bridge: to say the truth, I thought his judgment excellent; it was a place where the shore on each side was steep, and of equal height; there was even on our side an old trunk of a tree lying on the ground, which I foresaw would have its use.

"Now then, boys," said I, "the first thing is to see if our timbers are long enough to reach the other side: by my eye, I should think they are; but if I had a surveyor's plane we might be quite sure, instead of working at a venture."

"But my mother has some balls of packthread, with which she measured the height of the giant tree," interrupted Ernest, "and nothing would be more easy than to tie a stone to the end of one of them, and throw it to the other side of the river; then we could draw it to the very brink, and thus obtain the exact length that would be required for our timbers."

"Your idea is excellent," cried I; "nothing gives me more pleasure than to see you exercise your invention: run quickly and fetch the packthread." He returned without loss of time; the stone was tied to its end, and thrown across as we had planned; we drew it gently back to the river edge, marking the place where the bridge was to rest; we next measured the string, and found that the distance from one side to the other was eighteen feet. It appeared to me that to give a sufficient solidity to the timbers, I must allow three feet at each end of extra length for fixing them, making therefore in all twenty-four; and I was fortunate enough to find that many of those we had brought did not fall short of this length. There now remained the difficulty of carrying one end across the stream; but we determined to discuss this part of the subject while we ate our dinner, which had been waiting for us more than an hour.

We all proceeded homewards, and entering the kitchen, we found our good steward had prepared for us a large dish of lobsters; but before tasting them, she insisted we should look at something she had been employed about: she produced two sacks intended for the ass, which she had seamed with packthread; the work, she assured us, had with difficulty

been accomplished, since, for want of a needle large enough to carry packthread, she had been obliged to make a hole with a nail for every stitch; we might therefore judge by her perseverance in such a task, of the ardor with which she longed to see her plan of removal executed. She received on this occasion, as was well her due, abundance of compliments and thanks from her companions, and also a little good-humored raillery. For this time we hurried through our meal, each being deeply interested in the work we were about to undertake, and thinking only of the part which might be assigned him towards the execution of the *Nonsuch;* for this, for mutual encouragement, was the name we gave our bridge, even before it was in existence.

Having consulted as to the means of laying our timbers across the river, the first thing I did was to attach one of them to the trunk of the tree of which I have already spoken, by a strong cord, long enough to turn freely round the trunk. I then fastened a second cord to the other end of the timber, and tying a stone to its extremity flung it to the opposite bank. I next passed the river as I had done before, furnished with a pulley, which I secured to a tree; I passed my second cord through the pulley, and recrossing the river with this cord in my hand I contrived to harness the ass and cow to the end of the cord. I next drove the animals from the bank of the river; they resisted at first, but I made them go by force of drawing. I first fixed one end of the beam firm to the trunk of the tree, and then they drew along the other end, so as gradually to advance over the river: presently, to my great joy, I saw it touch the other side, and at length become fixed and firm by its own weight. In a moment Fritz and Jack leaped upon the timber, and, in spite of my paternal fears, crossed the stream with a joyful step upon this narrow but effective bridge.

The first timber being thus laid, the difficulty was considerably diminished; a second and a third were fixed in succession, and with the greatest ease. Fritz and I, standing on opposite sides of the river, placed them at such distances from each other as was necessary to form a broad and handsome bridge: what now remained to be done was to lay some short planks across them quite close to each other, which we executed so expeditiously, that our construction was completed in a much shorter time than I should have imagined possible. The reader should have seen our young workmen, to form the least conception of the delight they felt: they

jumped, danced, played a thousand antics, and uttered a thousand joyful sounds upon their bridge. For my own part, I could hardly restrain myself from joining in those demonstrations of their perfect happiness; and my wife, who had been the mover of all our operations, was as little disposed to a silent calm enjoyment of our success as any of the rest; she ran to one, and then to another, embracing each in turn, and was never tired of passing and repassing on our piece of workmanship, which was everywhere safe, and even, and at least ten feet in breadth. I had not fastened the cross planks to each other, for they appeared to be close and firm without it, and besides, I recollected that in case of danger from any kind of invasion, we could with the greater ease remove them, and thus render the passage of the river more difficult. Our labor however had occasioned us so much fatigue, that we found ourselves unable for that day to enter upon new exertions, and the evening beginning to set in, we returned to our home, where we partook heartily of an excellent supper and went to bed.

CHAPTER IX.

CHANGE OF ABODE.

As soon as we were up and had breakfasted, the next morning, I assembled all the members of my family together, to take with them a solemn farewell of this our first place of reception from the awful disaster of the shipwreck. I confess that for my own part I could not leave it without regret; it was a place of greater safety than we were likely again to meet with; it was also nearer to the vessel. I thought it right to represent strongly to my sons the danger of exposing themselves, as they had done the evening before, along the river. "We are now going," continued I, "to inhabit an unknown spot, which is not so well protected by nature as that we are leaving: we are unacquainted both with the soil and its inhabitants, whether human creatures or beasts; much caution is therefore necessary, and take care not to remain separate from each other." Having unburdened my mind of this necessary charge, we prepared for setting out. I directed my sons to

assemble our whole flock of animals, and to leave the ass and the cow to me, that I might load them with the sacks as before concerted; I had filed these, and made a slit longways in the middle of each, and to each side of the slits I tied several long pieces of cord, which crossing each other, and being again brought round and fastened, served to hold the sacks firmly on the back of the animal. We next began to put together all the things we should stand most in need of for the two or three first days in our new abode: working implements, kitchen utensils, the captain's service of plate, and a small provision of butter, &c., &c. I put these articles into the two ends of each sack, taking care that the sides should be equally heavy, and then fastened them on. I afterwards added our hammocks to complete the load, and we were about to begin to march, when my wife stopped me. "We must not," said she, "leave our fowls behind, for fear they should become the prey of the jackals. We must contrive a place for them among the luggage, and also one for our little Francis, who cannot walk so far, and would interrupt our speed. There is also my enchanted bag, which I recommend to your particular care," said she smiling, "for who can tell what may yet pop out of it for your good pleasure."

I now placed the child on the ass's back, fixing the enchanted bag in such a way as to support him, and I tied them together with so many cords, that the animal might even have galloped without danger of his falling off.

In the meanwhile, the other boys had been running after the cocks and hens and the pigeons, but had not succeeded in catching one of them; so they returned empty-handed and in ill-humor. "Little blockheads!" said their mother, "see how you have heated yourselves in running after these untractable creatures! I could have put you in a way to catch them in a moment; come with me and see." She now stepped into the tent, and brought out two handfuls of peas and oats, and by pronouncing a few words of invitation in the accustomed tone, the birds flocked round her. She then walked slowly before them, dropping grain all the way, till they had followed her into the tent. When she saw them all inside, and busily employed in picking up the grain, she shut the entrance, and caught one after the other without difficulty. The boys looked at each other half ashamed though much amused with the adventure. The fowls were then tied by the feet and wings, put into a basket covered with a net, and placed in triumph on the top of our luggage.

We packed and placed in the tent everything we were to leave, and, for greater security, fastened down the ends of the sail-cloth at the entrance, by driving stakes through them into the ground. We ranged a number of vessels both full and empty, round the tent, to serve as a rampart, and thus we confided to the protection of heaven our remaining treasures. At length, we set ourselves in motion: each of us, great and small, carried a gun upon his shoulder, and a game-bag at his back. My wife led the way with her eldest son, the cow and the ass immediately behind them; the goat conducted by Jack came next; the little monkey was seated on the back of his nurse, and made a thousand grimaces. After the goats came Ernest, conducting the sheep, while I, in my capacity of general superintendent followed behind and brought up the rear; the dogs for the most part pranced backwards and forwards, like adjutants to a troop of soldiers. Our march was slow, and there was something solemn and patriarchal in the spectacle we exhibited; I fancied we must resemble our forefathers journeying in the deserts, accompanied by their families and their possessions. "Now then, Fritz," cried I, "You have the specimen you wished for of the patriarchal mode of life; what do you think of it?" "I like it much father," replied he: "I never read the Bible, without wishing I had lived in those good times."

"And I too," said Ernest, "I am quite delighted with it; I cannot help fancying myself not merely a patriarch but a Tartar, or an Arab, and that we are about to discover I know not how many new and extraordinary things. Is it not true, father, that the Tartars and the Arabs pass their lives in journeying from one place to another, and carrying all they have about them?"

"It is certainly for the most part true," replied I, "and they are denominated wandering tribes; but they generally perform their journeys attended by horses and camels, by means of which they can proceed a little faster, than if, like us, they had only an ass and a cow. For my part, I should not be sorry if I were quite sure that the pilgrimage we are now making would be our last." "And I too am of your way of thinking," cried my wife, "and I hope that in our new abode we shall be so well satisfied with the shade of such luxuriant trees, that we shall not be inclined to further rambles."

We had now advanced half way across our bridge, when the sow for the first time took the fancy of joining us. At the moment of our departure she had shown herself so restive

and indocile, that we were compelled to leave her behind us; but seeing that we had all left the place, she had set out voluntarily to overtake us; taking care, however, to apprize us, by her continued grunting, that she disapproved of our migration. On the other side of the river we experienced an inconvenience wholly unexpected. The tempting aspect of the grass, which grew here in profusion, drew off our animals, who strayed from us to feed upon it; so that, without the dogs, we should not have been able to bring them back to the line of our procession. The active creatures were of great use to us on this occasion; and when everything was restored to proper order, we were able to continue our journey. For fear, however, of a similar occurence, I directed our march to the left, along the sea-side, where the produce of the soil was not of a quality to attract them.

But scarcely had we advanced a few steps on the sands, when our two dogs, which had strayed behind among the grass, set up a sort of howl, as if engaged in an encounter with some formidable animal. Fritz in an instant raised his gun to his cheek, and was ready to fire; Ernest, always somewhat timid, drew back to his mother's side; Jack ran bravely after Fritz with his gun upon his shoulder; while I, fearing the dogs might be attacked by some dangerous wild beast, prepared myself to advance to their assistance. But youth is always full of ardor; and in spite of my exhortations to proceed with caution, the boys, eager for the event, made but three jumps to the place from which the noise proceeded. In an instant Jack had turned to meet me, clapping his hands and calling out "Come quickly, father, come quicky, here is a monstrous porcupine!"

I soon reached the spot, and perceived that it was really as they said, bating a little exaggeration. The dogs were running to and fro with bloody noses about the animal; and when they approached too near him, he made a frightful noise and darted his quills so suddenly at them, that a great number had penetrated the skins of the valiant creatures, and remained sticking in them; and it was no doubt the pain they occasioned which made them howl so violently.

While we were looking on, Jack determined on an attack, which succeeded well. He took one of the pistols which he carried in his belt, and aimed it so exactly at the head of the porcupine, that he fell dead the instant he fired, and before we had a notion of what he was about. This success raised Jack to the height of joy and vanity; while Fritz, on the other

nand, felt a sensation of jealousy almost to shedding tears. "Is it right, Jack," said he, "that such a little boy as you should venture to fire off a pistol in this manner? How easily might you have wounded my father or me, or one of the dogs, by so rash an action!" "Oh yes, to be sure, and what do you suppose hindered me from seeing that you were all behind me? Do you think I fired without taking care of that? Do you take me for an idiot? The porcupine could tell you about that, brother Fritz, if he could but speak. My first fire—pop—dead as a herring! This is something like, brother Fritz, and you would be glad enough to have had such a chance yourself!"

Fritz only replied by a motion of his head. He was out of humor because his younger brother had deprived him of the honor of the day; and he sought a subject of complaint against him, as the wolf did with the poor little lamb. "Come, come, boys," said I, "let me hear no envious speeches and no reproaches; luck for one to-day, for another to-morrow; but all for the common good. Jack was, perhaps, a little imprudent, but you must allow that he showed both skill and courage; let us not therefore tarnish the glory of his exploit." We now all got round the extraordinary animal, on whom nature has bestowed a strong defence, by arming his body all over with long spears. The boys were at a loss what means to use for carrying away his carcass. They thought of dragging it along the ground; but as often as they attempted to take hold, there was nothing but squalling and running to show the marks made by his quills on their hands. "We must leave him behind," said they; "but it is a great pity."

While the boys were talking, my wife and I had hastened to relieve the dogs, by drawing out the quills and examining their wounds. Fritz had run on before with his gun, hoping he should meet with some animal of prey. What he most desired was to find one or two of those large bustards which his mother had described to him. We followed him at our leisure, taking care not to expose our health by unnecessary fatigue; till at last, without further accident or adventure, we arrived at the place of the giant trees. Such indeed, we found them, and our astonishment exceeded all description. "Good heavens! what trees! what a height! what trunks! I never heard of any so prodigious!" exclaimed one and all. "Nothing can be more rational than your admiration," answered I, measuring them with my eyes as I spoke. "I must confess

I had not myself formed an idea of the reality. To you be all the honor, my dear wife, for the discovery of this agreeable abode, in which we shall enjoy so many comforts and advantages. The great point we have to gain, is the fixing a tent large enough to receive us all, in one of these trees, by which means we shall be perfectly secure from the invasion of wild beasts. I defy even one of the bears, who are so famous for mounting trees, to climb up by a trunk so immense, and so destitute of branches."

We began now to release our animals from their burdens, having first thrown our own on the grass. We next used the precaution of tying their two fore legs together with a cord, that they might not go far away, or lose themselves. We restored the fowls to liberty; and then seating ourselves upon the grass, we held a family council on the subject of our future establishment. I was myself somewhat uneasy on the question of our safety during the ensuing night; for I was ignorant of the nature of the extensive country I beheld around me, and what chance there might be of our being attacked by different kinds of wild beasts. I accordingly observed to my wife, that I would make an endeavor for us all to sleep in the tree that very night. While I was deliberating with her on the subject, Fritz, who longed to take his revenge for the porcupine adventure, had stolen away to a short distance, and we heard the report of a gun. This would have alarmed me, if, at the same moment, we had not recognized Fritz's voice crying out, "I touched him! I touched him!" and in a moment we saw him running towards us, holding a dead animal of uncommon beauty by the paws. "Father, father, look, here is a superb tiger cat," said he, proudly raising it in the air, to show it to the best advantage. "Bravo! bravo!" cried I; "bravo, Nimrod the undaunted! Your exploit will call forth the gratitude of our cocks, hens, and pigeons, for you have rendered them what they cannot fail to think an important service. If you had not killed this animal, he would no doubt have demolished in one night our whole stock of poultry. I charge you look about in every direction, and try to destroy as many of the species as fall in your way, for we cannot have more dangerous intruders."

Ernest.—I wish, father, you would be so good as to tell me why God created wild beasts, since man seems to be appointed to destroy them.

Father.—This is indeed a question I cannot answer, and we must be contented with taking care to arm ourselves against

them: neither can I explain to you why many other things, which to us appear to have only injurious qualities, have been created. With respect to beasts of prey, I am inclined to believe that one of the ends of Providence, in giving them existence, is their embellishing and varying the works of the creation; of maintaining a necessary equilibrium among creatures endowed with life; and lastly, to furnish man, who comes naked into the world, with materials for protecting himself from the cold, by the use of their skins, which becomes the means of exchange and commerce between different nations. We may also add, that the care of protecting himself from the attacks of ferocious animals invigorates the physical and moral powers of man, supports his activity, and renders him inventive and courageous. The ancient Germans, for example, were rendered robust and valiant warriors, through their habitual exercises in the field, which enabled them, at a time of need, to defend their country and their liberty, with as little difficulty as they would have experienced in killing a wolf or bear. But let us return to the animal Fritz has killed. Tell me all the particulars of the adventure. How did you kill him?

Fritz.—With my pistol, father, as Jack killed the porcupine.

Father.—Was he on this tree just by us?

Fritz.—Yes, father, I had been observing that something moved among the branches. I went softly as I could, and on seeing him I knew him for a tiger cat. I fired, when he fell at my feet, wounded and furious; and then I fired a second time and killed him.

Father.—You were very fortunate, for he might easily have devoured you. You should always take care, in aiming at animals of this kind, to be at a greater distance.

Fritz.—Why so, father? I might have missed him if I had been further off. I, on the contrary, tried to be as near him as possible, and fired close to his ears.

Father.—This was acting in the same way as your brother Jack, whom you so much derided for his want of care, and may serve you as a lesson not to blame in your brothers, what you would yourself be perhaps obliged to do in the same situation; also not to interrupt their joy with unkind reflections, but rather to partake with them the pleasure of their success.

Fritz.—Well, father; all I now ask of Jack is that he will be so good as not to spoil the beautiful skin of this animal as he did that of the jackal. Only observe what beautiful figures it is marked with, and the fine effect of the black and

yellow spots; the most richly manufactured stuff could not exceed it in magnificence. What is the exact name of the animal?

Father.—You may for the present give it the name of the tiger cat. I do not, however, think that it is the animal which is so denominated at the Cape of Good Hope; I rather think it is the margay, a native of America, an animal of extremely vicious dispositions and singular voraciousness; he attacks all the birds of the forest, and neither a man, a sheep, or goat that should fall in his way, could escape his rapacity. In the name of humanity, therefore, we ought to be thankful to you for having destroyed him.

Fritz.—All the recompense I ask, father, is, that you will let me keep the skin; and I wish you would tell me what use I can make of it.

Father.—One idea occurs to me; skin the animal carefully, so as not to injure it, particularly the parts which cover the legs and the tail. You may then make yourself a belt with it, like your brother Jack's. The odd pieces will serve to make some cases to contain our utensils for the table, such as knives, forks, spoons. Go then, boy, and put away its bloody head, and we will see how to set about preparing the skin.

The boys left me no moment of repose till I had shown them how to take off the skins of the animals without tearing them. In the meanwhile Ernest looked about for a flat stone as a sort of foundation for a fire-place, and little Francis collected some pieces of dry wood for his mother to light a fire. Ernest was not long in finding what he wanted, and then he ran to join us and give us his assistance, or rather to reason right, or wrong, on the subject of skinning animals; and then on that of trees, making various comments and inquiries respecting the real name of those we intended to inhabit. "It is my opinion," said he, "that they are, really and simply, enormously large hazel trees; see if the leaf is not of exactly the same form." "But that is no proof," interrupted I; "for many trees bear leaves of the same shape, but nevertheless are of different kinds."

Ernest.—I thought, father, that the mango tree only grew on the sea-shore, and in marshy soils?

Father.—You were not mistaken: it is the black mango tree which loves the water. But there is, besides, the red mango, which bears its fruit in bunches, something like our currant bushes. This kind of the mango tree is found at a considerable distance from the sea, and its wood is used for dy-

ing red. There is a third sort, which is called the mountain mango, or yellow wood, and this is the kind whose roots produce the beautiful arches you now see around us.

Presently little Francis came running, with his mouth crammed full of something, and calling out, "mamma, mamma, I have found a nice fruit to eat, and I have brought you home some of it!"

"Little glutton!" replied his mother, quite alarmed, "what have you got there? For Heaven's sake, do not swallow, in this imprudent manner, the first thing that falls in your way; for by this means you may be poisoned, and then you would die." She made him open his mouth, and took out with her finger what he was eating with so keen a relish. With some difficulty she drew out the remains of a fig. "A fig!" exclaimed I: "where did you get this fig?"

Francis.—I got it among the grass, papa; and there are a great many more. I thought it must be good to eat, for the fowls and the pigeons, and even the pig, came to the place and eat them in large quantities.

Father.—You see then, my dear, said I to my wife, that our beautiful trees are fig-trees, at least the kind which are thus named at the Antilles. I took this occasion to give the boys another lesson on the necessity of being cautious, and never to venture on tasting anything they met with, till they had seen it eaten by birds and monkeys. At the word monkeys, they all ran to visit the little orphan, whom they found seated on the roots of a tree, and examining with the oddest grimaces the half-skinned tiger cat, which lay near him. Francis offered him a fig, which he first turned round and round, then smelled at it, and concluded by eating it voraciously. "Bravo, Bravo! Mr. Monkey," exclaimed the boys, clapping their hands, "so then these figs are good to eat! Thank you, Mr. Monkey, for, after your wise decision, we shall make a charming feast on them."

In the meanwhile my wife had been busy in making a fire, putting on the pot, and preparing for our dinner. The tiger cat was bestowed upon the dogs, who waited impatiently to receive it. While our dinner was dressing, I employed my time in making some packing needles with some of the quills of the porcupine, which the boys had contrived to draw from his skin, and bring home. I put the point of a large nail into the fire till it was red-hot; then taking hold of it with some wet linen in my hand, by way of guide, I with great ease perforated the thick end of the quills with it. I had

soon the pleasure of presenting my wife with a large packet of long, stout needles, which were the more valuable in her estimation, as she had formed the intention of contriving some better harness for our animals, and had been perplexed how to set about them without some larger needles. I, however, recommended to her to be frugal in the use of her packthread, for which I should soon have so urgent a need, in constructing a ladder for ascending the tree we intended to inhabit.

I had singled out the highest fig-tree; and while we were waiting for dinner, I made the boys try how high they could throw a stick or stone into it. I also tried myself; but the lowest branches were so far from the ground, that none of us could touch them. I perceived, therefore, that we should want some new inventions for fastening the ends of my ladder to them. I allowed a short pause to my imagination, during which I assisted Jack and Fritz in carrying the skin of the tiger cat to a near rivulet, where we confined it under water with some large stones. After this we returned and dined heartily on some slices of ham and bread and cheese, under the shade of our favorite trees.

CHAPTER X.

CONSTRUCTION OF A LADDER.

Our repast ended, I observed to my wife that we should be obliged to pass the night on the ground. I desired her to begin preparing the harness for the animals, that they might go to the sea-shore, and fetch pieces of wood or other articles which might be useful to us. I, in the meantime, set about suspending our hammocks to some of the arched roots of the trees. I next spread a piece of sail-cloth large enough to cover them, to preserve us from the dew and from the insects I then hastened with the two eldest boys to the sea-shore, to choose out such pieces of wood as were most proper for the steps of my ladder. Ernest was so lucky as to discover some bamboo canes in a sort of bog. I took them out, and with his assistance, completely cleared them from the dirt; and stripping off their leaves, I found, to my great joy, that they

were precisely what I wanted. I then instantly began to cut them with my hatchet, in pieces of four or five feet long; the boys bound them together in fagots, and we prepared to return with them to our place of abode. I next secured some of the straight and most slender of the stalks, to make some arrows with, of which I knew I should stand in need. At some distance from the place where we stood, I perceived a sort of thicket, in which I hoped to find some young pliant twigs, which I thought might also be useful to me; we proceeded to the spot; but apprehending it might be the retreat of some dangerous reptile, or animal, we held our guns in readiness. Flora, who had accompanied us, went before. We had hardly reached the thicket before she made several jumps, and threw herself furiously into the middle of the bushes; when a troop of large-sized flamingoes sprang out, and with a loud rustling noise mounted into the air. Fritz fired, when two of the birds fell among the bushes: one of them was quite dead; the other was only slightly wounded in the wing, and finding that he could not fly, he ran so fast towards the water, that we were afraid he would escape us. Fritz, in the joy of his heart, plunged up to his knees in the water, to pick up the flamingo he had killed, and with great difficulty was able to get out again; while I, warned by his example, proceeded more cautiously in my pursuit of the wounded bird. Flora came to my assistance and running on before, caught hold of the flamingo, and held him fast till I reached the spot and took him into my protection. All this was effected with considerable trouble; for the bird made a stout resistance, flapping its wings with violence for some time. But at last I succeeded in securing him.

Fritz was not long in extricating himself from the swamp; he now appeared holding the dead flamingo by the feet: but I had more trouble in the care of mine, as I had a great desire to preserve him alive. I had tied his feet and his wings with my handkerchief; notwithstanding which he continued to flutter about to a distressing degree, and tried to make his escape. I held the flamingo under my left arm, and my gun in my right hand. I made the best jumps I was able to get to the boys, but at the risk of sinking every moment in the mud, which was extremely deep, and from which it would have been difficult to release me.

The joy of the boys was excessive, when they saw that my flamingo as alive. "If we can but cure his wound and contrive to feed him, what a happiness it will be!" said they.

"Do you think he will like to be with the other fowls?" "I know," answered I, "that he is a bird that may be easily tamed; but he will not thank you for such food as we give our fowls; he will make his humble petition to you for some small fish, a few worms or insects."

Ernest.—Our river will furnish him with all these: Jack and Francis can catch as many as he will want; and very soon, with such long legs as he has, he may learn the way to the river and find them for himself. But, father are all flamingoes like this, of such a beautful red color, and the wings so exquisitely tinted with purple? I think I have seen the flamingo in my Natural History, and the colors were not like these: so perhaps this is not a flamingo at last.

Father.—I believe it is a flamingo, Ernest, and that this difference in the plumage denotes the age of the bird: when very young they are gray; at a more advanced age they are white; and it is only when they are full grown, that they are adorned with this beautiful tinted plumage. But one of you must hold our live flamingo, while I repeat my visit to the canes, for I have not done with them yet. I accordingly selected some of the oldest of the stalks, and cut from them their hard pointed ends, to serve for the tips of my arrows, for which they are also used by the savages of the Antilles. Lastly, I looked for two of the longest canes, which I cut, for the purpose of measuring the height of our giant tree, about which I felt so deep an interest. When I told my sons the use I intended to make of the two longest canes, they indulged themselves in a hearty laugh at me, and maintained, that though I should lay ten such canes up the trunk of the tree, the last would not reach even the lowest branch. I requested they would oblige me by having a little patience; and I reminded them, that it was not long ago that they defied their mother to catch the fowls, because they themselves had not known how to set about it. We now thought of returning. Ernest took the charge of the canes; Fritz carried the dead flamingo, and I resumed the care of the living one.

We had now reached the spot where we had left three bundles of bamboo canes; and as my sons were sufficiently loaded, I took charge of them myself.

We at length arrived once more at our giant trees, and were received with a thousand expressions of interest and kindness. All were delighted at the sight of our new captures. My wife, with her usual anxiety about the means for subsisting, asked where we should get food enough for all the ani-

mals we brought home? "You should consider," said I, "that some of them feed us, instead of being fed; and the one we have now brought you need not give much uneasiness, if, as I hope, he proves able to find food for himself." I now began to examine his wound, and found that only one wing was injured by the ball, but that the other had also been slightly wounded by the dog laying hold of him. I applied some ointment to both, which seemed immediately to ease the pain. I next tied him by one of his legs, with a long string, to a stake I had driven into the ground, quite near to the river, that he might go in and wash himself when he pleased.

In the meantime my little railers had tied the two longest canes together, and were endeavoring to measure the tree with them; but when they found that they reached no further than the top of the arch formed by the roots, they all burst into immoderate fits of laughter, assuring me, that if I wished to measure the tree I must think of some other means. I however sobered them a little, by recalling to Fritz's memory some lessons in land-surveying he had received in Europe, and that the measure of the highest mountains, and their distance from each other, may be ascertained by the application of triangles and supposed lines. I instantly proceeded to this kind of operation, fixing my canes in the ground, and making use of some string, which Fritz guided according to my directions. I found that the height of the lower branches of our tree was forty feet: a particular I was obliged scrupulously to ascertain before I could determine the length of my ladder. I now set Fritz and Ernest to work, to measure our stock of thick rope of which I wanted no less than eighty feet for the two sides of the ladder: the two youngest I employed in collecting all the small string we had used for measuring, and carrying it to their mother. For my own part I sat down on the grass, and began to make some arrows with a piece of the bamboo, and the short sharp points of the canes I had taken such pains to secure. As the arrows were hollow, I filled them with the moist sand, to give them a little weight; and lastly, I tipped them with a bit of feather from the flamingo, to make them fly straight. Scarcely had I finished my work, than the boys came jumping round me, uttering a thousand demonstrations of joy. "A bow, a bow, and some real arrows!" cried they, addressing each other and then running to me. "Tell us, father," continued they, "what you are going to do with them: do let me shoot

one; and me; and me too," cried one and all as fast as they could speak.

Father.—"Have patience, boys; I say, have patience. Have you, my dear, any strong thread?" said I to my wife; "I want some immediately." "We shall see," she said, "what my enchanted bag, which has never yet refused its aid, can do for you." She then threw open its mouth. "Come," said she, "pretty bag, give me what I ask for, my husband wants some thread, and it must be very strong———See now, did I not promise you should have your wish?—here is a large ball of the very thread you want."

Ernest.—But I do not see much magic, however, mother, in taking out of a bag exactly what we had before put into it.

Father.—If we are to discuss the matter seriously, Ernest, I cannot but allow that your observation is a just one; but in a moment of dreadful apprehension, such as we experienced on leaving the vessel, to think of a variety of little things that might be useful to one or all of us. was an act that we may truly call magical; only from the best of wives and mothers, could it have proceeded: it is, then, something like a truth, that your mother is a good fairy, who constantly provides for all our wants: but you, young giddy things, think little of the benefit you thus enjoy.

Just at this moment Fritz joined us, having finished measuring the string: he brought me the welcome tidings that our stock, in all, was about five hundred fathoms, which I knew to be more than sufficient for my ladder. I now tied the end of the ball of strong thread to an arrow, and fixing it to the bow, I shot it off in such a direction, as to make the arrow pass over one of the largest branches of the tree, and fall again to the ground. By this method I lodged my thread securely, while I had the command of the end and the ball below. It was now easy to tie a piece of rope to the end of the thread, and draw it upwards, till the knot should reach the same branch. Having thus made quite sure of being able to raise my ladder, we all set to work with increased zeal and confidence. The first thing I did was to cut a length of about one hundred feet from my parcel of ropes, an inch thick; this I divided into two equal parts, which I stretched along on the ground in two parallel lines, at a distance of a foot from each other. I then directed Fritz to cut portions of sugar-cane, each two feet in length. Ernest handed them to me, one after another; and as I received them, I inserted them into my cords at the distance of twelve inches respect-

ively; fixing them with knots in the cord, while Jack, by my order, drove into each a long nail at the two extremities, to hinder them from slipping out again. Thus, in a very short time, I had formed a ladder of forty rounds in length, and, in point of execution, firm and compact, and which we all beheld with a sort of joyful astonishment. I now tied it with strong knots to the end of the rope which hung from the tree, and pulled it by the other, till our ladder reached the branch, and seemed to rest so well upon it, that the joyous exclamations of the boys and my wife resounded from all sides. All the boys wished to be the first to ascend upon it; but I decided that it should be Jack, he being the nimblest and of the lightest figure among them. Accordingly, I and his brothers held the ends of the rope and of the ladder with all our strength while our young adventurer tripped up the rounds with perfect ease, and presently took his post upon the branch; but I observed that he had not strength enough to tie the rope firmly to the tree. Fritz now interfered, assuring me that he could ascend as safely as his brother; but as he was much heavier, I was not altogether without apprehension. I fastened the end of the ladder with forked stakes to the ground, and then gave him instructions how to step in such a way as to divide his weight, by occupying four rounds of the ladder at the same time, with his feet and hands. It was not long before we saw him side by side with Jack, forty feet above our heads, and both saluting us with cries of exaltatation. Fritz set to work to fasten the ladder, by passing the rope round and round the branch; and this he performed with so much skill and intelligence, that I felt sufficient reliance to determine me to ascend myself, and well conclude the business he had begun. But first I tied a large pulley to the end of the rope and carried it with me. When I was at the top, I fastened the pulley to a branch which was within my reach, that by this means I might be able the next day to draw up the planks and timbers I might want for building my aerial castle. I executed all this by the light of the moon, and felt the satisfaction of having done a good day's work. I now gently descended my rope ladder, and joined my wife and children.

Finding an inconvenience in being three together on the branch, I had directed the boys to descend first. My astonishment, therefore, on reaching the ground, where neither Fritz nor Jack had made their appearance, it is easier to conceive than to describe. While I was endeavoring to con-

jecture where they could be, we suddenly heard the sounds of voices which seemed to come from the clouds, and which chanted an evening hymn. I soon perceived the trick our young rogues had played, who, seeing me busily employed in the tree, instead of descending as I had desired, had climbed upwards from branch to branch, till they had reached the very top. My heart was now lightened of my apprehensions for their safety. I called out to them as loudly as I could to take great care in coming down. It was almost night, and the light of the moon scarcely penetrated the extreme thickness of the foliage. They presently descended without any accident, when they told us, that scarcely had my voice reached to the great height at which they were. I now directed them to assemble all our animals, and to get what dry wood we should want for making fires, which I looked to as our defence against the attacks of wild beasts. I explained to them my reasons for this; informing them that in Africa, a country remarkable for its prodigious numbers of ferocious animals, the natives secure themselves from their nocturnal visits by lighting large fires, which all these creatures are known to dread and avoid.

My wife now presented me with the day's work she had performed: it was some traces, and a breast-leather each for the cow and the ass. I promised her, as a reward for her zeal and exertion, that we should all be completely settled in the tree the following day, and we then assembled to supper.

All our animals came round us, one after the other. My wife threw some grain to the fowls, to accustom them to draw together in a particular spot; and when they had eaten it, we had the pleasure of seeing our pigeons take their flight to the top of the giant tree, and the cocks and hens perching and settling themselves, and cackling all the time, upon the rounds of the ladder. The quadrupeds we tied to the arched roots of the tree, quite near to our hammocks, where they quietly lay on the grass to ruminate in tranquillity. Our beautiful flamingo was not forgotten, Fritz having fed him with some crumbs of biscuit soaked in milk, which he ate very heartily; and afterwards putting his head under his right wing, and raising his left foot, he abandoned himself with confidence to sleep.

And now the gaping of one and the outstretched arms of another gave us notice that it was time for our young laborers to retire to rest. We performed our evening devotions. I set fire to several of the heaps, and then threw myself con-

tentedly upon my hammock. My young ones were already cased in theirs, and we were soon greeted with their murmurs at being obliged to lie so close to each other that they could not move their limbs. "Ah, gentleman," cried I, "you must try to be contented. No sailor is ever better accommodated than you are now, and you must not expect beds to drop from the clouds on your behalf." I directed them how to put themselves in a more convenient posture, and to swing their hammock gently to and fro. "And see," added I, "if sleep will not visit you as soon in a hammock as on a bed of down." They profited by my advice, and all, except myself were soon asleep.

CHAPTER XI.

THE SETTLING IN THE GIANT TREE.

I had thought it necessary to keep watch during this first night. Every leaf that stirred gave me the apprehension that it was the approach of a jackal or a tiger, who might attack us. As soon as one of the heaps was consumed, I lighted another; and at length, finding that no animal appeared, I by degrees became assured and fell into a sound sleep. The next morning we took our breakfast, and fell to work. My wife, having finished her daily occupation of milking the cow and preparing the breakfast, set off with Ernest, Jack and Francis, attended by the ass, to the sea-shore; they had no doubt of finding some more pieces of wood, and they thought it would be prudent to replenish our exhausted store. In her absence, I ascended the tree with Fritz, and made the necessary preparations for my undertaking, for which I found it in every respect convenient; for the branches grew close to each other, and in an exactly horozontal direction. Such as grew in a manner to obstruct my design, I cut off either with the saw or hatchet, leaving none but what presented me with a sort of foundation for my work. I left those which spread themselves evenly upon the trunk, and had the largest circuit, as a support for my floor. Above these, at the height of forty-six feet, I found others, upon which to suspend our hammocks; and higher still, there was a further series of branches, des-

tined to receive the roof of my tent, which for the present was to be formed of nothing more than a large surface of sail-cloth.

The progress of these preparations was considerably slow. It was necessary to raise certain beams to this height of forty feet, that were too heavy for my wife and her little assistants to lift from the ground. I had, however, the resource of my pulley, which served to excellent purpose, and Fritz and I contrived to draw them up to the elevation of the tent, one by one. While I had already placed two beams upon the branches, I hastened to fix my planks upon them; and I made my floor double, that it might have sufficient solidity if the beams should be warped from their places. I then formed a wall of staves of wood like a park-paling, all round, for safety. This operation, and a third journey to the sea-shore to collect the timber necessary, filled our morning so completely, that not one of us had thought about dinner. For this once we contented ourselves with a bit of ham and some milk, which we eat, and returned to finish our aerial palace, which began to make an imposing appearance. We unhooked our hammocks from the projecting roots, and by means of my pulley, contrived to hoist them up the tree. The sail-cloth roof was supported by the thick branches above; and as it was of great compass, and hung down on every side, the idea occurred to me of nailing it to the pailing on two sides, thus getting not only a roof, but two walls also; the immense trunk of the tree forming a third side, while in the fourth was the entrance to our apartment; and in this I left a large aperture, both as a means of seeing what passed without, and admitting a current of air to cool us in this burning temperature. We also on this side enjoyed an extensive view of the vast ocean, and its lengthening shore. The hammocks were soon hung on the branches, and everything was ready for our reception that very evening. Well satisfied with the execution of my plan, I descended with Fritz who had assisted me throughout the whole; and as the day was not far advanced, and I observed we had still some planks remaining, we set about contriving a large table, to be placed between the roots of the tree, and surrounded with benches; and this place, we said, should be called our dining-parlor. For this time we performed our task imperfectly, for I confess I was much fatigued. The table, however, was such as might be well endured, and my wife expressed her approbation as she looked on, busied with preparations for our supper. In the meantime, the three youngest boys collected all the pieces of wood we had thrown

down from the tree, and a quantity of small wood, to dry in a heap, at a small distance from our fireplace.

Exhausted by the fatigues of the day, I threw myself on a bank, and my wife having seated herself near me, I thanked her for the tender care she was ever imposing on herself; and then I observed to her, that the many blessings we enjoyed led the thoughts naturally to the beneficent giver of them all; and to-morrow being a Sabbath-day, we would rest from work, in obedience to his command, and otherwise keep it holy. We then summoned our young family, and prepared them for the intended solemnity. I called their recollection to the nature of the Sabbath-day; to the gratitude due from us to an Almighty being, who had saved and comforted us in the hour of peril, and the duty of our prayers and acknowledgments. I informed them that, after performing with them the service of the church, I should read to them a prayer I had composed for the occasion, and to which I had given the name of the parable of the Great King. The children expressed their approbation of what I had said, each in his own way, and we now assembled round our table to supper, my wife holding in her hand an earthern pot, which we had before observed upon the fire, and the contents of which we were all curious to be informed of. She took off the cover, and with a fork drew out of it the flamingo which Fritz had killed. She informed us that she had preferred dressing it this way, to roasting, because Ernest had assured her that it was an old bird, which would prove hard and tough, and had advised her to improve it by stewing. We rallied our glutton boy on this foible of his character, and his brothers gave him the name of the *cook*. We, however, had soon reason to know that he had conferred upon us an important obligation; for the bird which, roasted, we perhaps should not have been able to touch, now appeared excellent, and was eaten up to the very bones.

While we were enjoying our repast, the live flamingo stalked up to the place where we were sitting, in the midst of our flock of fowls, to receive his part of the repast. He had now become so tame that we had released him from the stake. He took his walks gravely from place to place, and looked perfectly contented with his company His fine plumage was a most pleasing sight; while on the other hand, the sportive tricks and the grimaces of our little monkey afforded the most agreeable spectacle imaginable. The little animal had become quite familiar with us; jumped from the shoulder of one to that of another; always caught adroitly the meat we

threw to him, and ate it in so pleasant a way as to make us laugh heartily.

The boys now, by my direction, lighted one of the heaps of wood. We tied long ropes loosely round the necks of our dogs, purposing to mount to our tent with the ends in my hand, that I might be able to let them loose upon the enemy at the first barking I should hear. Every one was eager to retire to rest, and the signal for ascending the ladder was given. The three eldest boys were up in an instant; then came their mother's turn, who proceeded slowly and cautiously, and arrived in perfect safety. My own ascension was last, and most difficult; for I carried little Francis on my back, and the end of the ladder had been loosened at the bottom, that I might be able to draw it up in the tent during the night: every step, therefore, was made with the greatest difficulty, in consequence of its swinging motion. At last, however, I got to the top, and, to the admiration of the boys, drew the ladder after me. It appeared to them that we were in one of the strong castles of the ancient cavaliers, in which, when the draw-bridge is raised, the inhabitants are secured from every attack of the enemy. Notwithstanding this apparent safety, I kept our guns in readiness for whatever event might require their use. We now abandoned ourselves to repose; our hearts experienced a full tranquillity; and the fatigue we had all undergone induced so sound a sleep, that daylight shone full in the front of our habitation before our eyes had opened.

CHAPTER XII.

THE SABBATH AND THE PARABLE.

On awaking in the morning, we were all sensible of an unusual refreshment and a new activity of mind. "Well, young ones," cried I, jocosely, "you have learned, I see, how to sleep in a hammock: I heard not a single complaint all the night; no disputing about room from any one of you; all was still, and tranquil." "Ah," answered they, stretching and yawning as they spoke, "we were so heartily fatigued yesterday, that it is no wonder we slept soundly."

Father.—Here, then, my children, is another advantage derived from labor; that of securing a sweet and peaceful sleep.

My wife could not help wishing we had some place like a church for the worship of the sabbath, till I said to her, "There is no place in the world that may not serve for a church, because we may entertain pious sentiments everywhere; and this majestic arch of Heaven, the immediate work of the Almighty, ought more effectually to raise the soul and touch the heart, than an edifice of stone made by the hand of man."

We descended the ladder, and breakfasted on warm milk; we served the animals also with their meal, and then we all sat down on the tender grass; the boys full of impatient curiosity; their mother absorbed in silent reflection, her hands joined and her eyes sometimes turned towards the sky; while I was penetrated with the most lively desire to impress upon the young minds of my children, a subject I considered of the highest importance for their well-being, both in this world and in that which is to come.

All now standing up, I repeated aloud the church service, which I knew by heart, and we sang some verses from the hundred-and-nineteenth psalm, which the boys had before learned; after which we sat down, and I began as follows:

"My dear children, there was once a Great King, whose kingdom was called The Country of Light and Realtiy, because the purest and softest light of the sun reigned there continually, which caused the inhabitants to be in a perpetual state of activity. On the furthest borders of this kingdom, northward, there was another country, which also belonged to the Great King, and the immense extent of what was unknown to all but himself. From time immemorial, a plan the most exact of this country had been preserved in the royal archives. This second kingdom was called The Kingdom of Obscurity or of Night, because everything in it was gloomy and inactive.

"In the most fertile and agreeable part of his empire of Reality, this Great King had a residence called the Heavenly City, in which he lived and kept his court which was the most brilliant that the imagination can form an idea of. Millions of guards, and servants high in dignity, remained forever around them, and a still larger number held themselves in readiness to receive his commands. The first of these were clothed in robes of cloth that was lighter than silk, and white as snow; for white, the image of purity, was the favorite

color of the Great King. Others of his attendants carried flaming swords in their hands, and their garments displayed the most brilliant colors of the rainbow: each of these stood in waiting to execute the will of the King, with the rapidity of lightning, on receiving from him the slightest sign. All were happy to be admitted into his presence; their faces shone with the mildest joy: there was but one heart and one soul among them; the sentiment of paternal concord so united these beings, that no envy or jealousy ever arose among them. The common centre of all their thoughts, and all their sentiments, was devotion to their sovereign: it would have been impossible either to see or converse with them, without desiring to obtain their friendship, and to partake their lot. Among the rest of the inhabitants of the Heavenly City, there were some less close in their attendance upon the Great King; but they were all virtuous, all happy, all had been enriched by the beneficence of the monarch, and, what is of still higher price, had received constant marks of his paternal care; for his subjects were all equal in his eyes, and he loved them and treated them as if they had been his children.

"The great King had, besides the two kingdoms I have been describing, an uninhabited island of considerable extent: it was his wish to people and cultivate this island, for all within it was a kind of chaos: he destined it to be for some years the abode of such future citizens as he intended to receive finally into his residence, to which only such of his subjects were admitted as had rendered themselves worthy by their conduct. This island was called Earthly Abode, he who should have passed some time in it, and by his virtues, his application to labor, and the cultivation of the land, should have rendered himself worthy of reward, was afterwards, to be received into the Heavenly City, and made one of its happy inhabitants.

"To effect this end, the Great King caused a fleet to be equipped, which was to transport the new colonists to this island. These he chose from the kingdom of Night, and for his first gift bestowed upon them the enjoyment of light, and the view of the lovely face of nature, of which they had been deprived in their gloomy and unknown abode. It will easily be imagined that they arrived joyful and happy, at least they became so when they had been for a short time accustomed to the multitude of new objects which struck their feeble sight. The island was rich and fertile when cultivated. The benefi-

cent King provided each individual who was disembarked upon it, with all the things he could want in the time he had fixed for their stay in it, and all the means for obtaining the certainty of being admitted as citizens of his magnificent abode, when they should leave the Earthly Island. All that was required to entitle them to this benefit was, that they should occupy themselves unceasingly in useful labor, and strictly obey the commands of the Great King, which he made known to them. He sent to them his only son, who addressed them from his father in the following terms:

"My dear children, I have called you from the kingdom of Night and Insensibility, to render you happy by the gifts of life of sentiment, and of activity. But your happiness for the most part will depend upon yourselves. You will be happy if you wish to be so. If such is your sincere desire, you must never forget that I am your good King, your tender father, and you must faithfully fulfil my will in the cultivation of the country I have confided to your care. Each of you shall receive, on his arriving at the island, the portion of land which is intended for him; and my further commands respecting your conduct, will be soon communicated to you. I shall send you wise and learned men, who will explain to you my commands, and that you may of yourselves seek after the light necessary for your welfare, and remember my laws at every instant of your lives it is my will that each father of a family shall keep an exact copy of them in his house, and read them daily to all the persons who belong to him. Further, each first day of the week I require to be devoted to my service. In each colony, all the people shall assemble together as brothers in one place, where shall be read and explained to them the laws contained in my archives. The rest of this day shall be employed in making serious reflections on the duties and destination of the colonists, and on the best means to fulfil the same: thus it shall be possible to all to receive instruction concerning the best manner and most effectual means of improving the land which has been confided to your care: thus you will each day learn to manure, to sow, to plant, to water, and cleanse the land from tares, and from all evil weeds that may choke the good seed. On this same day, each of you may present his supplications, may tell me what he stands in need of, and what he desires to have, to forward the perfection of his labor: all these requests will appear before me, and I shall answer, by granting such as I shall think reasonable and tending to a salutary end. If your heart tells you

that the various benefits you enjoy, deserve your gratitude, and if you will testify it by doubling your activity, and by consecrating to me the day I have chosen for myself, I will take care that this day of rest, instead of being an injury to you, shall become a benefit, through the salutary repose of your body, and that of the animals given you to assist your labors, and who, as well as yourself, should enjoy repose on that day, to recruit their strength. Even the wild animals of of the field, and of the forest, ought on that day to be protected from the pursuit of the hunter.

"'He who, in his Earthly Abode, shall most strictly have observed my will, who shall have best fulfilled the duties of a brother towards his fellow inhabitants, who shall have preserved his land in the best order, and shall show the largest produce from it, shall be recompensed for his deeds, and shall become an inhabitant of my magnificent residence in the Heavenly City. But the neglectful and the idle man, and the wicked man, who shall have spent their time in interrupting the useful labors of others, shall be condemned to pass their lives in slavery, or, according to the degree of their wickedness, shall be condemned to live in subterraneous mines, in the bowels of the earth.

"'From time to time, I shall send ships to fetch certain individuals from the Earthly Island, to reward or punish them, according as they have done well or ill; and as none will be warned beforehand, of the time of the coming of my messenger, it will be well for you to keep watch, that you may be ready to perform the voyage, and worthy to be received into the Heavenly City. It will not be permitted for any one to pass by stealth on board the ship, and leave his abode without my orders; for such a one shall be severely punished. I shall have the most certain knowledge of all that passes in the Earthly Island, and no one will be able to deceive me. A magical mirror will at all times show me the the actions of each individual in the island, and you shall be judged according to your most secret thoughts and actions."

"All the colonists were well satisfied with the discourse of the Great King, and made him the most sacred promises. After a short time allowed for repose from the fatigue of the voyage, a portion of land, and the proper instruments for labor, were distributed to each of the strangers. They received also seeds, and useful plants, and young trees, for producing them refreshing fruits. Each was then left at liberty to act as he pleased, and increase the value of what was con-

fided to his care. But what happened? After some time, each followed the suggestions of his fancy: one planted his land with arbors, flowery banks, and sweet-smelling shrubs; all pleasing to the sight, but which brought forth nothing. Another planted wild apple-trees, instead of the good fruit, as the Great King had commanded; contenting himself with giving high-sounding names to the worthless fruit he had caused to be brought forth. A third had indeed sown good grain, but not knowing how to distinguish the tares that grew up along with it, he pulled up the good plants before they were mature, and left only the tares in his ground. But the greater part let their land lie fallow, and bestowed no labor upon it, having spoiled their implements, or lost their seed, either from negligence or idleness, or liking better to amuse themselves than to labor; many of them had wilfully misunderstood the instructions of the Great King, and sought by subtle turns to change their meaning.

"Few, very few, worked with dilligence and courage, and seeking to improve their land, according to the orders they had received. The great fault of these was, that they would not believe what the Great King had sent to tell them. All the fathers of families had indeed a copy of the laws of the Sovereign, but most of them omitted to read in the book: some saying that it was useless to read it, for they knew it by heart, while they never employed their thoughts upon it. Others pretended that these laws were good for times past, but were no longer beneficial for the present state of the country. Some had even the audacity to assert, that it contained many inexplicable contradictions; that the laws it prescribed were merely supposed or falsified, and that they had therefore a right to deviate from them. Others among them maintained, that the magical mirror was a mere fable; that the King was of too merciful a nature to keep galleys; that there was no such place as the subterranean mines; and that all would at last enter the Heavenly City. From habit they continued to celebrate the first day of the week, but by far the smallest part of it was consecrated to the honor of the Great King. Great numbers of them dispensed with going to the general assembly, either from idleness, or to employ themselves in occupations which had been expressly forbidden. By far the greater part of the people considered this day of repose as intended for pleasure, and thought of nothing but adorning and amusing themselves as soon as daylight appeared. There were only then a small number of persons who kept the day ac-

cording to the decree; and even of those who frequented the assembly, many had their thoughts absent, or were sleepy, or engaged in forming empty projects, instead of listening to the words which fell from the lips of the minister of the Sovereign. The Great King, however, observed unalterably the laws he had laid down and announced, respecting them. From time to time, some frigates appeared on their coasts, each bearing the name of some disastrous malady; and these were followed by a large ship of the line, named the Grave, on board of which, the admiral, whose name was Death, caused his flag of two colors, green and black, to be constantly floating in the air. He showed the colonists, according to the situation in which he found them, either the smiling color of Hope, or the gloomy color of Despair.

"This fleet always arrived without being announced, and seldom gave any pleasure to the inhabitants. The admiral sent the captains of his frigates to seize the persons he was ordered to bring back with him. Many who had not the smallest inclination were suddenly embarked, while others, who had prepared everything for the harvest, and whose land was in the best condition, were also seized. But these last took their departure cheerfully, and without alarm; well knowing that nothing but happiness awaited them. It was those who were conscious they had neglected to cultivate their land, who felt the most regret. It was even necessary to employ force, to bring them under subjection. When the fleet was ready for departure, the admiral sailed for the port of the Royal Residence; and the Great King, who was present on their arrival, executed with strict justice both the rewards and punishments which had been promised to them. All the excuses alleged by those who had been idle, were of no avail. They were sent to the mines and to the galleys, while those who had obeyed the Great King, and well cultivated their land, were admitted into the Heavenly City, clothed in robes of brilliant colors, one exceeding the other according to the degree of merit." Here, my dear children, ends my parable. May you have thoroughly understood its meaning, and may you reap the advantage it is capable of affording you! Make it the subject of your reflections the whole of this day. You, Fritz, I see, are thoughtful; tell me what struck you most in my narration.

Fritz.—The goodness of the Great King, and the ingratitude of the colonists, father.

Father.—And you, Ernest, what is your thought?

Ernest.—For my part, I think they were great fools to have made so bad a calculation. What did they get by conducting themselves as they did? With a little pains they might have passed a very agreeable sort of life in the island, and would have been sure of going afterwards to the Heavenly City.

Jack.—To the mines, gentlemen, away with you! you have well deserved it.

Francis.—For my part, I should have liked best to have lived with the men who were dressed in the colors of the rainbow. How beautifully they must have looked!

Father.—This is well, my boys. I perceive that each of you, according to his age and character, has seized the meaning of my parable. I have by this image endeavored to represent to you the conduct of God towards man, and that of man towards God: let us see now if you have completely seized the sense—I then put different questions to them, and explained what they had not perfectly comprehended; and after a short review of the principle parts of my discourse, I concluded by a moral application.

"Human creatures," said I, "are the colonists of God; we are required to perform the business of probation for a certain period, and, sooner or later, are destined to be taken hence. Our final destination is Heaven, and a perfect happiness with the spirits of just men made perfect, and in the presence of the bountiful Father of us all. The piece of land entrusted to each is the soul; and according as he cultivates and ennobles it, or neglects or depraves it, will be his future reward or punishment. At present, dear children, that you know the true sense of my parable, each of you should make the application of it according to his own consciousness. You, Fritz, should think of the subjects who planted the wild apples, and wished to make them pass for sweet savory fruit of a superior kind. These represent persons who make a parade of the natural virtues belonging to their character, and which are consequently exercised without any trouble to themselves; such as courage, strength, &c.; who prefer them to more essential qualities acquired by others, with sacrifices and labor to themselves; and who, full of presumption and arrogance, consider themselves as irreproachable, because nature has given them personal courage, and bodily strength, and a certain skill in the use of these qualities.

"You, Ernest, should think of the subjects of this Great King, who cultivated their land so as to produce arbors, flow-

ary banks, and sweet-smelling shrubs, and such productions in general as would please the eye, but which produced no fruit. These are they, who gave their whole attention to the acquiring unfruitful knowledge, sciences, &c., and consider with a sort of contempt the things more immediately required for the conduct of life; who exert themselves solely for the understanding and neglect the heart; whose principle aim it is, to obtain self-indulgences, and who neglect what is useful in society.

"You, Jack, and you, Francis, should apply to yourselves the case of those men who let their land lie fallow, or, in their thoughtlessness, mistook the grain, and sowed tares instead of wheat. These are the neglectful subjects, who neither think nor learn, but give to the winds what is taught them, or entirely forget instruction; who reject virtuous sentiments, and let the bad ones grow in their hearts. But for ourselves, one and all, we will adopt the model of the good and zealous laborers; and should our exertions be a little painful, we shall think of the reward which awaits us, when we shall have adorned our souls with all that is good, just and praiseworthy Thus, when death, which cannot fail to come at last, shall summon us, we may follow him with joy to the throne of the Good and Great King, to hear him pronounce these sweet and consoling words; 'O good and faithful servant! thou hast been tried, and found faithful in many things; enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.'" With these words, and a short prayer of benediction, I concluded the solemnity of our Sunday; and I had the satisfaction of seeing that my four sons had not only listened attentively, but that they were struck with the application I had made to each of them. They remained for a short time reflecting in silence. Jack was the first to break it:—"You have explained to us every part of the parable, father, except the copy of the laws of the Great King, which was to be kept and read in every family: have you one of these copies? for you never read it to us."

Father.—My children, this copy is the Holy Bible, which contains all God's laws, and which we ought constantly to study. I cannot forgive myself for not having thought of bringing it from the vessel. Should we not be able to go another voyage, we shall forever be deprived of this divine doctrine.

My Wife.—Have you then forgot my enchanted bag, which I have promised shall furnish everything you can desire? You wish for a Bible. In a minute I will put one in-

to your hands; and heartily do I rejoice in having the power to procure you so great a satisfaction.

Father.—Most excellent of women! Give me then the inestimable book, these laws of the Great King, which from this moment we will take for the rule of our lives. She opened her bag, and with joy I received from her the book of life. I opened it, and read some passages from it to my family. In this solitude, in which for so long a time we had heard only our own thoughts expressed in an appropriate language, we were singularly affected with the voice from Heaven, which now seemed to address us: we felt forcibly that, notwithstanding our exile, we were still connected with the community of mankind by the invisible tie of the same religion, and the same Father: we were forever numbered among the children of God, to whom he enjoins laws, and on whom he bestows his care, no less in a desert, than in an immense capital. I explained with the utmost care what I read to them, and I gave the book in turn to each of the boys, that they might have the pleasure of reading for themselves. I chose in preference, such passages as were applicable to our circumstances. We then raised our hearts to God, to thank him for so signal a benefit as the preservation of our Bible. My young folks still remained thoughtful and serious; but by and by the gayety natural to their age prevailed, and each slipped away to seek the recreation he liked best.

The next morning, the boys assembled round me with a petition that I would show them how to use arrows. We accordingly sat down on the grass; I took out my knife, and, with the remains of a bamboo cane, began to make a bow. I was well satisfied to observe them one and all take a fancy to shooting with an arrow, having been desirous to accustom them to this exercise, which constituted the principle defence of the warriors of old, and might possibly become our only means of protection and subsistence; our provision of powder must at last be exhausted; we might even, from moment to moment, be deprived of it by accident; it therefore was of the utmost importance to us, to acquire some other means of killing animals, or attacking our enemies. The Carribees, I recollected, were taught at a very tender age to strike an object at the distance of thirty or forty steps; they hit the smallest birds perched on the top of the tallest trees. Why then should it not be possible for my boys to learn to do the same?

While I was silently reflecting on the subject, employed in

finishing a bow, Ernest, who had been observing me for some time, slipped suddenly away; and Fritz coming up at the same moment, with the wetted skin of the tiger-cat in his hand, I paid no attention to the circumstance. I began my instructions to my eldest boy respecting the trade of a tanner. I told him the method of getting rid of the fat of the skin by rubbing it over with sand, and placing it in running water till it had no longer any appearance of flesh or any smell; next to rub it with soft butter, to make it supple, and then to stretch the skin in different directions; and also to make use of some eggs in the operation, if his mother could spare them. You will not at first produce such excellent workmanship as I have seen of this kind from England; but with a little patience, regretting neither your time nor your labor, you will have completed some decent-looking cases, which will give you the more pleasure, from being the work of your own hands. When your skin shall have thus been prepared, cut certain small cylinders of wood of the size and length required; scoop these cylinders hollow, so as to form a convenient case for a knife, a fork, or a spoon; then stretch your softened skin upon the surface of the cylinders in such a manner that the skin may reach a little beyond the extremity of the wood, and close at the top; you have nothing more to do, than to let the skin cling to, and dry upon these moulds.

At this moment we heard the firing of a gun, which proceeded from our tent in the tree, and two birds at the same time fell dead at our feet. We were at once surprised and alarmed, and all eyes were turned upwards to the place. There we saw Ernest standing outside the tent, a gun in his hand, and heard him triumphantly exclaiming, "Catch them! catch them there! I have hit them; and you see I did not run away for nothing." He descended the ladder joyfully, and ran with Francis to take up the two birds; while Fritz and Jack mounted to our castle, hoping to meet with the same luck.

One of the dead birds proved to be a sort of thrush, and the other was a very small kind of pigeon, which in the Antilles is called an ortolan: they are very fat, and of a delicious taste. We now observed, for the first time, that the wild figs began to ripen, and that they attracted these birds. I foresaw in consequence, that we were about to have our table furnished with a dish which even a nobleman might envy us. I gave the boys leave to kill as many of them as they liked. I knew that, half roasted and put into barrels with melted

butter thrown over them, they would keep a long time, and might prove an excellent resource. My wife set about stripping off the feathers of the birds, to dress them for our dinner. I seated myself by her side, and proceeded in my work of arrow-making.

Thus finished another day. Supper ended, and prayers said, we ascended the ladder in procession; and each got into his hammock to taste the sweets of a tranquil sleep.

CHAPTER XIII.

CONVERSATION, A WALK, AND IMPORTANT DISCOVERIES.

Jack had finished the trial of his arrows: they flew to admiration; and he practised his new art incessantly. Little Francis waited with impatience for the moment when he should try also, and followed with his eyes every stroke I made; But when I had finished my bow and prepared some little arrows for him, I must next undertake to make him a quiver. I took some bark from the branch of a tree, which came off in a round form; and folding the edges over each other, I stuck them together with some glue produced from our soup cakes. I next stuck on a round piece to serve for the bottom; and then tied to it a loop of string which I hung round his neck. He put his arrows into it; and, quite happy, took his bow in his hand, and ran to try his skill by the side of his brother. Fritz had also cleaned and prepared his materials for the cases, when his mother summoned us to dinner. We cheerfully placed ourselves under the shade of our tree, round the table I had manufactured. At the end of the repast, I made the following proposition to the boys, which I was sure would give them pleasure.

"What think you, my good friends," said I, "of giving a name to the place of our abode, and to the different parts of the country which are known to us? I do not mean a general name to the whole island, but to the objects we are most concerned with: this will make us better understand each other, when conversing about them; and also present to us the soothing illusion of inhabiting a country already known and peopled."

They all exclaimed, joyfully, that the idea was excellent.

Jack.—Oh! pray, father, let us invent some very long names and that are very difficult to be pronounced. I should be glad that those who shall read about us should be a little puzzled to remember the names of places and things that belonged to us. What pains has it not cost me to remember their *Monomotapa*, their *Zanguebar*, their *Coromandel*, and many others still more difficult. Ah! now we shall take our revenge of them.

Father.—This would be well, if it were probable that our history in this country, and the names we shall have bestowed, were likely to be objects of public curiosity; but in the meanwhile you forget that our own organs will be fatigued, by frequently pronouncing such barbarous words as you propose.

Jack.—How shall we manage, then? What pretty names can we find?

Father.—We will do as all sorts of nations have done before us. We will call the places by different words from our own language, that shall express some particular circumstance with which we have been concerned.

Jack.—Well, so we will: I shall like this still better. Where shall we begin?

Father.—We shall naturally begin with the bay by which we entered this country. What shall we call it? What say you, Fritz? You must speak first, for you are the eldest.

Fritz.—Let us call it *Oyster Bay:* you remember what quantities of oysters we found in it.

Jack.—Oh, no! let it rather be called *Lobster Bay:* for you cannot have forgot what a large one it was that caught hold of my leg, and which I carried home to you.

Ernest.—Why then we may as well call it the *Bay of tears;* for you must remember that you blubbered loud enough for all of us to hear you.

My Wife.—My advice would be that, out of gratitude to God, who conducted us hither in safety, we ought to call it *Providence Bay*, or *Bay of Safety.*

Father.—These words are both appropriate and sonorous, and please me extremely. But what name shall we give to the spot where we first set up our tent?

Fritz.—Let us call it simply *Tent-House.*

Father.—That will do very well. And the little islet at the entrance of *Providence Bay* in which we found so many planks and beams that enabled us to make our bridge, how shall it be named?

Ernest.—It may be called *Sea-Gull Island*, or *Shark Island*, for it was here we saw those animals.

Father.—I am for the last of these names, *Shark Island;* for it was the shark that was the cause of the sea-gulls being there; and thus we shall also have a means of commemorating the courage and triumph of Fritz, who killed the monster.

Jack.—For the same reason, we will call the marsh, in which you cut the canes for our arrows, *Flamingo Marsh.*

Father.—Quite right, I think; and the plain, through which we passed on our way to this place, *Porcupine Field*, in memory of your skilful encounter with the animal. But now comes the great question,—What name shall we give to our present abode?

Ernest.—It ought to be called simply *Tree Castle.*

Fritz.—No, no, that will not do at all; that is the same as if, when we wanted to name a town, we called it *The Town.* Let us invent a more noble name.

Jack.—Yes, so we will. I say *Fig Town.*

Fritz.—Ha, ha, ha! a noble name, it must be confessed! Let us call it *The Eagle's Nest*, which I am sure has a much better sound. Besides, our habitation in the trees is really much more like a nest than a town, and the eagle cannot but ennoble it, since he is the kings of birds.

Father.—Will you let me decide the question for you? I think our abode should be called *The Falcon's Nest;* for you are not arrived at the dignity of eagles, but are, too truly, poor simple birds of prey; and like the falcon, you also are, I trust, obedient, docile, active and courageous. Ernest can have no objection to this, for, as he knows, falcons make their nests in large trees. All exclaimed, clapping their hands, "Yes, yes, we will have it *The Falcon's Nest*! the sound is quite chivalrous; so health to *Falcon's Nest Castle*!" cried they, all looking up to the tree, and making low bows. I poured out a small quantity of sweet wine, and presented it to each, to solemnize our baptism.—"Now then," said I, "for the promontory, where Fritz and I in vain wearied our eyes, in search of our companions of the vessel? I think it may properly be called *Cape Disappointment.*"

All.—Yes, this is excellent. And the river with the bridge—

Father.—If you wish to commemorate one of the greatest events of our history, it ought to be called *The Jackal's River*; for these animals crossed it when they came and attacked us, and it was there that one of them was killed. The bridge I should name *Family Bridge*, because we were all employed in

its construction, and all crossed it together in our way to this place. Let me ask you all, if it will be a great pleasure to converse about the country we inhabit, now that we have instituted names as if everything belonged to us?

Ernest.—It will be just as if we had farms and country houses, all dependent upon our castle.

Francis.—It is the same as if we were kings.

My Wife.—And the queen-mother is not without hope that her little slips of majesty will conduct themselves mercifully towards their subjects, the birds, the agoutis, the geese, and the flamingoes; the——What more shall I say? for I do not know the family name of all your vassals. Let me therefore end, by hoping that you will not depopulate your kingdom.

Fritz.—No, mother, we will take care of that. We will endeavor to extirpate only those among our subjects who are wicked.

In this pleasing kind of chat, the time of dinner passed agreeably away. We settled the basis of a geography of this our new country; and amused ourselves with saying, that it must go by the first post to Europe.

As the evening advanced, and the intense heat of the day began to diminish, I invited all my family to take a walk. "Leave your work for this time, my boys," said I, "and let us make a short excursion; let us seek, in the beautiful face of nature, the traces of the wisdom and goodness of the Creator. Which way shall we direct our steps?

Fritz.—Let us go to the Tent house, Father; we are in want of powder and shot for the little consumers of our figs; nor must we miss our dinner for to-morrow, or forget that we are to secure a supply for winter.

My Wife.—I too vote for Tent House; my butter is nearly gone, for Fritz took an unreasonable share for his new trade of tanning; also. I have never failed to observe, that those who most zealously preach a life of frugality and economy, are at least as well satisfied as the rest, when I present them with a savory dinner.

Ernest.—If we go to Tent House let us try to bring away some of the geese and ducks with us; they will look very well swimming about in our stream here, by Falcon's Nest.

Jack.—I will undertake to catch them, if any one will help to bring them home.

Francis.—And I will catch my handkerchief full of lobsters in the Jackall's River, and we will put them into Falcon's Stream, where no doubt, they will thrive to admiration.

Father.—You really all of you assign such good reasons that I see I must yield to them. To Tent House, then we will go; but we will not take our accustomed road along the sea-shore, but rather vary our pleasure, by trying to explore some other way. We will keep along our own little stream as far as the wall of rocks: it will be easy for us to cross it, by jumping from stone to stone, and so to get to Tent House; we will return with our provisions by the road of Family Bridge, and along the sea-shore. This new route may possibly furnish some additional discoveries.

My idea was highly applauded, and all was soon arranged for our setting out. Fritz was adorned with his fine tiger-cat-made belt. Jack had his belt also armed with two pistols, round his waist. Each carried a gun and a game bag; even little Francis had his bow in his hand, and his quiver on his shoulder. Their mother was the only person not burdened with a gun; but she carried her large butter-pot, to fill it at our large storehouse. Turk marched before us, with his coat of mail studded with spikes, but it was apparent that he felt intimidated and ill at ease; his step was therefore slow and quiet.

Our route along the stream was at first extremely agreeable, being sheltered by the shade of large trees, while the ground under our feet was a short and a soft kind of grass. To prolong the pleasure of our walk, we proceeded slowly, amusing ourselves with looking about us to the right and left; the eldest boys made frequent escapes on before, so that we sometimes lost sight of them. In this manner we reached the end of the wood; but the country now appearing to be less open, we thought it would be prudent to bring our whole company together. On looking forward, we saw the boys approaching us full gallop, and this time, for a wonder, the grave Ernest was first. He reached me panting for breath, and so full of joy and eagerness, that he could not pronounce a single word distinctly; but he held out his hand, which contained three little balls of a light green color.

"We have found a prize, indeed, father," cried he at last, when he recovered his voice; "we have found some potato seed!"

"What say you; potato seed?" enquired I joyfully: "have you really been so fortunate? Come near, every one of you, and let me look at your little balls;" for I scarcely dared believe in so happy an event as the discovery of a plant which

would place us forever beyond the reach of hunger, and even of apprehension.

We all hastened to the place where these tubercles had been gathered, and, with extreme joy we found there a large plantation of potato plants; a number of them were covered with their lilac and yellow blossoms, the sight of which conveyed more pleasure to our hearts than if they had been the most fragrant roses. Jack bawled out, jumping for joy. "They are really potatoes! and though it was not I who discovered them, at least it shall be I who will dig them up." Saying this, he knelt down and began to scratch them up from the earth with his hands; the rest of us, unwilling to be idle spectators, set to work also: with our knives and sticks we soon procured a sufficient number to fill our bags and our pockets.

"There are," observed I, "different kinds of vegetables, more succulent and more delicate than the potato; but it is this plain sustenance, that can be eaten for the longest time together, without satiety: accordingly, food of this nature, such as bread, rice, potatoes, obtains on the whole a preference over provisions possessing a higher flavor. Can you tell me, boys, the reason of this?"

Ernest.—I know; it is because they are more wholesome.

Jack.—And because they occasion no disgust: I could eat potatoes every day of my life, without being tired of them.

Father. All you say is true; in future they will serve us for bread, and often indeed for our whole dinner. But let us for the present dismiss the subject of our unexpected good fortune, and resume our expedition.

CHAPTER XIV.

CONTINUATION OF THE PRECEDING CHAPTER; AND MORE DISCOVERIES.

Conversing on different subjects, we reached the long chain of rocks, over which our pretty Falcon Stream made its escape in a cascade, delighting at once the eye and the ear in its progress. We thus reached Jackal's River, and from thence to Tent House, having with difficulty pushed through

the high grass which presented itself. Our fatigue, however, was relieved by the uncommon beauty of the scenery around: on the right hand was a boundless sea; on the left the island, with the bay by which it was accessible, and the chain of rocks, forming altogether an assemblage of the picturesque, equal to what the liveliest fancy could desire.

We distinguished different families of grasses, many of them of the thorn-leaved species, and stronger than those cultivated in the green-houses of Europe. There was also in abundance the Indian fig, with its large broad leaf; aloes of different forms and colors; the superb prickly candle, or cactus, bearing straight stalks, taller than a man, and crowned with long straight branches, forming a sort of star. The broad plantain spread along the rocks its innumerable boughs twisted with each other, hanging down perpendicularly, and ornamented with flowers, which grew in large tufts, and were of the brightest rose-color, while that which pleased us best, and which was found there in great abundance, was the king of fruits, both for figure and relish, the crowned pine-apple, of which we all partook with avidity.

Soon after, I was fortunate enough to discover among the multitude of plants which grew either at the foot or in the clefts of the rock, the karata (the Bromelia Karata of Linnæus,) many of which were now in blossom. Travellers have given so perfect a description of this plant, that it was impossible I should mistake it. I pointed out to the boys the immense size of its leaves, hollowed in the middle like a saucer, in which rain is for a long time preserved; also, its beautiful red flowers. As I was acquainted with the properties of this useful plant, the pith of which is used as tinder by the Negroes, who also make a strong kind of thread from the fibres of its leaves, I was not less satisfied with the discovery than I had been with that of the potatoes. Wishing to exhibit one of its uses to my children, I desired Ernest to take out my flint and steel.

I took a dried stock of the tree, stripped off the bark, and there appeared a kind of dry, spongy substance, which I laid upon the flint; and then striking it with a steel, it instantly caught fire. The boys looked on with astonishment, and soon began to caper about, exclaiming: "Long live the tinder tree!"

"Here, then," said I, "we have an article of greater usefulness than if it served merely to gratify the appetite. Your mother will next inform us what materials she will use for

sewing your clothes when her provision of thread from the enchanted bag is exhausted."

My Wife.—I have long been uneasy upon this subject, and would willingly exchange our greatest luxury for some hemp or flax.

Father.—And your wish shall be accomplished. If you examine, you will find some excellent thread under the leaves of this extraordinary plant, where all-provident nature has placed a storehouse of this valuable article, though the lengths of thread will be found not longer than the leaf. I accordingly drew out of one of the leaves a strong piece of thread of a red color, which I gave to my wife. "How fortunate it is for us," said she, "that you have had the habit of reading and of study! None of us would have a thought about this plant, or have conceived that it could be of any use:—but will it not be difficult to draw out the lengths of thread through the prickles that surround them?"

Father.—Not in the least; we shall put the leaves to dry, either in the sun, or by a gentle fire. The useless part of the leaf will then separate by being beaten, and the mass of thread will remain.

Fritz.—I see clearly, father, that we ought not to trust to appearances; but one may, I suppose, assert that there are no good qualities in the prickly plants, which are growing here in all directions, and wounding the persons who go near them; of what use can they possibly be?

Father.—The greatest part of these possess medicinal virtues; great use is made in pharmacy of the aloe, which produces such abundance of beautiful flowers; in the green-houses in Europe, some have been seen to bear more than three thousand blossoms. At Carlsbad, upon the estates of Count de Limbourg, there was an aloe-tree twenty-six feet in height; it had twenty-eight branches, which branches bore more than three thousand blossoms in the space of a month. At Paris, at Leyden, in Denmark, there have been also seen some exceedingly curious specimens of this tree; many of them are full of a resinous sort of sap, of which valuable gums are made. But look, here, too, is the Indian fig, or prickly pear, a vegetable of no common interest; it grows in the poorest soils, and, as you see, upon the rocks; the poorer the soil, the more luxuriant and succulent its leaves; I should be tempted to believe that it was nourished by the air rather than by the earth. It is also called the racket-tree, from the resemblance of its long, thick, flat leaves to that well-known instrument. The

plant bears a kind of fig, which is said to be sweet and palatable when ripened in its native sun, and it is a salutary and refreshing food. This, then, is another plant of great utility. I next instructed them how to gather this prickly fruit without injury to their fingers. I threw up a stone, and brought down a fig, which I caught upon my hat; I cut off one end, and was thus enabled to hold it on a knife while I peeled off the skin. I then resigned it to the curiosity of my companions.

The novelty, rather than the taste, of the fruit, made them think it excellent; they all found means to gather some of the figs and each was busied in inventing the best method of taking off the skins. In the mean time, I perceived Ernest holding a fig upon the end of his knife, turning it about in all directions, and bringing it close to his eye with a look of curious inquiry.—"I wish I could know," said at length our young observer, "what little animals these are in the fig, which feed so eagerly upon it, and are of a scarlet color."

Father.—Ha, ha! this too will perhaps turn out a new discovery, and an additional source of usefulness. Let me look at your fig; I will wager that it is the insect called the cochineal.

Jack.—The cochineal! what a droll name! What is the cochineal, father?

Father.—It is an insect of the kind called *suckers or kermes.* He feeds upon the Indian fig, which, no doubt, is the cause of his beautiful color, so much esteemed in dyeing; for nothing else produces so fine a scarlet. In America, they stretch pieces of linen under the branches, and then shake the tree; and when the insects have fallen in great numbers, the ends of the linen are folded together to enclose them; the insects are sprinkled with vinegar or cold water, and then dried, and sent to Europe, where a high price is paid for them. But I have not mentioned a still superior usefulness, peculiar to the Indian fig-tree:—what if I should assert that it can be used as a protection to man.

Fritz.—As a protection to man! Why, how can that be, father?

Father.—It is well adapted for enclosing the dwellings of man; for you see, that besides the prickles, there is a large thorn at each of the knots in the stalk, well calculated for repelling the attacks of animals or men. This, then, you see, is a third usefulness the Indian fig-tree can boast, and of which I was not at first aware. You must perceive of what

importance these inclosures are; and the rather, as they are made with so little trouble; for if you plant only one of its leaves in the ground, it immediately takes root, and grows with astonishing rapidity.

Jack, the thoughtless, here cried out, that with the assistance of a knife, or even a stick, it would be easy to get over such a hedge; and he began to cut down with his clasp-knife a pretty large plant, striking to right and left with all his might, till one of the divided leaves fell with such violence on his leg, that the thorns struck into his flesh, and Jack roared out piteously, and quickly sat down to draw them out. I could not, as I assisted him, refrain from laughing a little at his adventure. I observed to him, how difficult it must be for savages, who wear no clothes, to force such a barrier as they formed; and for this once I had the pleasure of convincing him.

Ernest.—Ah, father, do let us make a hedge of these plants round our tree; we shall then have no further occasion for fires to preserve us from wild beasts, or even from the savages, who may arrive in their canoes, as they did on Robinson Crusoe's Island.

Fritz.—And we could, then, easily gather the cochineal, and try to make the same beautiful scarlet color.

Father.—We shall have time enough for many things, my dear children; but for the present, it is sufficient to prove to you, that God has not made anything to be wholly useless; and that it is the duty of man, on whom he has bestowed the gifts of wisdom and intelligence, to employ those faculties in discovering the utility of the different productions he has allowed to exist.

Jack.—For my part I have done with the Indian fig-tree, its fruit, its cochineal, and its ugly thorns, and I will never go near it again.

Father.—If the plant could speak, it would most likely say, That little boy shall not come near me any more. Without any reason, or any necessity, but purely out of contradiction to his father, he attacks and destroys me; me, who would have done him service, if he would but have treated me with kindness, and have been careful in coming near me.—And now Jack, if your leg is still painful, apply a leaf of the karata to it, for I recollect that the plant possesses the property of curing wounds. He accordingly took my advice, and in a few minutes was able to join us on our road to Tent House.

"Now, then," said Ernest, "I have had an opportunity of

learning the valuable properties of the kurata tree, and of the Indian fig-tree; but I wish I could also be informed what those tall plants are which look like sticks covered with thorns, that I perceive everywhere about us; I see neither fruit nor insects on them: of what use, then, father, do you think they can be?"

Father.—It is not in my power to explain to you the uses of all the plants in the world; I presume that many exist which have no other than that of contributing to the sustenance of different kinds of animals; and, as I have already told you, it is for man, by his superior intelligence, to discover those that can be applied to his own use. Many possess medicinal qualities of which I am ignorant, and which will become better known as the world advances in age. The plant you speak of is perhaps the prickly candle, described by Bruce in his *Travels to Abyssinia*, and of which he gives a drawing; the only difference that I perceive being the size. "They serve," says he, "for food to the elephant and the rhinoceros; the first with his strong teeth, or his trunk, and the latter with his horn, lays hold of this seeming stick, and rips it up from one end to the other, they then devour the pith, and sometimes the rind."

Ernest.—The palate of these animals must surely be made of iron, to be able to chew such a thorny substance without injury.

Fritz.—Why so? Camels and asses are very fond of thistles, and appear to digest them extremely well. It is probable, therefore, that the stomach of these animals is so formed, that these prickly substances occasion in it only an agreeable excitation, favorable to their appetite and their digestion.

Father.—Your idea is not a bad one; and if it be not true, it is at least probable.

Fritz.—Will you tell me, father, the precise difference between *true and probable?*

Father.—Your question is one of those which have occupied the attention of philosophers for countless years, and would be too tedious for discussion at this moment; I will, however, endeavor to make my answer such, as to be of use to you, in the science of logic, or the art of reasoning. Let us see if you will understand it.—What we call *true*, is that which cannot in any way be contradicted, and which exactly agrees, in every point, with the idea we conceive of a certain object, or as it really exists before our eyes; for example,

when I make an impression with my seal on some warm wax, it is absolutely *true* that the figure impressed on the wax is the same as that on the seal. A thing is *probable*, when we have a variety of motives for believing it true, without, however, being able to bring any proof. Again, we call *false*, that which is in positive contradiction to all our notions, our reason and our experience. Is it *true, probable,* or *false,* that a man can fly up into the air?

All.—It is false, absolutely false.

Father.—How so?

Jack.—Because the thing is impossible.

Father.—Very well, my young philosopher, and why is the thing impossible?

Jack.—Because it is not possible.

Father.—Ha, ha, ha! there is a pretty round of *possible* and *impossible. It is false because no such thing can be done, and no such thing can be done, because it is not possible.* Presently you will tell me that it is impossible because it is false. Try again, my lads, we must have some better reasons. What say you, Ernest?

Ernest.—I say, that the thing cannot be done, because it is not in the nature of man to fly; that having no wings, he is not formed for flying.

Father.—Well, but if some one should assert, that a man is able to make a machine, by the assistance of which he can raise and support himself in the air without wings, and without the machine resting upon anything; would this be *probable* or *improbable?* What think you Fritz?

Fritz.—I think I should have said *improbable,* if I had not known that people have accomplished what you describe, by the invention of balloons.

Father.—And why should you have thought it *improbable?*

Fritz.—Because man is, in his nature, heavier than the air; and I should have supposed, that a machine of whatever kind, instead of diminishing, would only add to his weight.

Father.—Very well reasoned. But you would be told that this machine is of large dimensions, and composed of a close, light kind of silk, and that it is filled with air chemically prepared which being much lighter than atmospheric air tends perpetually to ascend, and supports the man in the air, as bladders support you upon the water. Do you understand all this, my boy? and what have you to say in answer?

Fritz.—Yes, father, I understand it; and I perceive how it might be probable, that since man has discovered a means to

be sustained upon water, he might also find the means to raise and sustain himself in the air.

Father.—And when a multitude of persons of veracity, and of different ages, shall declare that with their own eyes they saw a balloon, to which a parachute was fastened filled with men, and that all mounted in the air together, and disappeared above the clouds; should you still maintain that it is false that a man can fly.

All.—No, to be sure, we should say that it is quite true that he can fly.

Father.—And yet you all said, but a minute ago, that it was absolutely false.

Fritz.—Ah! but we said that, father, of a man by himself, independently of any machine he might construct; for though nature has refused him wings, she has not failed to bestow on him an inventive mind, which more than compensates for that deficiency.

Father.—Your observation is perfectly just, and I hope you will not fail to profit by it. With the aid of his intelligence, and his reason, there is scarcely anything which man cannot attain to. But to return to our example; you will find in it the definition of the words which you ask me about; it is *false*, that a man of himself can fly; it is *probable*, that by the aid of a machine of his own invention he may be enabled to mount and sustain himself in the air; and it is also *absolutely true*, that this has been effected by man, though without his having yet found a certain means of guiding these factitious wings; a defect which, in a great measure, renders his discovery useless.

At this point of our discourse, we reached Jackal's River, which we crossed, stepping with great care from stone to stone, and shortly arrived at our old habitation, where we found everything as we had left it; and each went in pursuit of what he intended to take away. Fritz loaded himself with powder and shot: I and my wife and Francis employed ourselves in filling our pot with butter, the carrying of which on our return it was agreed was to fall to me. Ernest and Jack looked about for the geese and ducks; but as they were become somewhat savage, the boys could not succeed in catching one of them. The idea then occurred to Ernest, of taking a small bit of cheese, and tying it to the end of a piece of string, and holding it to float in the water. The voracious animals hastened eagerly to seize it. In this way, Ernest drew them towards him, one by one, with the cheese in its mouth,

till he had caught the whole; each bird was then tied in a pocket-handkerchief, leaving the head at liberty, and fastened one to each game-bag, so that all had a share in carrying them.

We had a thought of taking back a provision of salt; but the sacks being occupied with potatoes, we could only throw a small quantity loose into one of them, to lie between the potatoes; in this way we secured a tolerable supply.

We now set out loaded on our return. The ducks and geese, with their heads and necks stretching out at our shoulders, cackling with all their might, gave us a truly singular and ludicrous appearance, and we could not help laughing immoderately as we passed the bridge, one after another, accoutred in so strange a fashion. Our mutual jokes, and the general good-humor which prevailed, served to shorten the length of the walk, and none complained of fatigue, till seated under our tree at Falcon's Stream. My wife now prepared to console us, by putting some of the potatoes which we so eagerly desired to taste, immediately on the fire. She next milked the cow and the goat, and gave us a draught of their warm milk. The kind creature, fatigued at least as much as any of us, made no attempt to rest herself, till she had provided us with all she had to give for our refreshment. Having dined heartily on our potatoes, we concluded the day with evening prayers, and then joyfully climbed our ladder to seek the blessing of repose in our aerial castle.

CHAPTER XV.

HOPES OF A SLEDGE.—SOME SHORT LESSONS IN USEFUL THINGS.

I had observed along the shore many pieces of wood, of which I thought I could make a kind of conveyance for our cask of butter and other provisions from Tent House to Falcon's Stream, and had secretly determined to go early the next morning, before my family should be awake, to the spot. I had fixed upon Ernest for my assistant, thinking that his indolent temper required to be stimulated to exertion. I made him feel as a great favor the preference I gave him, and he promised to be ready at a very early hour. I was also

desirous to leave Fritz with the family, as being the tallest and strongest, he was more able to afford protection.

At the first dawn of morning I quietly awoke Ernest. He got up, and we descended the ladder without being perceived by the rest, who continued to sleep soundly. We roused the ass, and I made him draw some large branches of a tree, which I wanted for my undertaking.

We were not long in finding the pieces of wood, and set to work to cut them the proper length, and we then laid them cross-ways on the branches, which we thus converted into a kind of vehicle. We added to the load a little chest, which we found half buried in the sands, quite close to the waves, and then we set out on our return to Falcon's Stream. When we reached our abode, the chest we had brought was soon opened by a strong hatchet, for all were eager to see what was within. It contained only some sailors' dresses and some linen: and both were wet with the sea.

We then sat down tranquilly to breakfast; and I next inspected the booty of the young sportsmen, who had shot, in all, no less than fifty ortolans and thrushes, and had used so large a quantity of powder and shot, that when they were about to resume their sport, my wife and I stopped them, recommending a more frugal use of those valuable materials. I taught them how to make some snares, to be suspended from the branches of the fig-tree, and advised them to use the thread of the karata, which is as strong as horse-hair, for the purpose. What is new always amuses young persons, and the boys accordingly took a great fancy to this mode of sporting. Jack succeeded in his very first attempt: I left Francis to assist him, and took Fritz and Ernest to help me in making the new carriage.

As we were hard at work, a prodigious clatter was heard among the fowls; the cock crowed louder than the rest, and the hens ran to and fro, as if pursued. "I wonder what is the matter with the creatures," cried my wife, rising; "every day I hear the hens cackling as if they had been laying eggs." At this moment Ernest happened to look at the monkey, and remarked that he fixed his piercing eyes on the hens; and when he saw my wife approaching, driving the hens before her, he jumped quickly into a hollow place under one of the roots of the tree and hid himself. Ernest was at the place as soon as he, and caught him with a new laid egg in his paw, which he was going to conceal. The monkey sprang away to another hole, and Ernest followed, here also he found some

eggs, and brought them in his hat to his mother, who received them with great pleasure. The monkey, greedy of such food, had seized the eggs as soon as the hens had laid them. We inflicted no other punishment upon him for this little piece of knavery, than that of tying him up when the hens were about to lay. My wife expressed her joy at this new acquisition, and soon collected a great number of eggs, and we waited with impatience for the time when the hens would sit, in the hope of seeing their species multiplied.

In the meanwhile, Jack had got up into the tree, and had suspended some of the snares to the branches, to catch the little devourers of our figs; he came down again to bring us the acceptable intelligence, that our pigeons had made a sort of nest there of some dry grass, and that it already contained several eggs. I therefore forbade the boys from firing any more in the tree, for fear of alarming or wounding these gentle creatures. I also directed that the snares should be frequently examined, to see that the pigeons were not caught in them, as they might be strangled in their efforts to get loose My sons had all murmured a little at my prohibition of the gunpowder; and little Francis with his innocent face came running to tell me, that he was going to ask his brother to help him to sow some gunpowder, that they might have plenty. We all laughed heartily at the idea, and Professor Ernest did not overlook the occasion to display his science.

During these arrangements, the boys and I had been busily employed: our work was completed. Two bent pieces of wood, the segments of a circle, which I fixed in their places by a straight piece of wood placed across, and firmly fixed to the bent pieces in the middle, and at the rear, formed the outline of my machine. I then fastened two ropes in front, and here was a sledge as perfect as could be desired. As I had not raised my eyes from my work, I did not know what my wife and the two youngest boys had been about. On looking up, I perceived that they had been stripping off the feathers from a quantity of birds which the boys had killed, and that they afterwards spitted them on an officer's sword, which Fritz had fancied and brought from the ship, and which my wife had turned into this useful kitchen utensil. I approved of the idea; but I blamed her profusion, in dressing more birds at once than we could eat. She reminded me, that I had myself advised her to half roast the birds before putting them into the butter, to be preserved for future use. She was in hopes, she said, that as I had now a sledge, I

should not fail of going to Tent-House after dinner, to fetch the cask of butter, and in the meanwhile, she was endeavoring to be ready with the birds. I had no objection to this, and determined on going to Tent-House the same day, requesting my wife to hasten the dinner for that purpose. She replied, that this was already her intention, as she also had a little project in her head, which I should be informed of at my return. I, for my part, had one too, which was to refresh myself after the heat and fatigue of my laborious occupations, by a plunge into the sea. I wished that Ernest, who was to accompany me, should bathe also; while Fritz was to remain at home for the protection of the family.

CHAPTER XVI.

A BATHING, A FISHING, THE JUMPING HARE, AND A MASQUERADE.

At the moment of departure, Fritz presented his brother and myself with a case of his own workmanship, which we stuck into our belts, and which, in reality, were well contrived for holding spoons, and knives and forks, while room was left in the middle for a little hatchet. I praised Fritz for having thus brought his idea to perfection, and for contriving to make two cases with his skin instead of one.

We had harnessed the ass and the cow to our sledge; we each took a piece of bamboo-cane in hand, to serve as a whip; and resting our guns upon our shoulders, began our journey. Flora was to accompany us, and Turk to remain behind. We bade adieu to our companions, and put our animals in motion. We took the road by the sea-shore, where the sands afforded better travelling for our vehicle, than the thick wild grass. We reached Family Bridge, on Jackal's River, and arrived at Tent-House without either obstacle or adventure, and unharnessed the animals to let them graze, while we set to work to load the sledge with the cask of butter, the cask of cheese, a small barrel of gunpowder, different instruments, some ball, and some shot. These exertions had so occupied our thoughts, that it was late when we first observed that our animals, attracted by the excellent quality of the grass on the other side of the river, had repassed the bridge, and wandered so far as

to be out of sight. I was in hopes they would be easily found, and directed Ernest to go with Flora and bring them back, intending in the meantime, to look for a convenient place, on the other side of Tent-House, to bathe in. In a short time I found myself at the extremity of Providence Bay, which ended, as I now perceived in a marsh, producing some fine bulrushes; and further on, a chain of steep rocks, advancing somewhat into the sea, and forming a kind of creek, as if expressly contrived for bathing. The jutting of the rock even seemed like little cabinets, for separate accommodation. Enchanted with this discovery, I called out to Ernest to come and join me, and in the mean time amused myself with cutting some of the rushes, and imagining what use I could apply them to.

I desired him to fill a small bag with some of the salt he had formerly observed here, and then to empty it into the large one for the ass to carry; and to take care to fill equally on each side. "During this time, I will take the refreshment of bathing; and then it will be your turn to bathe, and mine to take care of the animals."

I returned to the rocks, and was not disappointed in my expectation of an enjoyment the most delicious; but I did not stay long, fearing my boy might be impatient for his share of so new a pleasure. When I had dressed myself, I returned to the place to see if his work had advanced: presently I heard his voice calling out, "Father, father, a fish! a fish of monstrous size! Run quickly, father, I can hardly hold him! he is eating up the string of my line!" I ran to the place from which the voice proceeded, and found Ernest lying along the ground on his face, upon the extremity of a point of land, and pulling in his line, to which a large fish was hanging, and struggling to get loose. I ran hastily and snatched the rod out of his hand, for I feared the weight and activity of the fish might pull him into the water. I gave the line length, to calm the fish, and then contrived to draw him gently along, into a shallow, from which he could no longer escape, and thus he was effectually secured. We examined him thoroughly, and he appeared to weigh not less than fifteen pounds; so that our capture was magnificent and would afford the greatest pleasure to our good steward of provisions at Falcon's Stream. "You have now really labored," said I to Ernest, "not only with your head, but with your whole body; and I would advise you to wipe the perspiration from your face, and keep a little quiet before you venture into the

water. You have procured us a dish of great excellence, which will last for several days, and have conducted yourself like a true cavalier, *without fear and without reproach.*"

"It was at least fortunate," observed he in a modest tone, "that I thought of bringing my fishing rod."

Father.—Certainly it was. But tell me how you came to see this large fish, and what made you think you could catch it?

Ernest.—I used to remark great quantities of fish in the water, just hereabout, and this made me determine to bring my fishing tackle with me. In my way to the salt, I perceived a great number of little crabs, upon which fishes feed, near the water's brink; I thought I would try to bait my hook with one of them; so I hastened my work, and came to this spot, where I caught only a dozen little fish, which are there in my handkerchief; but I remarked that they were chased in the water by fishes of larger size. This gave me the idea of baiting my hook with one of the small ones; but the hook was too small, and my rod too weak. I then took one of the finest of the bulrushes you had just gathered, and put a larger hook to my line, and in a short time the large fish you see there seized upon the bait, and paid his life for his voracity. However, I must confess, that if you had not come to my assistance, I must either have let go my line, or have been dragged into the waters, for the fish was stronger than I.

We now examined the smaller fishes, which were mostly trout and herrings, while I felt certain that the large one was a salmon. I cut them all open, and rubbed them in the inside with salt, that they might not be injured by the heat. While I was thus employed, Ernest went to the rocks and bathed, and I had time to fill some more bags with salt before his return. We then harnessed and loaded our animals, and then resumed the road to Falcon's Stream.

When we had proceeded about half way, Flora, who was before us, suddenly sprang off, and by her barking gave notice that she scented some game. We soon after saw her pursuing an animal, which seemed endeavoring to escape, and made the most extraordinary jumps imaginable. The dog continued to follow; the creature, in trying to avoid him, passed within gunshot of the place where I stood. I fired, but its flight was so rapid, that I did not hit. Ernest, who was at a small distance behind, hearing the report of my gun, prepared his own, and fired it off at the instant the singular animal was passing near him, seeking to hide itself among

the tall herbage just by: he had fired so skillfully, that the animal feel dead the same instant. I ran with extreme curiosity to ascertain what kind of quadruped it might be. It was as large as a sheep, with the tail resembling that of a tiger; both its snout and hair were like those of a mouse, and its teeth were like a hare's, but much larger; the fore-legs resembled those of the squirrel, and were extremely short; but to make up for this its hind legs were as long as a pair of stilts, and of a form strikingly singular. We examined the creature a long time in silence; I could not be sure that I had ever seen an engraving or description of it in any natural history, or book of travels. Ernest at length, clapping his hands together, joyously exclaimed, "And have I really killed this wonderful animal? What will my mother and my brothers say? How astonished they will be! and how fortunate I am in securing so fine a prize! What do you think is its name, father? I would give all the world to know."

Father.—And so would I, my boy; but I am as ignorant as you. One thing, however, is certain, that this is your lucky day. Let us again examine this interesting stranger, that we may be certain to what family of quadrupeds it belongs: this will perhaps throw a light upon its name.

Ernest.—I think it can hardly be named a quadruped; for the little fore-legs look much more like hands, as is the case with monkeys.

Father.—They are notwithstanding legs, I can assure you. Let us look for its name among the animals who give suck; on this point we cannot be mistaken. Now let us examine its teeth.

Ernest.—Here are the four incisory teeth, like the squirrel

Father.—Thus we see that it belongs to the order of Nibblers. Now let us look for some names of animals of this kind.

Ernest.—Besides squirrels, I recollect only mice, marmots, hares, beavers, porcupines and jumpers.

Father.—Jumpers! That short word furnishes the necessary clue; the animal is completely formed like the gerboa or jumping hare, except that is twice the size of those of which I have read a description. * * * * * Wait a moment—an idea strikes me: I will wager that our animal is one of the large jumpers, called kangaroo; it belongs properly to the genus *Didelphis* or *Philander;* because the female, who never bears more than one young one, carries it in a kind of purse placed between her hind legs. To the best of my knowledge,

this animal has never been seen but on the coast of New Holland, where it was first observed by the celebrated navigator Captain Cook. You may then be highly flattered with your adventure of killing an animal at once so rare and so remarkable. But now let us see how we will manage to drag him to the sledge. Ernest requested that I would rather assist him to carry it, as he was afraid of spoiling its beautiful mouse-colored skin by dragging it on the ground. I therefore tied the fore-legs of the kangaroo together; and, by means of two canes, we with considerable trouble contrived to carry it to the sledge, upon which it was securely fastened.

Having now nothing more to detain us, we continued our road towards Falcon's Stream, conversing on the subject of natural history, and on the necessity of studying it in our youth, that we might learn to class plants and animals according to their characteristic marks; and we observed, that to such a knowledge as this it was owing that we had recognized the kangaroo. Ernest entreated me to tell him all I knew about the animal. "It is," said I, "a most singular kind of creature. Its fore-legs, as you see, have scarcely the third part of the length of the hind ones, and the most it can do, is to make them serve the purpose of walking; but the hind legs enable it to make prodigious jumps the same as in the flea and the grasshopper. The food of the kangaroo consists of herbs and roots, which they dig up very skillfully with their fore-legs. They place themselves upon their hind legs, which are doubled under them, as if on a chair, and by this means are able to look above even the tall kinds of grass; they rest too upon their tail, which is exceeding strong, and is also of great use to them in jumping, by assisting the spring from the ground. It is said that the kangaroo, if deprived of its tail, would scarcely be able to jump at all."

We at length arrived happily, though somewhat late, at Falcon's Stream, having heard from a great distance the salutations of our family. Our companions all ran to meet us: but it was now, on seeing the ludricous style of the dress of the three boys, our turn for immoderate fits of laughter: one had on a sailor's shirt, which trained round him like the robe of a spectre; another was buried in a pair of pantaloons, which were fastened round his neck and reached to the ground; and the third had a long waistcoat, which came done to the instep, and gave him the exact form of a travelling portmanteau. They all tried to jump about, but finding this impossible, from the length of their garments, they next resolved

to carry off the whole with an air, by strutting slowly to and fro, in the manner of a great personage in a theatre. After some hearty laughing, I inquired of my wife what could be the cause of this masquerade, and whether she had assisted them in attempting to act a comedy for our amusement. She disclosed the mystery by informing me, that her three boys had also been bathing, and that, while thus engaged, she had washed all their clothes; but as they had not dried as soon as she had expected, her little rioters had become impatient, and had fallen on the chest of sailor's clothes, and each had taken from it what article he had pleased. "I preferred," said she, "that you should see them in this odd sort of disguise, rather than quite naked, like little savages;" in which opinion I assured her that I heartily joined her.

It was now our turn to give an account of our journey. As we advanced in our narrative, we presented one after another, casks, bulrushes, salt, fish, and lastly, with infinite triumph, our beautiful kangaroo. In a trice it was surrounded, examined and admired by all, and such a variety of questions asked, that Ernest and I scarcely knew which to answer first. Fritz was the only one who was a little silent. I saw plainly by his countenance what was passing in his mind. He was jealous of the good fortune of his brother Ernest; but I also saw that he was struggling manfully against the ascendancy of so mean a passion. In a short time he had succeeded so completely, that he joined frankly and unaffectedly in our conversation and merriment. He came near the kangaroo, and examined it; then turning to his brother, he observed to him in a kind tone, that he had had good luck, and that he must be a good shot to have killed the animal with so little difficulty. —"But, father," said he, "when you go again to Tent-House, or on any other excursion, will it not be my turn to accompany you? For here at Falcon's Stream there is nothing new to amuse us; a few thrushes and some pigeons, this is all we have from day to day, and I find it very tiresome."

"I promise you cheerfully what you desire, my dear boy," said I, "for you have valiantly combated the jealousy and ill-humor which assailed you on witnessing your brother's success with the kangaroo. I therefore engage that you shall accompany me in my very next excursion, which will probably take place at no greater distance of time than to-morrow; and it will be another journey to the vessel. But in the meantime, let me observe to you, that the high opinion I have shown of your prudence and judgment, in leaving you here

in charge of your mother and your brothers, ought to be felt by you as more flattering than the applause you would have gained by killing a kangaroo. You have accomplished an important duty; in keeping near them all the time, and not suffering yourself to be allured by such amusements as presented themselves to your fancy; and this conduct has increased my affection and respect for you. Praise is also due to Ernest, for the moderation with which he has felt his triumph, in so extraordinary an occurrence; for he has not even told you of my humiliating failure in attempting to shoot the kargaroo. To triumph over our passions, and to have on all occasions a perfect government of our temper, is an acquisition of infinitely more value, than in showing a certain skill in firing off a gun, and happening to kill an animal. In our situation, we are forced upon the cultivation of such arts as these; but though we may practise them as necessary for our existence, we have no reason to be proud of them."

We concluded the day with our ordinary occupations and gave some salt to each of our animals, to whom it was an acceptable treat. We then skinned our kangaroo, and put it carefully aside till the next day, when we intended to cut it to pieces, and lay such parts in salt as we could not immediately consume. We made an excellent supper on our little fish, to which we added some potatoes; nor were our faithful companions Turk and Flora neglected. The labors of the day had more than usually disposed us all to seek repose; we therefore said our prayers at an early hour, mounted our ladder, and were soon asleep.

CHAPTER XVII.

MORE STORES FROM THE WRECK.

I rose with the first crowing of the cock, descended the ladder, and set about skinning the kangaroo, taking care not to deface its beautiful smooth coat. Our dogs relished their meal on the entrails of the animal so much, that they intended themselves the pleasure of a breakfast on the carcass. Before I could descend they had got off its head, as it hung by the

hind feet, and, half friends, half foes, they were going to share their prize when I made my appearance. Recollecting our want of the means of protection against similar depredations I thought it right to give them a slight correction for their fault. My wife, awaked by the growling they made as they slunk away to the hollow of a tree, was alarmed, and came down the ladder to see what was the matter; and now I had to perform the further task of appeasing her kind heart for what she called a cruel act, "Kind-hearted creature," said I, "well I know how glad you would be if there were not a stick in the world! But I did not beat Turk and Flora through anger or revenge, but from prudence and precaution: they intended modestly to eat up our kangaroo, which you promised yourself such pleasure in cooking; and unable as I was to acquaint them in the canine tongue, that it was not placed there for their use, it was proper to let them know this in such a way as to deter them in future; otherwise, as they are strongest, they would end by devouring all our stock."

My wife owned I was in the right: but I observed her from the corner of my eye hovering about the hollow tree, and patting the dogs to console them. I now set about stripping my kangaroo, without injuring the skin; but I advanced so slowly in the business, that my family were assembled about us, and calling out Famine! before I had finished my work. Having at last completed it, I went to the river to wash myself thoroughly, and then to the sailors chest to change my coat, that I might appear with decency at breakfast, and give my sons an example of that cleanliness which their mother was so eager to inculcate. Breakfast over, I ordered Fritz to get ready for Tent House, where we should prepare the boat, and proceed to the vessel.

After taking an affectionate leave of my wife, we began our journey. I left Flora with her, and entreated her not to be uneasy, and to commit herself to the care of the kind Providence who had till then so graciously watched over us, and who would again bring us back to her safe and sound, enriched with many things conducive to our welfare. But to bring her to reason on the subject of these trips to the vessel was impracticable: I left her bathed in tears, and praying God that this might be the last.

We took Ernest and Jack a little way with us, and then I sent them back with a message to their mother, which I had not the resolution to deliver myself—that we might be forced to pass the night on board the vessel, and not return till the even-

ing of the following day. It was most essential to get out of it, if yet afloat, all that could be saved, as a moment might complete its destruction. I instructed my sons how they should soothe their mother; I exhorted them to obey and to assist her; and that their excursion might not be useless, I directed them to gather some salt, and enjoined them to be at Falcon's Stream before noon.

We got into the boat, and gaining the current, quickly cleared Safety Bay, and reached the vessel, whose open side offered us an ample space to get on board. When we had fastened our boat, our first care was to select fit materials to construct a raft, as suggested by my son Ernest. Our boat of staves had neither room nor solidity enough to carry a considerable burden; we therefore looked about, and found a sufficient number of water-casks which appeared to me proper for my new enterprise. We emptied them, replaced the bungs carefully, and threw the casks overboard, after securing them with ropes and cramps, so as to keep them together at the vessel's side: this completed, we placed a sufficient number of planks upon them to form a firm and commodious platform or deck, to which we added a gunwale of a foot in depth all round, to secure the lading. Thus we contrived a handsome raft, in which we could stow thrice as much as in our boat. This laborious task had taken up the whole day; we scarcely allowed ourselves a minute to eat some cold meat we had provided that we might not lose any time in looking for the provisions on board the vessel. In the evening Fritz and I were so weary that it would have been impossible for us to row back to land; so having taken all due precautions in case of a storm we lay down in the captain's cabin, on a good elastic mattress which induced such sound repose, that our prudent design to watch in turn for fear of accident was forgot, and we both slept heavily, side by side, till broad daylight opened our eyes. We rose, and actively set to work to load our raft.

We began with stripping the cabin of its doors and windows, with their appendages; next we secured the carpenter's and gunner's chests, containing all their tools and implements; those we could remove with levers and rollers were put entire upon the raft, and we took out of the others what rendered them too heavy. One of the captain's chests was filled with costly articles, which no doubt he meant to dispose of to the opulent planters of Port Jackson, or among the savages. In the collection were several gold and silver watches, snuff-boxes of all descriptions, buckles, shirt-buttons, neck-

laces, rings, in short, an abundance of all the trifles of European luxury. But the discovery that delighted me most, was a chest containing some dozens of young plants of every species of European fruits, which had been carefully packed in moss for transportation. I perceived pear, plum, almond, apple, apricot, chestnut trees, and vine shoots. I beheld with a feeling I cannot describe, those productions of my dear country, which once so agreeably embellished my rural dwelling, and which I might hope, would thrive in a foreign soil. We discovered a number of bars of iron, and large pigs of lead, grinding-stones, cart wheels ready for mounting, a complete set of farrier's instruments, tongs, shovels, ploughshares, rolls of iron and copper wire, sacks full of maize, peas, oats, vetches, and even a little hand-mill. The vessel had been freighted with everything likely to be useful in an infant colony so distant. We found a saw-mill, in a separated state, but each piece numbered, and so accurately fitted, that nothing was easier than to put it together for use.

I had now to consider what of all these treasures I should take or leave. It was impossible to carry with us in one trip such a quantity of goods; and to leave them in the vessel, was exposing ourselves to be wholly deprived of them.

We with difficulty and hard labor finished our loading, having added a large finishing-net, quite new, and the vessel's great compass. With the net, Fritz found two harpoons and a rope-windlass, such as they use in the whale-fishery. He asked me to let him place the harpoons, tied to the end of the rope, over the bow of our tub-boat, and thus be in readiness in case of seeing any large fish; and I indulged him in his fancy.

Having completely executed our undertaking, we stepped into the tub-boat, and with some small difficulty, which a little reflection and a few experiments soon enabled us to overcome we pushed out for the current, drawing our raft triumphantly after us with a stout rope, which we had been careful to fasten securely at its head.

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE TORTOISE HARNESSED.

The wind was favorable, and briskly swelled our sail. The sea was calm, and we advanced at a considerable rate. Fritz had for some time fixed his eyes on something of a large size, which was floating on the water, and he now desired me to take the glass, and see what it could be. I soon perceived that it was a tortoise, which had fallen asleep in the sun on the surface of the water. No sooner had Fritz learned this, than he entreated me to steer softly within view of so extraordinary a creature. I readily consented; but as his back was towards me, and the sail between us, I did not observe his motions, till a violent jerk of the boat, a sudden turning of the windlass, and then a second jerk, accompanied by a rapid motion of the boat, gave me the necessary explanation. "For heaven's sake, what are you about, Fritz?" exclaimed I, somewhat alarmed.

——"I have caught him!—I touched him!" cried Fritz, without hearing one word I had been saying. "The tortoise is ours: it cannot escape, father! Is not this, then, a valuable prize, for it will furnish dinners for us all for many weeks?"

I soon perceived that the harpoon had caught the animal, which, feeling itself wounded, thus agitated the vessel in its endeavors to get away. I quickly pulled down the sail, and seizing a hatchet, sprung to the boat's head to cut the rope, and let the harpoon and the tortoise go; but Fritz caught hold of my arm, conjuring me to wait a moment, and not so hastily bring upon him the mortification of losing at one stroke, the harpoon, the rope, and the tortoise: he proposed watching himself, with the hatchet in his hand, to cut the rope suddenly, should any sign of danger appear; and I yielded to his entreaties.

Thus, then, drawn along by the tortoise, we proceeded with a hazardous rapidity. I soon observed that the creature was making for the sea; I therefore again hoisted the sail: and as the wind was to the land, and very brisk, the tortoise found resistance of no avail: he accordingly fell into the track of the current, and drew us straight towards our usual place of landing, and by good fortune without striking upon any of the rocks. We, however, did not disembark without one dif-

ficult adventure. The state of the tide was such as to throw us upon a sand bank: we were at this time within a gunshot of the shore; the boat, though driven with violence, remained upright in the sand. I stepped into the water, which did not reach far above my knees, for the purpose of conferring upon our conductor his just reward for the alarm he had caused us, when he suddenly gave a plunge, and then disappeared. Following the rope, I presently saw the tortoise stretched at length at the bottom of the water, where it was so shallow that I soon found means to put an end to his pain, by cutting off his head with the hatchet, and he bled to death. Being now near Tent-House, Fritz gave a halloo, and fired a gun, to apprise our relatives that we were not only arrived but arrived in triumph. This soon produced the desired effect: the mother and her three young ones soon appeared, running towards us; upon which Fritz jumped out of the boat, placed the head of our sea-prize on the muzzle of his gun, and walked to shore, which I reached at the same moment; and all were once more received with the kindest salutations, and such questions as kindness best knows how to propose.

After some gentle reproaches from my wife, for leaving her and the boy for so long a time, the history of the tortoise was related, and excited much merriment in our auditors. The tender-hearted mother, after heaving a sigh for the hard fate of the creature, began to shudder at the thought of the danger we had been exposed to, and the escape we had effected.

Our conversation ended, I requested my wife to go with two of the younger boys to Falcon's Stream, and fetch the sledge and the beasts of burden, that we might see at least a part of our booty from the ship put safely under shelter the same evening. A tempest, or even the tide, might sweep away the whole during the night! We took every precaution in our power against the latter danger; by fixing the boat and the raft, now, at the time of its reflux, as securely as we could without an anchor. I rolled two prodigious masses of lead, with the assistance of levers, from the raft upon the shore, and then tied a rope to each, the other ends of which were fastened, one to the raft, and the other to the boat, and thus satisfied myself that they could not easily be forced away.

While we were employed in this scheme, the sledge arrived, and we placed the tortoise upon it, and also some other articles of light weight, mattresses, pieces of linen, &c.; for I reckoned that the animal itself weighed at least three quintals.

The strength of our whole party was found necessary to move it from the raft to the sledge; we therefore all set out together to unload it again at Falcon's Stream.

Our first concern on reaching our abode, was the tortoise, which we immediately turned upon his back, that we might strip off the shell, and make use of some of the flesh while it was fresh. Taking my hatchet, I separated the upper and under shell all round, which were joined together by cartilages. The upper shell of the tortoise is extremely convex; the under on the contrary, is nearly flat. I cut away as much of the flesh of the animal as was sufficient for a meal, and laid the rest carefully on the under shell, which served as a dish, recommending to my wife to cook what I had cut off, on the other shell, with no other seasoning than a little salt. and pledged myself that she would produce a luxurious dish. "We will then," said I, "rub salt on what we mean to keep, and distribute the head, entrails, and feet to the dogs; for all, you know, must live."

"Oh dear papa," cried Francis, "do give me the shell, it will be such a pretty plaything!"

"No, no," bawled out another; and one and all contended for the preference. I imposed silence, declaring that the right was entirely in Fritz; "but" continued I, "it may be well to ask what each of you thought of doing with the shell, if he had obtained it?"

Ernest.—I should turn it into a shield to defend myself with, if the savages should come upon us.

Father.—Ah, there is my egotist again; but let us see in what way you would use it. You would fling it across your shoulders, no doubt, and take to your heels manfully. I have guessed right, my poor Ernest, have I not? And you, Jack, what have you to say?

Jack.—I should make a nice little boat of it, which would help to amuse us all. I was thinking how cleverly we could fill it with potatoes, or the other things we want to take from Tent-House to Falcon's Nest; it would glide along so nicely with the stream and we should be saved all the fatigue we now have in carrying them.

Father.—Your scheme, I grant, is not ill-imagined; but a small raft, or an old chest, would do just as well for your purpose. And now for my little Francis; I wonder what pretty plan he had thought of?

Francis.—I thought I should build a little house, papa, and the shell would make such a nice roof to it!

Father.—Vastly well, my lads, if we had only our amusement or our ease to think of; but I want you all to form the habit of thinking and acting for the general good, rather than that of what will most gratify or accommodate his single self. Now, then let me ask, to what use Fritz, the only rightful claimant to the shell, had intended to apply it?

Fritz.—I thought, father, of cleaning it thoroughly, and fixing it by the side of our river, and keeping it always full of pure water for my mother's use, when she has to wash the linen, or cook our victuals.

Father.—Excellent, excellent, my boy! all honor to the founder of the *pure water-tub!* This is what I call *thinking for the general good.* And we will take care to execute the idea as soon as we can prepare some clay, as a solid foundation for its bottom.

Jack.—Ha, ha! Now then it is my turn; for I have got some clay, which I have put by to keep for use, behind those old roots yonder.

Father.—And where did you get it, boy?

Mother.—Oh, you may apply to me for this part of the information; to my cost I know where the clay was got. This morning early, my young hero falls to digging and scrambling on the hill you see to the right, and home he comes with the news, that he has found a bed of clay; but in so dirty a condition himself, that we were obliged to think next of the washing-tub.

Jack.—And if I had minded a little dirt, mother, I should not have discovered this bed of clay, which you will see will be of great use to us. As I was returning from looking for potatoes, I thought I would take the high path along the river, just to see how rapidly it runs and forms these nice cascades; by and by I came to a large slope, watered by the river; it was so slippery, that I could not keep upon my legs; so I fell, and dirtied myself all over; on looking, I saw that the ground was all of clay, and almost liquid, so I made some of it into balls, and brought them home.

Ernest.—When the water-tub is complete, I will put some roots I have found to soak a little in it, for they are now extremely dry. I do not exactly know what they are; they look something like the radish, or horseradish, but the plant from which I took them was almost the size of a bush: being ignorant, however, of its name or nature, I have not yet ventured to taste the roots, though I saw our sow eat heartily of them.

Father.—If my suspicion is right, you have made a beneficial discovery, which with the assistance of our potatoes, may furnish us the means of existence as long as we may remain in this island! I think your roots are *manioc*, of which the natives of the West Indies make a sort of bread or cake which they call *cassave*. But we must first carry the production through a certain preparation, without which it possesses pernicious properties. Try to find the same place, and bring a sufficient quantity for our experiment.

We had finished unloading the sledge, and I bade the three eldest boys accompany me to fetch another load before it should be dark. We left Francis and his mother busy in preparing a refreshing meal for supper, the tortoise having presented itself most opportunely for this purpose.

Having reached the raft, we took from it as many effects as the sledge could hold, or the animals draw along. One object of my attention was to secure two chests which contained the clothes of my family which I well knew would afford the highest gratification to my wife, who had frequently lamented that they were all compelled to wear clothes that were not their own; reminding her at every moment, she said, how much they might be wanted by their proper claimants. I reckoned also on finding in one of the chests some books on interesting subjects, and principally a large handsomely printed Bible. I added to these, four cart-wheels and a hand mill for grinding; which, now that we had discovered the manioc, I considered of signal importance. These and a few other articles completed our present load.

On our return to Falcon's Nest, we found my wife looking anxiously for our arrival, and ready with the welcome she had promised, of an ample and agreeable repast. Before she had well examined our new stores, she drew me, with one of her sweetest smiles, by the arm. "Step this way," said she, and leading to the shade of a tree, "this is the work I performed in your absence," pointing to a large cask half sunk in the ground, and the rest covered over with branches of trees. She then applied a small cork-screw to the side, and filling the shell of a cocoa-nut with the contents, presented it to me. I found the liquor equal to the best canary I had ever tasted. "How then," said I, "have you performed this new miracle? I cannot believe the enchanted bag produced it." "Not exactly," replied she; "for this time it was an obliging white wave which threw it on shore. I took a little ramble in your absence yesterday, to see what I

could find, and well my trouble was rewarded! The boys ran for the sledge, and had but little difficulty in getting the cask to Falcon's Stream, where we dug this place in the earth to keep it cool."

My wife now proposed that all should be regaled with some of the delicious beverage. My own share so invigorated me, that I found myself able to complete my day's work, by drawing up the mattresses we had brought from the ship, to our chamber in the tree, by means of a pulley. When I had laid them along to advantage, they looked so inviting, that I could scarcely resist my desire of at once committing myself to the kind relief they seemed to offer to my exhausted strength.

But now the savory smell of the tortoise laid claim to my attention. I hastened down, and we all partook heartily of the luxurious treat. We returned thanks to God, and speedily retired to taste the blessing of sound repose upon the said mattresses.

CHAPTER XIX.

ANOTHER TRIP TO THE WRECK.

I rose before day to go to the sea-side and inspect our two vessels. I gently descended the ladder without awakening my family. Above, the scene was all repose: below everything was in life and motion. The dogs jumped about me, the cock and the hens flapped their wings and chuckled, and our goats shook their long beards as they browsed. I quickly roused and harnessed the ass, and the dogs followed without bidding. As I approached the shore, animated at different moments by hope and fear, I soon saw that the boat and raft had resisted the tide, though it had partially heaved them up. I got quickly on the raft, took a small loading, and returned to Falcon's Stream in time for breakfast; but not a single creature of its inhabitants appeared, though the sun was high above the horizon. I gave a shout as loud as a war-hoop, which awoke my wife. "Really, my dear," said she, "there must be a magic charm in the mattress you brought yesterday, that has lulled us into so sound a sleep." "Up, my lads," exclaimed I, once again; "the more we ven-

ture to parley with sloth, the longer she holds us in her chains; brave youths like you ought to awake at the first call, and leap quick and gayly out of bed. Fritz, a little ashamed, was dressed first; Jack soon after him, and Francis next; the ever slothful Ernest was the last. "It is so delightful," cried he, "to lose oneself again after having been awakened! one feels sleep come on afresh so gently." "But it is my duty to tell you, Ernest, and that gravely, that he who indulges himself in all that flatters his senses, will end by falling a victim to them."

After this short admonition, we all came down; and breakfast over, we returned to the sea-side to complete the unloading of the raft, that it might be ready for sea on the ebbing of the tide. We were not long in taking two cargoes to Falcon's Stream. At our last trip the water was nearly up to our raft. I sent back my wife and the boys, and remained with Fritz till we we were quite afloat; when observing Jack still loitering near, I guessed at his wish, and consented to his embarking with us. Shortly after the tide was high enough for us to row off. Instead of steering for Safety Bay to moor our vessels there securely, I was tempted by a fresh sea-breeze to go out again to the wreck, but it was too late to undertake much, and I was unwilling to cause my dear partner uneasiness by passing another night on board. I therefore determined to bring away only what could be obtained with ease and speed: we searched hastily through the ship for any trifling articles that might be readily removed. Jack was up and down everywhere, at a loss what to select; and when I saw him again, he drew a wheelbarrow after him, shouting that he had found a vehicle for carrying our potatoes.

But Fritz next disclosed still better news, which was, that he had discovered behind the bulkhead amidship, a pinnace (*i.e.* a small craft, the forepart of which is square) taken to pieces, with all its appurtenances, and even two small guns for its defence. The intelligence, so delighted me, that I quitted every thing else to run to the bulkhead, when I was convinced of the truth of the lad's assertion: but I instantly perceived, that to put it together, and launch it, would be an Herculean task. I collected various utensils, a copper boiler, some plates of iron, tobacco-graters, two grinding-stones, a small barrel of gunpowder, and another full of flints, which I much valued. Jack's barrow was not forgotten; two more were afterwards found and added, with straps belonging to

them. All these articles were hurried into the boat, and we re-embarked with speed, to avoid the land wind that rises in the evening. As we were drawing near to shore, we were struck with the appearance of an assemblage of small figures ranging in a long line on the strand, that seemed to be viewing us attentively: they were dressed in black, and all uniform, with white waistcoats and full cravats; the arms of these beings hung down carelessly; now and then, however, they seemed to extend them tenderly, as if they wished to embrace or offer us a token of friendship.

"I really think," said I to the boys, who were steadfastly gazing at them, "that we are in the country of the pygmies, and that they wish to form a friendly alliance with us.

Jack.—Oh, no! father they are certainly Lilliputians, though somewhat bigger than those of whom I read the description in Gulliver's Travels.

"You then, child," said I, "consider those travels as true; that there is an island of Lilliput, and inhabited by dwarfs?"

Jack.—Gulliver says so. He met also with men of an immense stature, besides an island inhabited by horses——

"And yet I must tell you that the only reality in all his discoveries is the rich imagination of the author, whose taste and feeling led him to resort to allegory for the purpose of revealing grand truths. Do you know, Jack, what an allegory is?"

"It somewhat resembles a parable, I presume."

"Right, one is very similar to the other."

Jack.—And the pygmies you mentioned, are any to be found?

"No more than there are Lilliputians; they exist only in poetical fiction, or in the erroneous account of some ancient navigators, in which a group of monkeys has been fallaciously described as diminutive men."

Fritz.—Such probable as the manikins that we see now stretching out their arms towards us.—Ah, now I begin to perceive that they have beaks, and that their arms are short drooping wings;—what strange birds!

"You are right, son, they are penguins or ruffs. Ernest killed one soon after our arrival. They are excellent swimmers, but cannot fly; and so confused are they when on land, that they run in the silliest way into danger."

While we were talking I steered gently towards the shore, to enjoy the uncommon sight the longer; but the very moment we got into shallow water, my giddy Jack leaped up to

his waist into it, and was quickly on land, battering with the stick among the penguins before they were aware of his approach, so that half a dozen of them were immediately laid flat; the remainder, seeing they were so roughly accosted, plunged into the sea, dived, and disappeared.

As the sun declined, and we despaired of finishing before night set in, each of us filled a barrow, in order to take home something. I requested that the tobacco-graters and iron plates might be in the first load.

Arrived at Falcon's Stream, my wife exhibited a good store of potatoes which she had got in during our absence, and a quantity of the roots I had taken for manioc, and in which I was not mistaken; I much applauded her diligence and foresight, and gave Ernest and little Francis their share of approbation.

"But now," said I, "for some supper and repose; and if my little workmen should be industriously inclined to-morrow, I shall reward them with the novelty of a new trade to be learned." This did not fail to excite the curiosity of all; but I kept my word, and made them wait till the following day for the explanation I had to give.

I waked the boys very early, reminding them that I had promised to teach them a new trade. "What is it? What is it?" exclaimed they all at once, springing suddenly out of bed and hurrying on their clothes.

Father.—It is the art of the baker, my boys. Hand me those iron plates that we brought yesterday from the vessel, and the tobacco-graters also, and we will make our experiment. Ernest, bring hither the roots found under ground; but first, my dear, I must request you to make me a small bag of a piece of strong wrapper cloth.

My wife set instantly to work to oblige me; but having no great confidence in my talents for making either bread or cakes, she first filled a copper boiler with potatoes, and put it on the fire, that we might not be without something to eat at dinner time, in the meanwhile I spread a piece of coarse linen on the ground, and assembled my young ones around me; I gave each of the boys a grater, and showed him at the same time how to rest it on the linen, and then to grate the roots of manioc; in a short time each had produced a considerable heap of a substance somewhat resembling pollard. The occupation, as is always the case with novelties, was amusing to them all, and they looked no further into the matter: one showed the other his heap, saying in a bantering tone: "Will you eat a bit of nice cake made of grated radishes?"

I now informed them that the manioc was known to be the principal sustenance of the whole nations of the Continent of America, and which the Europeans who inhabit those countries prefer to even our wheaten bread. I added "there are many kinds of manioc: one of these shoots rapidly, and its roots become mature in a short time: a second sort is of more tardy growth; and there is another, the roots of which require the space of two years to be fit for use. The first two kinds have pernicious or unwholesome qualities when eaten raw, but the third may be eaten without fear: for all this the two first are generally preferred, as being more productive, and requiring a shorter time for being fit for use."

By this time my wife had completed the bag. I had it well filled with what we called our pollard, and she closed it securely by sewing up the end. I was now to contrive a kind of press: I cut a long, straight, stout branch, from a neighboring tree, and stripped it of the bark; I then placed a plank across the table we had fixed between the arched roots of our tree, and which was exactly the right height for my purpose, and on this I laid the bag; I put other planks again upon the bag, and then covered all with the large branches, the thickest extremity of which I inserted under an arch, while on the other, which projected beyond the planks, I suspended all sorts of heavy substances, such as lead, our largest hammers and bars of iron, which, acting with great force as a press on the bag of manioc, caused the sap it contained to issue in streams, which flowed plentifully on the ground.

Fritz.—This machine of yours, father, though simple, is as effectual as can be desired.

Father.—Certainly. It is the simplest lever that the art of mechanism can furnish, and may be made extremely useful.

Ernest.—I thought levers were never used but for raising heavy masses, such as blocks of stone, and things of that degree of weight; I had no notion that they were ever used for pressing.

Father.—But you see that the point at which the lever rests on the planks must always be the point of rest or compression, the point at which its extremity touches the roots of the tree would no doubt be that of the raising power, if the root was not too strong to yield to the point of the lever; but then the resistance at the point of compression or rest is still stronger, and presses effectually, as you see, the contents of the bag. The Negroes, however, have another manner of proceeding, but it would have been much too tedious in the process for us

to imitate. They make tresses of the bark of a tree, and with it form a basket of tolerable size; they fill it with manioc, and press it so tightly, that the baskets become shorter, and increase in breadth; they then hang the baskets to the strongest branches of the trees, and fasten large stones to them, which draw the baskets again lengthways; by which action upon the manioc the sap runs out at the openings left by the tresses.

Mother.—Can one make no use of this sap?

Father.—Certainly we may: the same Negroes use it as food after mixing with it some pepper; and when they procure them, some sea-crabs.

Fritz.—Father, it no longer runs a single drop; may we not now set about making the dough?

Father.—I have no objection; but as there are some poisonous kinds of manioc, it will be prudent to make only a small cake at first, by way of experiment, which we will give to the monkey and the fowls, and wait to see the effect instead of exhausting our whole store at once.

We now opened the bag, and took out a small quantity of the pollard, which already was dry enough; we stirred the rest about with a stick, and then replaced it under the press. The next thing was to fix one of our iron plates, which was of a round form, and a little hollow, so as to rest upon two blocks of stone at a distance from each other; under this we lighted a large fire, and when the iron plate was completely heated, we placed a portion of the dough upon it with a wooden spade. As soon as the cake began to be brown underneath, it was turned, that the other side might be baked also.

Ernest.—O how nicely it smells! what a pity that we may not eat some of it immediately?

Father.—I believe you might safely venture, but it is perhaps better to wait till the evening, and run no greater risk than the loss of one or two of our fowls or of the monkey; and we may say this trial of the cake will be the first service he has rendered us.

As soon as the cake was cold, we broke some of it into crumbs, and gave it to two of the fowls, and a larger piece to the monkey, who nibbled it with a perfect relish, making all the time a thousand grimaces, while the boys stood on envying the preference he enjoyed.

Fritz.—Now tell me, father, how the savages manage to grate their manioc, for surely they have not, like us, an instrument fitted for the operation;—and tell me also, if they

call their composition by the name of cake or bread, as we do?

Father.—The savages having no such article as bread in their bill of fare, have consequently no word in their language to express it. At the Antilles, the bread from the manioc is called *cassare;* the savages make a kind of grater with sharp stones, or shells; or when they can get nails, on which they set a high value, they drive them into the end of a plank, and rub the manioc upon it. But now, I pray you, good wife, give us quickly our potato dinner, and we will afterwards resume the baking trade.

The first thing after dinner was to visit our fowls. Those which had eaten the manioc were in excellent condition, and no less so the monkey.—"Now then to the bakehouse, young ones," said I, "as fast as you can scamper."—The grated manioc was soon emptied out of the bag, a large fire was quickly lighted, and I placed the boys where a flat surface had been prepared for them, and gave to each a plate of iron and the quantity of a cocoa-nut full to make a cake apiece, and they were to try who could succeed the best. They were ranged in a half circle round me, that they might observe how I proceeded, and adopt the same method for themselves. The result was not discouraging for a first experiment, though it must be confessed we were now and then so unlucky as to burn a cake; but there was not a greater number of these than served to feed the pigeons and the fowls, which hovered round to claim their share of the treat. My little rogues could not resist the pleasure of frequently tasting their cake, a little bit at a time, as they went on. At length the undertaking was complete; the cakes were put in a dish, and served, in company with a handsome share of milk, to each person; and with this addition they furnished us with an excellent repast: what remained we distributed among our animals and fowls.

The rest of the day was employed by the boys in making several turns with their wheelbarrows, and by myself in different arrangements in which the ass and our raft had a principal share, both being employed in drawing to Tent-House the remaining articles we had brought from the ship. When all was done we retired to rest, having first made another meal on our cakes, and concluded all with pious thanks to God for the blessings his goodness thought fit to bestow upon us.

CHAPTER XX.

THE CRACKER AND THE PINNACE.

From the time of discovering the pinnace, my desire of returning to the vessel grew every moment more irresistible; but one thing I saw was absolutely necessary, which was, to collect all my hands to get her out from the situation where we had found her. I therefore thought of taking with me the three boys. I even wished that my wife should accompany us; but she had been seized with such a horror of the perfidious element, as she called it, the sea, that she assured me the very attempt would make her ill and useless. I had some difficulty to prevail upon her to let so many as three of the children go; she made me promise to return the same evening, and on no account to pass another night on board the wreck; and to this I was, though with regret, obliged to consent.

After breakfast then, we prepared for setting out. The boys were gay and on the alert, in the expectation of the pleasure that awaited them, particularly Ernest, who had not yet made a single voyage with us to the vessel. We took with us an ample provision of boiled potatoes and cassave; and in addition, arms and weapons of every kind. We reached Safety Bay without any remarkable event: here we thought it prudent to put on our cork jackets; we then scattered some food for the geese and ducks which had taken up their abode there, and soon after stepped gayly into our tub-raft, at the same time fastening the new boat by a rope to her stern, so that she could be drawn along. We put out for the current, though not without considerable fear of finding that the wreck had disappeared. We soon, however, perceived that it still remained firm between the rocks. Having got on board, all repaired, on the wings of curiosity and ardor, to that part of the vessel called the bulkhead, which contained the enviable prize, the pinnace. On further observation, it appeared to me that the plan we had formed was subject to at least two alarming difficulties; the one was the situation of the pinnace in the ship; and the other was the size and weight it would necessarily acquire when put together. The enclosure which contained the pinnace was in the interior of the ship, and timbers of prodigious bulk and weight separated it from the breach, and in this part of the deck there was not sufficient

space for us to put the pinnace together, or to give her room when done. The breach also was too narrow and too irregular to admit of her being launched from this place, as we had done with our tub-raft. In short, the separate pieces of the pinnace were too heavy for the possibility of our removing them even with the assistance of our united strength. What therefore was to be done? and how could we meet such formidable difficulties. I stood on the spot absorbed in reflection, while the boys were running from place to place, conveying everything portable they could find, on board the raft.

The cabinet which contained the pinnace was lighted by several small fissures in the timbers, which after standing in the place a few minutes to accustom the eye, enabled one to see sufficiently to distinguish objects. I discovered, with pleasure, that all the pieces of which she was composed were so accurately arranged and numbered, that without too much presumption, I might flatter myself with the hope of being able effectually to collect and put them together, if I could be allowed the necessary time, and could procure a convenient place. I therefore, in spite of every disadvantage, decided on the undertaking; and we immediately set about it. We proceeded at first so slowly as to have produced discouragement, if the desire of possessing so admirable a little vessel, quite new, perfectly safe, easy to conduct, and which might at some future day be the means of our deliverance, had not at every moment inspired us with new strength and ardor.

Evening, however, was fast approaching, and we had made but small progress; we were obliged to think of our promise to my wife; and though with reluctance, we left our occupation and re-embarked. On reaching Safety Bay, we found there our kind steward and little Francis; they had been, during the day, employed in arrangements for our living at Tent-House as long as we should have occasion to continue the excursions to the vessel: this she did to shorten the length of the voyage, and that we might be always in sight of each other. In return for her kindness, I made the best display I could of two casks of salted butter, three of flour, some small bags of millet seed and of rice, and some other articles of utility and comfort for our establishment; and the whole was removed to our store-house at the rocks.

We passed an entire week in this arduous undertaking of the pinnace. I embarked every morning with my three sons, and returned every evening, and never without some small

addition to our stores. We were now so accustomed to this manner of proceeding, that my wife bade us good-by without concern, and we, on our parts, left Tent-House without anxiety; she even had the courage to go several times, with no companion but her little Francis, to Falcon's Stream, to feed and take care of the poultry, and to bring back potatoes for our use. As night successively returned, we had a thousand interesting things to tell each other, and the pleasure of being together was much increased by these short separations.

At length the pinnace was completed, and in a condition to be launched: the question now was, how to manage this remaining difficulty. She was an elegant little vessel, perfect in every part: she had a small neat deck; and her mast and sails were no less exact and perfect than those of a little brig. It was probable she would sail well, from the lightness of her construction, and in consequence drawing but little water. We had pitched and towed all the seams, that nothing might be wanting for her complete appearance: we had even taken the pains of further embellishing, by mounting her with two small cannon of about a pound weight, and, in imitation of larger vessels, had fastened them to the deck with chains. But in spite of the delight we felt in contemplating a work, as it were, of our own industry, the great difficulty still remained: the said commodious, charming little vessel, still stood fast enclosed within four walls; nor could I conceive of a means of getting her out. To effect a passage through the outer side of the vessel, by means of our united industry in the use of all the utensils we had secured, seemed to present a prospect of exertions beyond the reach of man, even if not attended with dangers the most alarming. We examined if it might be practicable to cut away all intervening timbers, to which, from the nature of the breach, we had easier access; but should we even succeed in this attempt, the upper timbers being, in consequence of the inclined position of the ship, on a level with the water, our labor would be unavailing: besides, we had neither strength nor time for such a proceeding; from one moment to another, a storm might arise and ingulf the ship, timbers, pinnace, ourselves, and all. Despairing then, of being able to find a means consistent with the sober rules of art, my impatient fancy inspired the thought of a project, which could not however be tried without hazards and dangers of a tremendous nature.

I had found on board a strong iron mortar, such as is used

in kitchens. I took a thick oak plank, and nailed to different parts of it some large iron hooks: with a knife I cut a groove along the middle of the plank. I sent the boys to fetch some match-wood from the hold, and I cut a piece sufficiently long to continue burning at least two hours. I placed this train in the groove of my plank: I filled the mortar with gunpowder and then laid the plank, thus furnished, upon it, having previously pitched the mortar all around; and, lastly, I made the whole fast to the spot with strong chains, crossed by means of the hooks in every direction. Thus I accomplished a sort of cracker, from which I expected to effect a happy conclusion. I hung this machine of mischief to the side of the bulkhead next the sea, having taken previous care to choose a spot in which its action could not effect the pinnace. When the whole was arranged, I set fire to the match, the end of which projected far enough beyond the plank to allow us sufficient time to escape. I now hurried on board the raft, into which I had previously sent the boys before applying a light to the match; and who, though they had assisted in forming the cracker, had no suspicion of the use for which it was intended, and believing all the while it concealed some subject of amusement for their next trip to the vessel. I confess I had purposely avoided giving them the true explanation, from the fear of the entire failure of my project, or that the vessel, pinnace, and all that it contained might in consequence be blown up in a moment. I had naturally, therefore, some reluctance to announce myself before the time as the author of so many disasters.

On our arrival at Tent-House, I immediately put the raft in a certain order, that she might be in readiness to return speedily to the wreck, when the noise produced by the cracker should have informed me that my scheme had taken effect. We set busily to work in emptying her; and during the occupation, our ears were assailed with the noise of an explosion of such violence, that my wife and the boys, who were ignorant of the cause, were so dreadfully alarmed as instantly to abandon their employment. "What can it be? what is the matter? what can have happened?" cried all at once. "It must be cannon. It is perhaps the captain and the ship's company who have found their way hither! or can it be some vessel in distress? Can we go to its relief?"

Mother.—The sound comes in the direction of the wreck; perhaps she has blown up. From the bottom of her heart she made this suggestion, for she desired nothing more earn-

estly than that the vessel should be annihilated, and thus an end be put to our repeated visits.

Father.—If this is the case, said I, we had better return immediately, and convince ourselves of the fact! Who will be of the party?

"I, I, I," cried the boys; and the three young rogues lost not a moment in jumping into their tubs, whither I soon followed them after having whispered a few words to my wife, somewhat tending to explain, but still more to tranquillize her mind during the trip we had engaged in.

We rowed out of the bay with more rapidity than on any former occasion; curiosity gave strength to our arms. When the vessel was in sight, I observed with pleasure that no change had taken place in the part of her which faced Tent-House, and that no sign of smoke appeared: we advanced, therefore, in excellent spirits; but instead of rowing, as usual, straight to the breach, we proceeded round to the side, on the inside of which we had placed the cracker. The horrible scene of devastation we had caused now broke upon our sight. The greater part of the ship's side was shivered to pieces; innumerable splinters covered the surface of the water; the whole exhibited a scene of terrible destruction, in the midst of which presented itself our elegant pinnace, entirely free from injury! I could not refrain from the liveliest exclamations of joy, which excited the surprise of the boys, who had felt the disposition such a spectacle naturally inspired, of being dejected. They fixed their eyes upon me with the utmost astonishment. "Now then she is ours!" cried I, "the elegant little pinnace is ours! for nothing is now more easy than to launch her. Come, boys, jump upon her deck, and let us see how quickly we can get her down upon the water.

Fritz.—Ah! now I understand you, father, you have yourself blown up the side of the ship with that machine you contrived in our last visit, that we might be able to get out the pinnace; but how does it happen that so much of the ship is blown away?

Father.—I will explain all this to you when I have convinced myself that the pinnace is not injured, and that there is no danger of any of the fire remaining on board; let us well examine. We entered by the new breach, and had soon reason to be satisfied that the pinnace had wholly escaped from injury, and that the fire was entirely extinguished. The mortar, however, and pieces of the chain, had been driven

forcibly into the opposite side of the enclosure. Having now every reason to be satisfied and tranquil, I explained to the boys the nature of a cracker, the manner of its operation, and the important service for which I was indebted to the old mortar.

I then examined the breach we had thus effected, and next the pinnace. I perceived that it would be easy, with the help of the crow and the lever, to lower her into the water. In putting her together, I had used the precaution of placing her keel on rollers, that we might not experience the same difficulty as we had formerly done in launching our tub-raft. Before letting her go, however, I fastened the end of a long thick rope to her head, and the other end to the most solid part of the wreck, for fear of her being carried out too far. We put our whole ingenuity and strength to this undertaking, and soon enjoyed the pleasure of seeing our pretty pinnace descend gracefully into the sea; the rope keeping her sufficiently near, and enabling us to draw her close to the spot where I was loading the tub-boat, and where, for that purpose, I had lodged a pully on a projecting beam, from which I was enabled also to advance with the completing of the necessary masts and sails for our new barge. I endeavored to recollect minutely all the information I had ever possessed on the art of equipping a vessel; and our pinnace was shortly in a condition to set sail.

On this occasion, a spirit of military affairs was awakened in the minds of my young group, which was never after extinguished. We were masters of a vessel mounted with two cannon, and furnished amply with guns and pistols! This was at once to be invincible, and in a condition for resisting and destroying the largest fleet the savages could bring upon us! In the height of exultation, it was even almost wished they might assail us! For my own part, I answered their young enthusiasm with pious prayers that we might ever escape such a calamity as the being compelled to use our firearms. Night surprised us before we had finished our work, and we accordingly prepared for our return to Tent-House, after drawing the pinnace close under the vessel's side. We arrived in safety, and took great care, as had been previously agreed on, not to mention our new and invaluable booty to the good mother, till we could surprise her with the sight of it in a state of entire completeness. In answer, therefore, to her inquiries as to the noise she heard, we told her that a barrel of gunpowder had taken fire and had shivered to pieces a small part of the ship.

Two whole days more were spent in completely equipping and loading the beautiful little barge we had now secured. When she was ready for sailing, I found it impossible to resist the earnest importunity of the boys, who, as a recompense for the industry and discretion they had employed, claimed my permission to salute their mother, on their approach to Tent-House, with two discharges of cannon. These accordingly were loaded, and the two youngest placed themselves, with a lighted match in hand, close to the touch-holes, to be in readiness. Fritz stood at the mast, to manage the ropes and cables, while I took my station at the rudder. These matters being adjusted, we put off with sensations of lively joy, which was demonstrated by loud huzzas, and suitable gesticulation. The wind was favorable, and so brisk, that we glided with the rapidity of a bird along the mirror of the waters; and while my young ones were transported with pleasure by the velocity of the motion, I could not myself refrain from shuddering at the thought of some possible disaster.

Our old friend the tub-raft had been deeply loaded, and fastened to the pinnace, and it now followed as an accompanying boat to a superior vessel. We took down our large sail as soon as we found ourselves at the entrance of Safety Bay, to have the greater command in steering the pinnace; and soon the smaller ones were lowered one by one, that we might the more securely avoid being thrown with violence upon the rocks so prevalent along the coast: thus, proceeding at a slower rate we had great facilities for managing the important affair of the discharge of the cannon. Arrived within a certain distance. "*Fire!*" cried Commander Fritz. The rocks behind Tent-House returned the sound. "*Fire!*" said Fritz again. Ernest and Jack obeyed, and the echoes again majestically replied. Fritz at the same moment had discharged his two pistols, and all joined instantly in three loud huzzas.

"Welcome! welcome! dear ones!" was the answer from the anxious mother, almost breathless with astonishment and joy.

"Welcome!" cried also little Francis, with his feeble voice, as he stood clinging to her side, and not well knowing whether he was to be sad or merry! We now tried to push to shore with our oars in a particular direction, that we might have the protection of a projecting mass of rocks, and my wife and little Francis hastened to the spot to receive us; "Ah, dear deceitful ones!" cried she, throwing herself upon my neck, and heartily embracing me, "what a fright have you, and your cannon, and your little ship, thrown me into! I saw it

advancing rapidly towards us, and was unable to conceive from whence it could come, or what it might have on board: I stole with Francis behind the rocks, and when I heard the firing, I was near sinking to the ground with terror; If I had not the moment after heard your voices, God knows where we should have run to—but come, the cruel moment is now over, and thanks to heaven, I have you once again in safety. But tell me where you got so unhoped-for a prize as this neat charming little vessel. In good truth, it would almost tempt me once more to venture on a sea-voyage, especially if she would promise to convey us back to our dear country! I foresee of what use she will be to us, and for her sake I think that I must try to forgive the many sins of absence you have committed against me."

Fritz now invited his mother to get on board, and gave her his assistance. When they had all stepped upon the deck, they entreated for permission to salute, by again discharging the cannon, and at the same moment to confer on the pinnace the name of their mother—*The Elizabeth.*

My wife was particularly gratified by these our late adventures; she applauded our skill and perseverance: "but do not," said she, "imagine that I bestow so much commendation without the hope of some return in kind: on the contrary, it is now my turn to claim from you, for myself and little Francis, the same sort of agreeable recompense; for we have not, I assure you, remained idle while the rest were so actively employed for the common benefit. No, not so; little Francis and his mother found means to be doing something also, though not this moment prepared to furnish such unquestionable proofs as you, by your salutations of cannon, &c.; but wait a little, good friends, and our proofs shall hereafter be apparent in some dishes of excellent vegetables which we shall be able to regale you with. It depends to say the truth, only on yourselves, dear ones, to go with me and see what we have done."

We did not hesitate to comply, and jumped briskly out of the pinnace for the purpose. Taking her little coadjutor Francis by the hand, she led the way, and we followed in the gayest mood imaginable. She conducted us up an ascent of one of our rocks, and stopping at the spot where the cascade is formed from Jackal's River, she displayed to our astonished eyes a handsome kitchen-garden, laid out properly in beds and walks, and, as she told us, everywhere sowed with the seed of useful plants.

"This," said she, "is the pretty exploit we have been engaged in, if you will kindly think so of it. In this spot the earth is so light, being principally composed of decayed leaves, that Francis and I had no difficulty in working in it, and then dividing it into different compartments: one for potatoes, one for manioc, and other smaller shares for lettuces of various kinds, not forgetting to leave a due proportion to receive some plants of the sugar-cane. You, dear husband, and Fritz, will easily find means to conduct sufficient water hither from the cascade, by means of pipes of bamboo, to keep the whole in health and vigor; and we shall have a double source of pleasure from the general prosperity; for both the eye and the palate will be gratified. But you have not yet seen all; there, on the slope of the rock, I have transplanted some plants of the ananas. Between these I have sowed some melon seeds, which cannot fail to succeed, thus securely sheltered and in so warm a soil; here is a plot allotted to peas and beans, and this other for all sorts of cabbage. Round each bed or plot I have sowed seeds of maize, on account of its tall and bushy form, to serve as a border, which at the same time will protect my young plants from the scorching heat of the sun."

I stood transported, in the midst of so perfect an exhibition of the kind zeal and persevering industry of this most amiable of women! I could only exclaim, that I should never have believed in the possibility of such a labor in so short a time, and particularly with so much privacy as to leave me wholly unsuspicious of the existence of such a project.

Mother.—To confess the truth, I scarcely myself expected to succeed, so I resolved to be silent, to avoid being put to the blush for my presumption. But as I found my little calculations answer better than I expected, I was encouraged, and the hope of surprising you so agreeably gave me new strength and activity. I, however, was not without my suspicions that your daily visits to the wreck were connected with some great mystery, which at a certain time you would unfold.—So mystery for mystery, thought I: and thus, my love, it has turned out. Though acting in different directions, one only object has been our mutual aim—the substantial good of our beloved companions of the desert!

After a few jocose remarks, with which we closed this conversation, we moved towards Tent-House. This was one of our happiest days; for we were all satisfied with ourselves and with each other; we had conferred and received benefits;

and I led my children to observe the goodness of Providence, who renders even labor a source of enjoyment, and makes our own happiness result from that of the objects of our affection, and our pride to arise from the commendations of which those objects may be deserving.

"I had almost forgot, though," said my wife, after a short pause, "one little reproach I had to make to you: your trips to the vessel have made you neglect the bundle of precious fruit-saplings we laid together in mould at Falcon's Stream; I fear they by this time must be dying for want of planting, though I took care to water and cover them with branches. Let us go, my love, and see about them."

I readily consented, as many other matters required our presence at Falcon's Stream. We had now in possession the greater part of the cargo of the vessel; but almost the whole of the treasures were at present in the open air, and liable to injury from both sun and rain.

My wife prepared with alertness for our walk. We hastened to unload the boat, and to place the cargo safely under shelter along with our other stores.

The pinnace was anchored on the shore, and fastened with a rope, by her head, to a stake. When all our stores were thus disposed of, we began our journey to Falcon's Stream, but not empty-handed; we took with us everything that seemed to be absolutely wanted for comfort; and when brought together, it was really so much, that both ourselves and our beasts of burden had no easy task to perform.

CHAPTER XXI.

GYMNASTIC EXERCISES; VARIOUS DISCOVERIES; SINGULAR ANIMALS, &C.

I recommended to my sons to resume the exercise of the shooting of arrows; for I had an extreme solicitude about their preserving and increasing their bodily strength and agility. Nothing tends more to the extinction of personal courage in a human being, than the consciousness of wanting that strength of limb, or that address which may be necessary to aid us in defending ourselves, or in escaping from

dangers. On this occasion, I added the exercises of running, jumping, getting up trees, both by means of climbing by the trunk, or by a suspended rope, as sailors are obliged to do to get to the mast-head. We began at first by making knots in the rope, at a foot distance from each other; then we reduced the number of knots, and before we left off we contrived to succeed without any. I next taught them an exercise of a different nature, which was to be effected by means of two balls made of lead, fastened one to each end of a string about a fathom in length. While I was preparing this machinery, all eyes were fixed upon me —"What can it be intended for?" cried one: "How can we use it?" asked another: "Will it soon be ready?" continued a third.

"I am endeavoring," said I, "to imitate the arms used by a valiant nation, remarkable for their skill in the chase, and whom you all must have heard of: I mean the Patagonians, inhabitants of the most southern point of America; but, instead of balls, which they are not able to procure, they tie two heavy stones, one at each end of a cord, but considerably longer than the one I am working with: every Patagonian is armed with this simple instrument, which they use with singular dexterity. If they desire to kill or wound an emeny, or an animal, they fling one of the ends of this cord at him, and begin instantly to draw it back by the other, which they keep carefully in their hand, to be ready for another throw if necessary: but if they wish to take an animal alive, and without hurting it, they possess the singular art of throwing it in such a way as to make it run several times round the neck of the prey, occasioning a perplexing tightness; they then throw the second stone, and with so certain an aim, that they scarcely ever miss their object: the operation of the second is, the so twisting itself about the animal as to impede his progress, even though he were at a full gallop. The stones continue turning, carrying with them the cord; the poor animal is at length so entangled, that he can neither advance nor retire, and thus falls a prey to the enemy."

This description was heard with much interest by the boys, who now all entreated I would that instant try the effect of my own instrument upon a small trunk of a tree which we saw at a certain distance. My throws entirely succeeded; and the string with the balls at the end so completely surrounded the tree, that the skill of the Patagonian huntsmen required no further illustration. Each of the boys must then needs have a similar instrument; and in a short time Fritz

became quite expert in the art, as indeed he was in every kind of exercise that required strength or address: he was not only the most alert of my children, but being the eldest, his muscles were more formed, and his intelligence was more developed, than could yet be expected in the other three.

The next morning, as I was dressing, I remarked from my window in the tree, that the sea was violently agitated, and the waves swelled with the wind. I rejoiced to find myself in safety in my home, and that the day had not been destined for out-of-door occupation. I observed then to my wife, that I should not leave her the whole day, and therefore was ready to execute anything she found wanting in our domestic arrangement. We now fell to a more minute examination than I had hitherto had time for, of all our various possessions at Falcon's Stream. She showed me many things she had herself found means to add to them during my repeated absences from home: among these was a pair of young pigeons which had been lately beginning to try their wings, while their mother was again sitting on her eggs. From these we passed to the fruit trees we had laid in earth to be planted, and which were in real need of our assistance. I immediately set myself to prevent so important an injury. I had promised the boys the evening before, to go all together to the wood of gourds, to provide ourselves with vessels of different sizes to keep our provisions in: they were enchanted with the idea, but I bargained that they must first assist me to plant all the young trees; which was no sooner said than set about.

When we had finished, the evening was too far advanced for so long a walk. By sunrise the next morning all were on foot; for nothing can exceed the alertness of young persons who act in expectation of a pleasurable change of scene. The ass, harnessed to the sledge, played the principal character: his office was to carry our dinners, a bottle of Canary wine, and some powder and shot, and to bring home our service of empty gourds. Turk, according to custom, led the way as our advanced guard: next followed the three eldest boys, equipped for sporting: after them, the tender mother, leading the little one: and Flora brought up the rear, with the monkey on her back, to which the boys had given the name of Knips. On this occasion I took with me a double-barrelled gun, loaded on the one side with shot for game, and on the other with ball, in case of meeting with an enemy.

In this manner we set out, full of good-humor and high spirits, from Falcon's Stream. Turning round Flamingo Marsh, we soon reached the pleasant spot which before had so delighted us. Fritz took a direction a little further from the sea-shore; and sending Turk into the tall grass, he followed himself, and both disappeared. Soon, eager for sport, we heard Turk barking loud; a large bird sprung up, and almost at the same moment a shot from Fritz brought it down: but though wounded it was not killed; it raised itself, and got off with incredible swiftness, not by flying but by running. Turk followed, and seizing the bird, held it fast till Fritz came up. Now a different scene succeeded from that which took place at the capture of the flamingo. The legs of that bird are long and weak, and it is able to make but a poor resistance. The present captive was large in size, and strong; it struck the dogs, or whoever was near, with its legs, with so much force, that Fritz, who had received a blow or two, dared not again approach the enemy. Fortunately I reached the spot in time to give assistance, and was pleased to see that it was a female bustard of the largest size. I had long wished to possess and to tame a bird of this species for our poultry-yard, though I foresaw that it would be somewhat difficult.

To secure the bird without injuring it, I drew my pocket handkerchief over the head of the bustard; it could not disengage itself, and its efforts only served to entangle it the more. As it could not now see me, I got near enough to pass a string with a running knot over its legs, which, for the present, I drew tight, to prevent further mischief from such powerful weapons. I gently released its wing from Turk's mouth, and tied it, with its fellow, close to the bird's body. In short, the bustard was our own! and that in a condition to promise its preservation when we should once have conveyed it to Falcon's Stream, and could administer care and kindness to compensate for the rough treatment it had experienced at our hands.

We removed the prisoner to the spot where our companions had been waiting our return. Ernest and Jack ran briskly forward, bawling out, "Oh, what a handsome bird! And what a size! What beautiful feathers!" "I think it is a female bustard," said Ernest. "And you are right," answered I: "its flesh is excellent, having something of the flavor of the turkey, to which it also in some other respects has resemblance. Let us endeavor to tame and preserve it by all means.

We have gained for our poultry-yard a bird of rare value on account of its size, which will, it may be hoped, attract its mate, and thus furnish us with a brood of its species."

I now fixed the bustard on a sledge, in a posture the most favorable to its ease. As we advanced on our way, I was frequently obliged to use the hatchet to make a free passage for the ass in the tall grass. The heat also increased, and we were all complaining of thirst, when Ernest, whose discoveries were generally of a kind to be of use, made one of a most agreeable nature. He has already been described as a lover of natural history, and now he had gathered, as he proceeded, such plants as he met with, with the view of adding to his stock of knowledge. He found a kind of hollow stalk of some height, which grew at the foot of trees, and entangled our feet in walking. He cut one of them, and was surprised to see a drop of pure fresh water issue at the place where the knife had been applied: he showed it to us, put it to his lips, and found it pure, and felt much regret that there was no more. I then fell to examining the phenomenon myself, and soon perceived that the want of air prevented a more considerable issue of water. I made some more incisions, and presently the water flowed out as if from a small conduit. Ernest, and after him the other boys, quenched their thirst at this new fountain, in the completest manner. I tried the experiment of dividing the plants longways, and they soon gave out water enough to supply even the ass, the monkey, and the bustard. For my own part, touched with deep gratitude for the goodness of God towards me and my beloved family, I raised my eyes to Heaven in thankfulness.

We were still compelled to fight our way through thick bushes, till at length arrived at the wood of gourds, we were not long in finding the spot where Fritz and I had once before enjoyed so agreeable a repose. Our companions had not soon done admiring and wondering at the magnificence of the trees they now beheld, and the prodigious size of the fruit which grew upon the trunk.

Jack and Ernest employed themselves in collecting dried branches and flints, while their mother was occupied in attending to the poor bustard. She remarked to me, that it was cruel to keep her any longer blinded, and her legs tied together on the sledge. To please her, I took off the covering and loosened the string on the legs, but still left it so as to be a guard against its running away, or inflicting blows on those who might approach. I tied her by a long

string to the trunk of a tree, that she might relieve herself by walking about.

My wife now gave us notice, that she should want some vessels to contain milk, a large flat spoon to cut out butter by pieces, and next, some pretty plates for serving it at table, made from the gourd rinds.

Father.—You are perfectly reasonable in your demand, dear wife, said I; and, on my part, I require some nests for the pigeons, some baskets for eggs, and some hives for bees.

All.—Oh yes, these things must all be made; we will set earnestly to work.

Jack.—But first, father, tell us how to divide one of the rinds with a string.

I made them gather or collect till we were in possession of a sufficient number. We now began our work: some had to cut; others to saw, scoop out, and model into agreeable forms. It was a real pleasure to witness the activity exhibited in this our manufacture of porcelain: each tried what specimens he could present for the applause of his companions. For my own part I made a pretty basket, large enough to carry eggs, with one of the gourds, leaving an arch at the top to serve as a cover. I likewise accomplished a certain number of vessels, also with covers, fit to hold our milk, and then some spoons to skim the cream. My next attempt was some bottles large enough to hold fresh water, and these occasioned me more trouble than all the rest. It was necessary to empty the gourd through the small opening of the size of one's finger, which I had cut in it; I was obliged, after loosening the contents with a stick, to get them out by friction with shot and water well shaken on the inside. Lastly, to please my wife, I undertook the labor of a set of plates for her use. Fritz and Jack engaged to make the hives for the bees and nests for the pigeons and hens. For this last object, they took the largest gourds, and cut a hole in front, the size of the animal for whose use it was intended; they had, when finished, so very pretty an appearance, that little Francis was ready to cry that he was not quite small enough to get into and live in one of them. The pigeons' nests were intended to be tied to the branches of our tree; those for the hens, the geese and the ducks, were to be placed between its roots, or on the sea-shore, and to represent a sort of hen-coop.

Our work, added to the heat of the day, had made us all thirsty; but we found nothing on this spot like our *fountain* plants, as we had named them. The boys entreated me to go

with them in different directions, and try to find some water, not daring by themselves to venture further into the wood.

Ernest with great eagerness proposed relieving me of this trouble, and putting himself in my place. It was not long before we heard them calling loudly to us, and saw him returning in great alarm. "Run quick, father," said he, "here is an immense wild boar. Oh, how he frightened me! I heard him grunting quite close to me, and then he scrambled away, to the wood. I hear him at this very moment."

I then cried out to the boys to call the dogs quickly. "Halloo, here, Turk! Flora!" The dogs arrived full gallop. Ernest was our leader, and conducted us to the place where he saw the boar; but he was gone, and he saw nothing but a a plot of potatoes which appeared to have been ransacked by the animal. The ardor for the chase had been somewhat checked in Jack and Ernest, when they considered that they had so formidable a creature to encounter: they stopped short, and began to dig potatoes and left it to Fritz and me to follow the traces of the dogs. We soon heard the cry of the latter; for they had overtaken the runaway, and soon after the most hideous growling assailed our ears from the same quarter. We advanced with caution, holding our guns in readiness to fire together the instant the animal should be within the proper distance. Presently the spectacle of the two brave creatures attacking him on the right and left presented itself; each held one of his ears between their teeth. But it was not a boar, but our own sow which had run away and so long been lost! After the first surprise we could not resist a hearty laugh; and then we hastened to disencumber our old friend of the teeth of her two adversaries. Her frightful squalling resounded through the wood, and drew our young companions to the place, when a warfare of banter and accusation went round among the parties. But here the attention of all was attracted to a kind of small potato which we observed lying thick on the grass around us, and which had fallen from some trees which appeared loaded with the same production: our sow devoured them greedily, thus consoling herself for the pain and fright the dogs had occasioned her.

The fruit was of different colors, and extremely pleasing to the eye. Frtiz expressed his apprehension that it was the poisonous apple called the Mancenilla; but the sow ate them with so much eagerness, and the tree which bore them having neither the form nor foliage ascribed by naturalists to

the Mancenilla; made me doubt of the truth of his idea. I desired my sons to put some of the fruit in their pockets, to make an experiment with them upon the monkey. We now again, from extreme thirst, began to recollect our want of water, and determined to seek for some in every direction. Jack sprang off, and sought among the rocks, hoping that he should discover some little stream: but scarcely had he left the wood, than he bawled to us that he had found a crocodile!

"A crocodile!" cried I with a hearty laugh; "you have a fine imagination, my boy! who ever saw a crocodile on such scorching rocks as these, and not a drop of water near? Now, Jack, you are surely dreaming * * *"

"Not so much of a dream as you may think, father," answered Jack, trying to speak in a low voice; "fortunately he is asleep; he lies here on a stone at its full length; do, father, step here and look at it; it does not stir in the least."

We stole softly to the place where the animal lay; but instead of a crocodile, I saw before me a large sort of lizard, named by naturalists *Leguana* or *Yguana*, an animal by nature of a mild character, and excellent as food. Instantly all were for seizing him, and presenting so rare a prize to their mother. Fritz was already taking aim with his gun; but I prevented him, observing, that the animal being protected by a coat of scales, it might be difficult to destroy him, and that he is known to be dangerous, if approached when angry. "Let us try," said I, "another sort of experiment; as he is asleep, we need not be in a hurry: only a little contrivance is necessary to have him safe in our power alive, and the process will afford us an amusing spectacle."

I cut a stout stick from a bush, to the extremity of which I tied a string with a running knot. I guarded my other hand simply with a little switch, and thus with cautious steps approached the creature. When I was very near to him, I began to whistle a lively air, taking care to make the sounds low at first, and to increase in loudness till the lizzard was awake. The creature appeared entranced with pleasure as the sounds fell upon his ear; he raised his head to receive them still more distinctly, and looked round on all sides to discover from whence they came. I now advanced by a step at a time, without a moment's interval in the music, which fixed him like a statue to the place. At length I was near enough to reach him with my switch, with which I tickled him gently, still continuing to whistle, one after another the different airs I could recollect. The lizard was bewildered by the

charms of the music; the attitudes he threw himself into were expressive of a delirious voluptuousness; he stretched himself at full length, made undulating motions with his long tail, threw his head about, raised it up, and by this sort of action, disclosed the formidable range of his sharp-pointed teeth, which were capable of tearing us to pieces if we had excited his hostility. I dexterously seized the moment of his raising his head, to throw my noose over him. When this was accomplished the boys drew near also and wanted instantly to draw it tight and strangle him at once; but this I positively forbade, being unwilling to cause the poor animal so unmerited a suffering. I had used the noose only to make sure of him, in case it should happen that a milder mode of killing him, which I intended to try, failed of success, in which case I should have looked to the noose for protection; but this was rendered unnecessary. Continuing to whistle my most affecting melodies, I seized a favorable moment to plunge my switch into one of his nostrils. The blood flowed in abundance, and soon deprived him of life, without his exhibiting the least appearance of being in pain; on the contrary, to the last moment, he seemed to be still listening to the music.

As soon as he was dead, I allowed the boys to come quite near, and to tighten the noose, which we now found useful to draw him to the ground from the large stone on which he lay. My sons were delighted with the means I had used for killing him without pain. We had now to consider of the best way for transporting to Falcon's Stream so large and valuable a booty. After a moment of reflection, I perceived that I had better come at once to the determination of carrying him across my shoulders; and the figure I made with so singular an animal on my back, with his tail dragging on the ground, was not the least amusing circumstance of the adventure. Fritz and Jack presented themselves as pages, contending which should support my train, as they called the tail, which, independently of the good-humor inspired among us, considerably eased me of the weight, and gave me the air of an old Chinese emperor, habited in a superb royal mantle of many colors; for those of the lizard shone like precious stones in the rays of the sun.

We were proceeding in our return, when we distinguished the voice of my wife and little Francis calling loudly upon my name. Our long absence had alarmed them: we had forgot on this occasion to give them notice of our approach by firing

our gun, and they had imagined some terrible disaster must have befallen us. No sooner, however, did our cheerful notes reach their ear, than their lamentations were changed to joy, and we were soon the happiest of beings, assembled under a large gourd tree, where we related every particular of the excursion we had made, and laid the lizard at her feet. We had so many things to tell, that, till reminded by my wife we forgot to mention that we had failed of procuring any water. My sons had taken out some of the unknown apples from their pockets, and they lay on the ground by our side. Knips soon scented them, and came slyly up and stole several, and fell to chewing them with great eagerness. I myself threw one or two to the bustard, who also eat them without hesitation. Being now convinced that the apples were not of a poisonous nature, I announced to the boys, who had looked on with envy all the time, that they also might begin to eat them, and I myself set the example. We found them excellent in quality, and I began to suspect that they might be the sort of fruit called *guava*, which is much esteemed in such countries. The tree which bears them is sometimes twenty feet in height, and of so fertile a nature, that in inhabited countries they are sometimes thinned and cut down, on account of the quantity of land they occupy. This regale of the apples had in some measure relieved our thirst; but on the other hand, they had increased our hunger; and so we had not time for preparing a portion of the lizard, we were obliged to content ourselves with the cold provisions we had brought with us.

We had scarcely finished, before my wife earnestly entreated we would begin our journey home, and it appeared to me as the evening was so far advanced, that it would be prudent to return this once without the sledge, which was heavily laden, and the ass could have drawn it but slowly: I therefore determined to leave it on the spot till the following day, when I could return and fetch it, contenting myself with loading the ass for the present, with the bags which contained our new sets of porcelain; the lizard, which I feared might not keep fresh so long; and our little Francis, who began to complain of being tired. I took these arrangements upon myself, and left to my wife and Fritz the care of confining the bustard in such a manner that she could walk before us without danger of escaping.

When these preparations were complete, our little caravan was put in motion, taking the direction of a straight line to Falcon's Stream. The course of our route now lay along a

wood of majestic oaks, and the ground was covered with acorns. My young travellers could not refrain from tasting them, and finding them both sweet and mild to the palate, I had the pleasure of reckoning them as a new means of support. On considering, I recognized that they were a kind of oak which remains always green, and are a common production of the woods in Florida, and that the Indians of North America extract from its fruit an excellent kind of sweet oil, which they use in cooking their rice. Numerous kinds of birds subsist upon these acorns. This we were led to remark, by the wild and discordant cries of several sorts of jays and parrots, which were skipping merrily among the foliage and the branches.

We arrived shortly at Falcon's Stream, and had time to employ ourselves in some trifling arrangements, before it was completely dark.

My wife had great pleasure in taking out her service of porcelain, and using some of the articles that very evening; particularly the handsome egg-basket, and the vessels for the milk. Fritz was instructed to dig a place in the ground, to serve for a kind of cooler, the better to preserve the milk; and we covered it with boards, and put heavy stones to keep them down. Jack took the pigeon's nests, and scampered up the tree, where he nailed them to the branches; he next laid some dry moss within, and placed one of the female pigeons we had contrived to tame, and which at the time was brooding upon it; he put the eggs carefully under the mother, who seemed to accept his services, and to coo in return, with gratitude.

We concluded the exertions of the day with a plain repast, and the contriving a comfortable bed for the bustard by the side of the flamingo, and then stretched our weary limbs upon the homely couch, rendered by fatigue luxurious, in the giant tree.

CHAPTER XXII.

EXCURSION INTO UNKNOWN TRACTS.

My first thought the next morning was to fetch the sledge from the wood. I had a double motive for leaving it there, which I refrained from explaining to my wife, to avoid giving her uneasiness. I had formed a wish to penetrate a little farther into the land, and ascertain whether anything useful would present itself beyond the wall of rocks. I was, besides, desirous to be better acquainted with the extent, the form, and general productions of our island: I wished Fritz only, who was stronger and more courageous than his brothers, and Turk, to accompany me. We set out very early in the morning, and drove the ass before us for the purpose of drawing home the sledge.

As we were picking up some acorns, different birds of exquisite plumage flitted about us; for this once, I could not refuse Fritz the pleasure of firing upon them, that we might learn their species.

He brought down three. I recognized one to be the great blue Virginia jay, and the other two were parrots. One of the two was a superb red parrot; the other was green and yellow.

While Fritz was reloading his gun, we heard a singular sort of noise which came from a distance. At one moment it resembled a muffled drum, at another, the noise made in sharpening a saw. My first idea was of music played by savages, and we retreated quickly to hide ourselves among the bushes to listen. By degrees we advanced towards the place from whence the sound appeared to come: but perceiving nothing to alarm us, we separated some of the branches with our hands, and then discovered a handsome bird, about the size of the English cock; and, like it too, adorned with elegantly formed smooth feathers round the neck, and a comb upon his head. The animal stood erect on a decaying trunk of tree, which was lying on the ground, and at this moment exhibited some singular gestures. His tail was spread in the form of a fan, similar to that of the turkey-cock, but shorter; the feathers round his neck and head were erect and bristling. He sometimes agitated them with so quick a motion, as to make them appear like a vapor which suddenly enclosed him: sometimes he whirled himself round and round

on the trunk of the tree; at others he moved his head and eyes in such a manner as to express a state of distraction, making at the same time, the singular kind of noise with his voice which had alarmed us, and which was preceded and followed by a sort of explosion. This last was caused by the motion of his wing striking in a quick measure on the trunk, which was hollow and dry, and made the noise resemble a muffled drum. There were assembled around him a great number of birds of the same species, but much smaller, and of a less beautiful form. One and all fixed their eyes upon him, and seemed delighted with the pantomime. I contemplated this extraordinary spectacle, of which I had formerly read an account, with astonishment. The number of the spectators of the feathered actor increased every moment, and the performance increased in spirit also in proportion, presenting the idea of a perfect intoxication or delirium of the creature. At this moment Fritz, who stood a little behind me, put an end to the scene by firing off his gun. The actor fell from the stage, and stretched himself on the sand, breathed his last, and the spectators betook themselves suddenly to flight. I must confess, the interest I took in the exhibition was of so lively a nature, that I could not refrain from reproaching Fritz in an angry tone.—"Why," said I, "must we be always applying the means of death and annihilation to the creatures that fall in our way? Is not nature a thousand times more exhilarating in her animated movements, which express life and enjoyment, than in the selfish scheme of destruction you seem so fond of? Some allowance should no doubt be made for the curiosity of youth, for necessities caused by our situation, and even for the taste you have acquired for sporting. I, therefore, as you well know do not object to your killing now and then a little game, or some singular or dangerous kind of animal; but moderation is on all occasions useful, and the spectacle of this bird, employed in such earnest endeavors to draw his females around him, was at least as amusing, as to see him stretched there at length, and lifeless, who but two minutes ago exhibited such rapid and lively motions! His pretty hens too, all dispersed in terror, and deprived of the possibility of ever more admiring him, or being his companions!"

Fritz looked down, ashamed and sorry. I observed to him, the thing being done, there was now no remedy; that the fetras, or heath-cock, was much esteemed as game; and that he had better take it from the ground, and carry it to his mother.

We now laid the dead cock upon the ass's back, and proceeded on our journey. We soon arrived at the guava trees, and a little after at the spot where we had left the sledge, when we found our treasures in the best possible condition: but as the morning was not far advanced, we entered upon our intended project of penetrating beyond the wall of rocks.

We pursued our way in a straight line at the foot of these massy, solid productions of nature, every moment expecting to reach their extremity, or find some turn, or breach, or passage through them, that should conduct us into the interior of the island, if, as I presumed, it was not terminated by these rocks. We walked on, continually looking about, that nothing might escape us worthy of notice, and to anticipate and avoid such dangers as should threaten. Turk, with his usual bravery, took the lead, the ass followed with lazy steps, shaking his long ears; and Fritz and I brought up the rear.

We next entered a pretty little grove, the trees of which were unknown to us. Their branches were loaded with large quantities of berries of an extraordinary quality, being entirely covered with a wax which stuck to our fingers as we attempted to gather them.

I knew of a sort of bush producing wax that grows in America, and named by botanists *Myrica Cerifera;* I had no doubt that this was the plant, and the discovery gave me great pleasure. "Let us stop here," said I to Fritz, "for we cannot do better than collect a great quantity of these berries as a useful present to your mother."

A short time after, another object presented itself with equal claims to our attention; it was the singular modes of behavior of a kind of bird scarcely larger than a chaffinch, and clothed in feathers of a common brown color. These birds appeared to exist as a republic, there being among them one common nest, inhabited at pleasure by all their tribe. We saw one of these nests in a tree, in a somewhat retired situation; it was formed of plaited straws and bulrushes intermixed; it inclosed great numbers of inhabitants, and was built round the trunk of the tree: it had a kind of roof formed of roots and bulrushes, carefully knit together. We observed in the sides small apertures, seemingly intended as doors and windows to each particular cell of this general receptacle; from a few of these apertures issued some small branches, which served the birds as points of rest for entering and returning; the external appearance of the whole excited the image of an immensely large open sponge. The inhabitants were very

numerous: they passed in and out continually, and I estimated that it might contain at least a million. The males were somewhat larger than the females, and there was a trifling difference in their plumage: the number of the males was very small in proportion to the females: I do not know whether this had been the cause of their thus assembling together.

While we were attentively examining this interesting little colony, we perceived a very small kind of parrot hovering about the nest. Their gilded green wings, and the variety of their colors, produced a beautiful effect; they seemed to be perpetually disputing with the colonists, and not unfrequently endeavored to prevent their entrance into the building; they attacked them fiercely, and even tried to peck at us, if we but advanced our hand to the structure. Fritz, who was well trained in the art of climbing trees, was earnestly desirous to take a nearer view of them, and to secure, if possible, a few individuals. He threw his burden down, and climbed to the nest; he then tried to introduce his hand into one of the apertures, and to seize whatever living creature it should touch, in that particular cell; what he most desired, was to find a female brooding, and carry both her and the eggs away. Several of the cells were empty, but by perseverance he found one in the situation he wished; but he received so violent a peck from an invisible bird, that his only care was now to withdraw his hand; presently, however, he ventured a second time to pass his hand into the nest, and succeeded in seizing his prey, which he laid hold of, and, in spite of the bird's resistance, he drew it through the aperture, and squeezed it into the pocket of his waistcoat: and buttoning it securely, he slided down the tree, and reached the ground in safety. The signals of distress sent forth by the prisoner collected a multitude of birds from their cells, who all surrounded him, uttering loud cries, and attacking him with their beaks, till he had made good his retreat. He now released the prisoner, and we discovered him to be a beautiful little green parrot, which Fritz entreated he might be allowed to preserve, and make a present of to his brothers, who would make a cage to keep him in, and would then tame him and teach him to speak.

On the road home, we observed to each other, that from the circumstance of this young nestling within the structure it appeared probable that the true right of property was in this species, and that the brown-colored birds we at first observed, were intruders, endeavoring to deprive them of it.

"Thus we find," said I to Fritz, "the existence of social dispositions in almost every class of the animal kingdom, which leads to the combining together for a common cause or benefit. A multitude of causes may induce animals to form a body or society, instead of living singly: among them may be supposed the deficiency of females or of males; the charge of the young; providing them with food; or as a means for their safety and protection. Who shall dare to fix limits to the instinct or to the faculties of the animal creation?"

Fritz.—I do not, however, recollect any kind of animals who live thus together in society, except the bees.

Father.—What say you then to wasps, drones, and different kinds of ants?

Fritz.—I did not indeed recollect the ants, though I have so often amused myself with looking at them: nothing can be more interesting than the ingenious little houses they construct; observing them attentively, we perceive their industry, their economy, their care of their young, in a word, all their undertakings, conducted on a plan of society and numbers.

Father.—Have you also observed with what a provident kind of instinct they bring out their eggs to be warmed by the sun, and for this end remove them from place to place till the time of their maturity?

Fritz.—Is it not probable, father, that what we take for eggs, are chrysales of ants, which like many other insects, are thus shut up while the process of their taking wings is in the operation?

Father.—You may be right. Writers on natural history have considered the industry and frugality of these insects, as a subject not unworthy of their consideration; but if the common ant of our own country excited so much of your admiration, what will be your astonishment at the labors performed by the ants of other regions! There is a kind which build nests of four, six, and eight feet in height, and large in proportion: the external walls of these structures are so thick and solid, that neither sun nor rain can penetrate them. They are houses which contain within, little streets, arched roofs, piazzas, colonnades, and particular apartments for the offices of housewifery. The ant is an animal, of pilfering propensities, on the profits of which it principally lives; it is also remarkable for constancy in its designs, and remaining ever in one place: a species of them exists, however, in America, which is known by the name of the cephalate, or visiting ant; they make their appearance in numerous troops every

two or three years, and disperse themselves in every house: as soon as their visit is observed, it is customary to open all the apartments and receptacles for stores; they enter everywhere, and in a short time it is found that they have exterminated as effectually the rats, mice, bugs, kakerler (a sort of insect that gives great annoyance in hot countries);—in a word, all the different animals offensive or injurious to man, as if sent on a special mission to remedy the evils these occasion. They do no injury to man, unless they find in him an enemy, who pursues and disturbs their quiet; in which case they attack his shoes so violently, that they are destroyed with incredible rapidity. This curious species does not build its house above ground, but digs holes, sometimes not less than eight feet in depth, and plaster the walls according to the rules of the art of masonry.

Fritz.—You mentioned just now, that in each class of the animal creation there were some individuals which formed themselves into societies; pray tell me which they are?

Father.—I know of no instance among birds, but that we have just been witnessing: but among quadrupeds there is at least one striking example of the social principle: try to recollect it yourself.

Fritz.—It is perhaps the elephant or the sea-otter.

Father.—Neither is the one I thought of: the animals you have named discover also a strong disposition to live in society with their species, but they build nothing like a common house of reception: try again.

Fritz.—Ah, is it not the beaver, father? Is it not true, that these animals possess an intelligence that enables them to contrive and place dams to such streams or rivers as obstruct their design of building entire villages, and that by this operation they are furnished with a sort of ditch, which they use for their purpose?

Father.—You are quite right; and, strictly speaking, the marmoset also may be included in the number of sociable quadrupeds; for they dig themselves a common place of abode, a sort of cavern, in the mountains, and in these whole families of them pass the winter comfortably, in a continual sleep.

We reached a wood, the trees of which in a small degree resembled the wild fig-tree; at least the fruit they bore, like the fig was round in form, and contained a soft juicy substance full of small grains. Their height was from forty to sixty feet: the bark of the trunk was scaly, like the pineapple, and wholly bare of branches, except at the very top.

The leaves of these trees are very thick; in substance, tough, like leather; and their upper and under surfaces are different in color. But what surprised us the most, was a kind of gum, which issued in a liquid state from the trunk of the tree, and became immediately hardened by the air. This discovery awakened Fritz's attention; in Europe he had often made use of the gum produced by cherry-trees, either as a cement or varnish in his youthful occupations; and the thought struck him, that he could do the same with what he now saw.

As he walked he looked frequently at his gum, which he tried to soften with his breath, but without success: he now discovered a still more singular property in the substance; that of stretching on being pulled at the extremities; and, on letting go, of reducing itself instantly, by the power of an elastic principle. He was struck with surprise, and sprang towards me, repeating the experiment before my eyes, and exclaiming, "Look, father! if this is not the very thing we formerly used, to rub out bad strokes in our drawings."

"Ah! what do you tell me?" cried I with joy: "such a discovery would be valuable indeed. The best thanks of all will be due to you, if it is the true *caoutchouc* tree which yields the Indian rubber. Quick, hand it here, that I may examine it." Having satisfied myself of our good fortune, I had now to explain that caoutchouc is a kind of milky sap, which runs from its tree, in consequence of incisions made in the bark. "This liquor is received in vessels placed expressly for the purpose: it is afterwards made to take the form of dark-colored bottles of different sizes, such as we have seen them, in the following manner. Before the liquor has time to coagulate, some small earthen bottles are dipped into it a sufficient number of times to form the thickness required. These vessels are then hung over smoke, which completely dries them, and gives them a dark color. Before they are entirely dry, a knife is drawn across them, which produces the lines or figures with which you have seen them marked. The concluding part of the operation is to break the mould, and to get out the pieces by the passage of the neck, when there remains the complete form of a bottle."

Fritz.—This process seems simple enough, and we will make some bottles of it for carrying liquids, when we go far in pursuit of game. But still I do not perceive how the discovery is of so much value to us?

Father.—Not by the use of it alone, certainly; but its quality is excellent for being made into shoes and boots without

seams, if we can add the assistance of earthen moulds of the size of the leg or foot to be fitted. We must consider of some means of restoring masses of the caoutchouc to its liquid state, from the trees themselves.

We continued our way till we reached another wood, the skirts of which we had already seen, it being the same which stretches from the sea-shore to the top of the rocks. In this spot alone, and mixed with a quantity of cocoa-trees, I discovered a sort of tree of smaller growth, which I presumed must be the sago palm: one of these had been thrown down by the wind, so that I was able to examine it thoroughly. I perceived that the trunk of it contained a large quantity of mealy substance; I therefore, with my hatchet, laid it open longways and cleared it of the whole contents; and I found, on tasting, it was exactly like the sago I had often eaten in Europe. We now began to consider how much further we would go: the thick bushes of bamboo, through which it was impossible to pass, seemed to furnish a natural conclusion to our journey. We were therefore unable to ascertain whether or not we should have found a passage beyond the wall of rocks: we perceived then no better resource than to turn to the left towards Cape Disappointment, where the luxurious plantations of sugar-canes now again drew our attention. That we might not return empty-handed to Falcon's Stream, and might deserve forgiveness for so long an absence, we each took the pains to cut a large bundle of the canes, which we threw across the ass's back, not forgetting the ceremony of reserving one apiece to refresh ourselves with along the road. We soon arrived on the well-known shore of the sea, which at length afforded an open and a shorter path; we next reached the wood of gourds, where we found our sledge loaded as we had left it the night before; we took the sugar-canes from the ass, and fastened them to the sledge, and then we harnessed the ass, and the patient animal began to draw towards home.

We arrived at Falcon's Stream without any further adventure. We received at first some kind reproofs; we were next questioned, and lastly thanked, as we displayed our various treasures, but particularly the sugar-canes: each of the boys seized one and began to suck it, as did their mother also. Nothing could be more amusing than to hear Fritz relate, with unaffected interest, our new discoveries, and to see him imitate the gestures of the heath-cock, as he held it up for examination: his hearers continued to shout with laughter for many minutes. Then came the history of the colony of birds

and their singular habitation, and of the green parrot, all of which was listened to with the delight excited by a fairy tale. Fritz showed them the handsome red parrot dead, also the great blue jay, both of which they did not cease to admire; but when he took out of his pocket the little green parrot all alive, there were no bounds to their ecstasy: they jumped about like mad things, and I was obliged to interpose my authority to prevent their tearing him to pieces, in the struggle who should have him first. Francis nearly devoured the little animal with kisses, repeating a thousand times, pretty little parrot! At length the bird was fastened by the leg to one of the roots of the trees, till a cage could be made for him; and was fed with acorns, which he appeared exceedingly to relish. We next gave an account of the project I now had of furnishing not only candles but boots and shoes. Fritz took a bit of the rubber from his pocket and drew it to its full length, and then let it go suddenly, to the great amusement of little Francis.

Soon after night-fall, we partook of a hearty meal: being much fatigued, we went earlier than usual to rest, and having carefully drawn up the ladder, we fell exhausted, into sound and peaceful slumbers.

CHAPTER XXIII.

USEFUL OCCUPATIONS AND LABORS.—EMBELLISHMENTS.—A PAINFUL BUT NATURAL SENTIMENT.

On the following day, my wife and the boys importuned me to begin my manufactory of candles: I therefore set myself to recollect all I had read on the subject. I soon perceived that I should be at a loss for a little fat to mix with the wax I had procured from the berries, for making the light burn clearer; but I was compelled to proceed without. I put as many berries into a vessel as it would contain, and set it on a moderate fire; my wife in the meantime employed herself in making some wicks with the treads of sail-cloth. When we saw an oily matter of a pleasing smell and light green color, rise to the top of the liquid the berries had yielded, we carefully skimmed it off and put it into a separate vessel, taking care

to keep it warm. We continued this process till the berries were exhausted and had produced a considerable quantity of wax; we next dipped the wicks one by one into it, while it remained liquid, and then hung them on the bushes to harden: in a short time we dipped them again, and repeated the operation, till the candles were increased to the proper size, and they were then put in a place and kept, till sufficiently hardened for use. We, however, were all eager to judge of our success that very evening, by burning one of the candles, with which we were well satisfied. In consequence of this new treasure, we should now be able to sit up later, and consequently spend less of our time in sleep; but independently of this advantage, the mere sight of a candle, which for so long a time we had been deprived of, caused ecstasies of joy to all.

Our success in this last enterprise encouraged us to think of another, the idea of which had long been cherished by our kind steward of provisions: it was to make fresh butter of the cream we every day skimmed from the milk, and which was frequently, to her vexation, spoiled, and given to the animals. The utensil we stood in need of, was a churn, to turn the cream in. Having earnestly applied my thoughts as to the best manner of conquering the difficulty, I suddenly recollected what I had heard read in a book of travels, of the method used by the Hottentots for making butter; but instead of a sheepskin sewed together at its extremities, I emptied a large gourd, washed it clean, filled it again with cream, and stopped it close with the piece I had cut from the top. I placed my vase of cream on a piece of sail-cloth with four corners, and tied to each corner a stake: I placed one boy midway between each stake, and directed them to shake the cloth briskly, but with a steady measure, for a certain time. This exercise, which seemed like childrens' play, pleased them mightily, and they called it rocking the cradle. They performed their office singing and laughing all the time, and in an hour, on taking off the cover, we had the satisfaction of seeing some excellent butter. We heartily congratulated each other, and praised the workmen, who by their constancy of labor, had thus produced a most agreeable article of food. I had now to propose to my sons a work of a more difficult nature than we had hitherto accomplished: it was constructing a cart, in all its forms, for the better conveyance of our effects from place to place, instead of the sledge, which caused us so much fatigue to load and draw. Many reasons induced me to confine my attempt in the first instance to a two wheel cart, and

to observe the result before I ventured on one with four wheels. I tried earnestly and long to accomplish such a machine; but it did not entirely succeed to my wishes, and I wasted in the attempt both time and timber; I however produced what from courtesy we called a cart, and it answered the purpose for which it was designed.

When I had no occasion for the boys, they with their mother engaged in other useful matters. They undertook to transplant the European fruit-trees, to place them where they would be in a better situation for growth, according to the properties of each. They planted vine shoots round the roots of the magnificent tree we inhabited, and round the trunks of some other kinds of trees which grew near; and we watched them, in the fond anticipation that they would in time ascend to a height capable of being formed into a sort of trellis, and help to cool us by their shade. Lastly, we planted two parallel lines of saplings, consisting of chestnut, cherry, and the common nut-trees, to form an avenue from Family Bridge to Falcon's Stream, which would hereafter afford us a shaded walk to Tent-House. This last undertaking was not to be effected without a degree of labor and fatigue the most discouraging: the ground was to be cleared of everything it had produced, and a certain breadth covered with sand, left higher in the middle than on the sides for the sake of being always dry. The boys fetched the sand from the sea-side in their wheelbarrows.

Our next concern was to introduce, if possible, some shade and other improvements on the barren site of Tent House, and to render our occasional abode or visits there more secure. We began by planting in a quincunx all those sorts of trees that thrive best in the sun, such as lemon, pistachio, almond, mulberry, and lime-trees; lastly, some of a kind of orange-tree, which attains to a prodigious size, and bears a fruit as large as the head of a child. The commoner sorts of nut-trees we placed along the shore. The better to conceal and fortify our tent, which enclosed all our stores, we formed on the accessible side, a hedge of wild orange and lemon-trees, which produce an abundant prickly foliage; and to add to the agreeableness of their appearance, we here and there interspersed the pomegranate; nor did I omit to make a little arbor of the guava shrub; which is easily raised from slips, and bears a small fruit rather pleasant to the taste. We also took care to introduce at proper places a certain number of the largest sorts of trees, which in time would serve the

double purpose of shading annual plants, and, with benches placed under them, of a kind of private cabinet. Should any accident or alarm compel us to retire to the fortress of Tent-House, a thing of the first importance would be to find there sufficient food for our cattle. For the greater security, I formed a plantation of the thorny fig-tree, of sufficient breadth to occupy the space between our fortress and the river, thus rendering it difficult for an enemy to approach.

The curving form of the river having left some partial elevations of the soil within the inclosure, I found means to work them into slopes and angles, so as to serve as bastions to our two cannon from the pinnace and our other fire-arms, should we ever be attacked by savages. When this was all complete, we perceived that one thing more was wanting, which was to make such alterations in Family Bridge as would enable us to use it as a drawbridge, or to take it away entirely, this being the only point at which the passage of the river could be easily effected. But as we could not do all at once, we contented ourselves, for present safety, with taking away the first planks of the bridge at each end every time we passed it. My concluding labor was to plant some cedars along the usual landing-places, to which we might fasten our vessels.

We employed six whole weeks in effecting these laborious arrangements; but the exercise of mind and body they imposed, contributed to the physical and moral health of the boys, and to the support of cheerfulness and serenity in ourselves. The more we embellished our abode by the work of our own hands, the more it became dear to our hearts. The constant and strict observance of the Sabbath-day afforded such an interval of rest as could not fail to restore our strength, and inspire us with the desire of new exertions. The sentiment of gratitude which filled our minds towards the Supreme Being, who had saved us from destruction, and supplied us with all things needful, demanded utterance, and on Sundays we might allow ourselves the indulgence of pouring out our hearts in thankfulness.

By this time we had nearly exhausted our stock of clothes, and we were compelled once more to have recourse to the vessel, which we knew still contained some chests fit for our use. To this motive we added an earnest desire to take another look at her, and, if practicable, to bring away a few pieces of cannon, which might be fixed on the new bastions at Tent-House, and thus we should be prepared for the worst.

The first fine day I assembled my three eldest sons, and put my design into execution. We reached the wreck without any striking adventure, and found her still fixed between the rocks, but somewhat more shattered than when we had last seen her. We secured the chests of clothes, and whatever remained of ammunition stores; powder, shot, and even such pieces of cannon as we could remove, while those that were too heavy we stripped of their wheels, which might be extremely useful.

But to effect our purpose, it was necessary to spend several days in visits to the vessel, returning constantly in the evening, enriched with everything of a portable nature which the wreck contained; doors, locks, bolts, nothing escaped our grasp: so that the ship was now entirely emptied, with the exception of the large cannon, and three or four immense copper caldrons. We by degrees contrived to tie the heaviest article or two or three empty casks well pitched, which would thus be sustained above water. I supposed that the wind and tide would convey the beams and timbers ashore, and thus with little pains we should be possessed of a sufficient quantity of materials for erecting a building at some future time. When these measures were taken, I came to the resolution of blowing up the wreck, by a process similar to that with which I had so well succeeded with the pinnace. We accordingly prepared a cask of gunpowder, which we left on board for the purpose: we rolled it to the place most favorable for our views; we made a small opening in its side, and at the moment of quitting the vessel, we inserted a piece of matchwood which we lighted at the last moment, as before. We then sailed with all possible expedition for Safety Bay, where we arrived in a short time. We could not, however, withdraw our thoughts from the wreck, and from the expected explosion, for a single moment. I had cut the match a sufficient length for us to hope that she would not go to pieces before dark. I proposed to my wife to have our supper carried to a little point of land from whence we had a view of her, and here we waited for the moment of her destruction with lively impatience.

About the time of nightfall, a majestic rolling sound like thunder, accompanied by a column of fire and smoke, announced that the ship, so awfully concerned with our peculiar destiny which had brought us to our present abode in a desert, and furnished us there with such vast supplies for general comfort, was that instant annihilated, and withdrawn for-

ever from the face of man! At this moment, love for the country that gave us birth, that most powerful sentiment of the human heart, sunk with a new force into ours. The ship had disappeared forever! Could we then form a hope ever to behold that country more? We had made a sort of jubilee of witnessing the spectacle: the boys had clapped their hands and skipped about in joyful expectation; but the noize was heard; the smoke and sparks were seen—while the sudden change which took place in our minds could be compared only to the rapidity of these effects of our concerted scheme against the vessel. We all observed a mournful silence, and all rose, as it were, by an impulse of mutual condemnation, and with our heads sinking on our bosoms, and our eyes cast upon the ground, we took the road to Tent-House.

My wife was the only person who was sensible of motives for consolation in the distressing scene which had been passing; she was now relieved from all cruel fears for our safety in our visits to a shattered wreck, that was liable to fall to pieces during the time we were on board. From this moment she conceived a stronger partiality for our island, and the modes of life we had adopted.

A night's repose had in some measure relieved the melancholy of the preceeding evening, and I went rather early in the morning with the boys, to make further observations as to the effects of this remarkable event. We perceived in the water, and along the shore, abundant vestiges of the departed wreck; and amongst the rest, at a certain distance, the empty casks, caldrons, and cannon, all tied together, and floating in a large mass upon the water. We jumped instantly into the pinnace, with the tub-boat fastened to it, and made a way towards them through the numberless pieces of timber, &c., that intervened, and in a little time reached the object of our search, which from its great weight moved slowly upon the waves. Fritz, with his accustomed readiness, flung some rope round two four-pounders, and contrived to fasten them to our barge; after which he secured also an enormous quantity of poles, laths, and other useful articles. With this rich booty we returned to land.

We performed three more trips for the purpose of bringing away more cannon, caldrons, fragments of masts, &c., all of which we deposited for present convenience in Safety Bay: and now began our most fatiguing operations, the removing such numerous and heavy stores from the boats, to Tent-House. We separated the cannon and the caldrons from the

tub-rafts and from each other, and left them in a place which was accessible for the sledge and the beasts of burden. With the help of the crow we succeeded in getting the caldrons upon the sledge, and in replacing the four wheels we had before taken from the cannon; and now found it easy to make the cow and the ass draw them.

The largest of the boilers or copper caldrons we found of the most essential use. We brought out all our barrels of gunpowder, and placed them on their ends in three separate groups, at a short distance from our tent; we dug a little ditch round the whole to draw off the moisture from the ground, and then put one of the caldrons turned upside down upon each, which completely answered the purpose of an out-house. The cannon were covered with sail-cloth, and upon this we laid heavy branches of trees; the largest casks of gunpowder we prudently removed under a projecting piece of rock, and covered them with planks, till we should have leisure for executing the plan of an ammunition store-house, about which we had all become extemely earnest.

My wife, in taking a survey of these our labors, made the agreeable discovery, that two of our ducks and one of the geese had been brooding under a large bush, and at the time were conducting their little families to the water. The news produced general rejoicings; and the sight of the little creatures so forcibly carried our thoughts to Falcon's Stream, that we all conceived the ardent desire of returning to the society of the numerous old friends we had left there. One sighed for his monkey, another for his flamingo; Francis for his parrot, and his mother for her poultry yard, her various housewifery accommodations, and her comfortable bed. We therefore fixed the next day for our departure, and set about the necessary preparations.

CHAPTER XXIV.

A NEW DOMAIN.—THE TROOP OF BUFFALOES.—THE VANQUISHED HERO.

On entering our plantation of fruit-trees forming the avenue to Falcon's Stream, we observed that they had not a vigorous appearance, and that they inclined to curve a little in the stalk: we therefore resolved to support them with sticks, and I proposed to walk to the vicinity of Cape Disappointment, for the purpose of cutting some bamboos. I had no sooner pronounced the words, than the three eldest boys and their mother exclaimed, at once, that they would accompany me. Their curiosity had been excited by our accounts of the amusing objects we had met with in our visit to the spot: each found a sound and special reason why he must not fail to be of the party. Our provision of candles was nearly exhausted, and a new stock of berries must therefore be procured, for my wife now repaired our clothes by candle-light, while I employed myself in composing a journal of the events of every day: Then, the sow had again deserted us, and nothing could be so probable as that we should find her in the acorn-wood. Jack would fain gather some guavas for himself; and Francis must needs see the plantation of sugar-canes. In short, all would visit this land of Canaan.

We accordingly fixed the following morning, and set out in full procession. For myself, I had a great desire to explore more thoroughly this part of our island. I therefore made some preparations for sleeping, should we find the day too short for all we might have to accomplish: I took the cart instead of the sledge, having fixed some planks across it for Francis and his mother to sit upon when they should be tired; I was careful to be provided with the different implements we might want; some rope machinery I had contrived for rendering the climbing of trees more easy; and lastly, some provisions, some water in a gourd-flask, and one bottle of wine from the captain's store. When all was placed in the cart, I for this time harnessed to it both the ass and the cow, as I expected the load would be increased on our return; and we set out, taking the road of the potato and manioc plantations. Our first halt was at the tree of the colony of birds, which I now examined with more attention, and recollecting to what

species they belonged, by naturalists named *Loxia Gregaria* (Sociable Grossbeak).

It was not without much difficulty that we conducted the cart through the thick entangled bushes, the most intricate of which I everywhere cut down, and we helped to push it along with all our strength. We succeeded tolerably well at last; and that the poor animals might have time to rest, we determined to pass several hours in this place, which furnished such a variety of agreeable and useful objects. We began by gathering a bag full of the guavas; and after regaling ourselves plentifully, we put the remainder into the cart.

We continued our way, and soon arrived at the caoutchouc, or gum-elastic trees. I thought we could not do better than to halt here, and endeavor to collect a sufficient quantity of the sap to make the different utensils, and the impenetrable boots and shoes, as I had before proposed. It was with this design that I had taken care to bring with me several of the most capacious of the gourd rinds. I made deep incisions in the trunks, and fixed some large leaves of trees, partly doubled together lengthways, to the place, to serve as a sort of channel to conduct the sap to the vessels I had kept in readiness to receive it. We had not long begun this process before we perceived the sap begin to run out as white as milk, and in large drops, so that we were not without hopes, by the time of our return, to find the vessels full, and thus to have obtained a sufficient quantity of the ingredients for a first experiment.

We left the sap running, and pursued our way, which led us to the wood of cocoa-trees; from thence we passed to the left, and stopped half-way between the bamboos and the sugar-canes, intending to furnish ourselves with a provision of each. We aimed our course so judiciously, that on clearing the skirts of the wood, we found ourselves in an open plain, with the sugar-cane plantations on our left, and on our right those of the bamboo interspersed with various kinds of palm-trees, and, in front, the magnificent bay formed by Cape Disappointment, which stretched far out into the sea.

The prospect that now presented itself to our view was of such exquisite beauty, that we determined to choose it for our resting-place, and to make it the central point of every excursion we should in future make: we were even more than half disposed to desert our pretty Falcon's Stream, and transport our possessions hither; a moment's reflection, however,

betrayed the folly of quitting the thousand comforts we had there with almost incredible industry assembled; and we dismissed the thought with promising ourselves to include this ravishing spot ever more in our projects for excursions. We disengaged the animals, that they might graze and refresh themselves under the shade of the palm trees, and sat down to enjoy our own repast, and to converse on the beauty of the scene.

It was now evening; and as we had determined to pass the night in this enchanting spot, we began to think of forming some large branches of trees into a sort of hut, as is practiced by the hunters in America, to shelter us from the dew and the coolness of the air. While we were thus engaged, we were suddenly roused by the loud braying of the ass, which we had left to graze at a distance but a short time before. On going to the place, we saw him throwing his head in the air, and kicking and prancing about; and while we were thinking what could be the matter, he set off on a full gallop. Unfortunately, Turk and Flora, whom we sent after him, took the fancy of entering the plantation of the sugar-canes, while the ass had preferred the direction of the bamboos on the right. We began to fear the approach of some wild beast might have frightened the creature, and to think of assembling our fire-arms. In a little time the dogs returned, and showed no signs, by scenting the ground or otherwise, of any pursuit. I made a turn round the hut to see that all was well, and then sallied forth with Fritz and the two dogs in the direction the ass had taken, hoping that the latter might be enabled to trace him by the scent.

Fatigued, and vexed with the loss of the useful creature, I entered the hut, which I found complete, the boys having covered it with sail-cloth, and strewed branches on the ground for sleeping, and collected some reeds for making a fire, which the freshness of the evening air rendered agreeable to all: it served us also for cooking our supper. When all was safe, I watched and replenished the fire till midnight, rather from habit than the fear of wild beasts, and then took possession of the little corner assigned me near my slumbering companions.

The following morning we breakfasted on some milk from the cow, some boiled potatoes, and a small portion of Dutch cheese, and formed during our meal the plan of the business for the day. It was decided that one of the boys and myself attended by the two dogs, should seek the ass through the

bamboo plantation. I took with me the agile Jack, who was almost beside himself with joy at this determination.

We soon reached the bamboo plantation, and found means to force ourselves along its intricate entanglements. After great fatigue, and when we were on the point of relinquishing all further hope, we discovered the print of the ass's hoofs on the soil, which inspired us with new ardor in the pursuit. After spending a whole hour in further endeavors, we at length, on reaching the skirts of the plantation, perceived the sea in the distance, and soon after found ourselves in an open space, which bounded the great bay. A considerable river flowed into the bay at this place, and we perceived that the ridge of rocks which we had constantly seen, extended to the shore, and terminated in a perpendicular precipice, leaving only a narrow passage between the rocks and the river, which during every flux of the tide must necessarily be under water, but which at this moment was dry and passable. The probability that the ass would prefer passing by this narrow way, to the hazard of the water, determined us to follow in the same path: we had also some curiosity to ascertain what might be found on the other side of the rocks, for as yet we were ignorant whether they formed a boundary to our island, or divided it into two portions; whether we should see there land or water. We continued to advance, and at length reached a stream which issued foaming from a large mass of rock, and fell in a cascade into the river. The bed of this stream was so deep, and its course so rapid, that we were a long time finding a part where it might be most practicable for us to cross. When we got to the other side, we found the soil again sandy, and mixed with a fertile kind of earth: in this place we no longer saw naked rock; but the print of the ass's hoofs were again visible on the ground.

By observing closely, we saw with astonishment the prints of the feet of other animals, much larger and different in many respects from those of the ass. Our curiosity was so strongly excited, that we resolved to follow the traces; and they conducted us to a plain at a great distance, which presented to our wondering eyes a terrestrial paradise. We ascended a hill which partly concealed from our view this delicious scene, and then, with the assistance of a glass, we beheld an extensive range of country exhibiting every kind of rural beauty, and in which a profound tranquility had seemed to take up its abode. To our right appeared the majestic wall of rocks which divided the island. Some of these appeared to touch

the heavens; others to imprint the clouds with wild fantastic forms, while mists, broken into pieces, partially concealed their tops. To the left, a chain of gently rising hills, the long green verdure of which tinged with blue, stretched as far as the eye could discern, and were interspersed at agreeable distances with little woods of palm-trees. The river we had crossed flowed in a serpentine course through this exquisite valley, presenting the idea of a broad floating silver ribbon, while its banks were adorned with reeds and various aquatic plants. I could with difficulty take my eyes from this enchanting spectacle, and I seated myself on the ground to contemplate and enjoy it at my leisure. Neither on the plain nor on the hills was there the smallest trace of the abode of man, nor of any kind of cultivation; it was everywhere a virgin soil, in all its original purity; nothing endowed with life appeared to view, excepting a few birds which flew fearlessly around us, and a quantity of brilliantly colored butter-flies, which the eye frequently confounded with different sorts of unknown flowers, which here and there diversified the surface of the soil.

By straining our eyes, however, as far as we could see, we thought we perceived at a great distance some specks upon the land, that seemed to be in motion. We hastened towards the spot; and as we drew nearer, to our inexpressible surprise, beheld a pretty numerous group of animals which in the assemblage presented something like the outline of a troop of horses or of cows. I observed them some times run up to each other, and then suddenly stoop to graze. Though we had not lately met with farther traces of the ass, I was not entirely without the hope of finding him among these animals. On a nearer approach, we perceived they were wild buffaloes. This animal is formed at first sight to inspire the beholder with terror; it is endowed with an extraordinary degree of strength, and two or three of them would have been capable of destroying us in a moment, should they attack us. My alarm was so great that I remained for a few moments fixed to the spot like a statue. By good luck, the dogs were far behind us, and the buffaloes gave no sign of fear or of displeasure at our approach: they stood perfectly still, with their large round eyes fixed upon us in vacant surprise: those which were lying down got up slowly, but not one among them seemed to have any hostile disposition towards us. The circumstance of the dogs' absence was most likely, on this occasion, the means of our safety; as it was, we had time to draw back

quietly, and prepare our fire-arms. It was not, however, my intention to make use of them in any way but for defence, being sensible that we were unequal to the encounter, and recollecting also to have read, that the sound of a gun drives the buffalo to a state of desperation. I therefore thought only of retreating; and with my poor Jack, for whom I was more alarmed than for myself, was proceeding in this way, when unfortunately Turk and Flora ran up to us and we could see were noticed by the buffaloes. The animals instantly, and all together set up such a roar as to make our nerves tremble; they struck their horns and their hoofs upon the ground, which they tore up by pieces and scattered in the air. I with horror foresaw the moment when, confounding us with the dogs, which no doubt they mistook for jackals, they would seize upon and tear us to pieces. Our brave Turk and Flora, fearless of danger, ran, in spite of all our efforts, into the midst of them, and, according to their manner of attacking, laid hold of the ears of a young buffalo, which happened to be standing a few paces nearer to us than the rest; and though the creature began a tremendous roar and motion with his hoofs, they held him fast, and were dragging him towards us. Thus hostilities had commenced; and unless we could resolve to abandon the cause of our valiant defenders, we were now forced upon the measure of open war, which, considering the strength and number of the enemy, wore a face of the most pressing and inevitable danger. Our every hope seemed now to be in the chance of the terror the buffaloes would feel at the noise of our musketry, which, perhaps, for the first time, would assail their organs, and most likely excite them to flight. With I must confess, a palpitating heart, and trembling hands, we fired both at the same moment: the buffaloes, terrified by the sound and by the smoke, remained for an instant motionless, as if struck by a thunderbolt, and then one and all betook themselves to flight with such incredible rapidity, that they were soon beyond the reach of our sight. We heard their loud roaring from a considerable distance, which by degrees subsided into silence, and we were left with one of their terrific species near us; this one, a female, was no doubt the mother of the young buffalo which the dogs had seized and still kept a prisoner; she had drawn near on hearing its cries, and had been wounded by our guns, but not killed; the creature was in a furious state: after a moment's pause she took aim at the dogs, and with her head on the ground, as if to guide her by the scent, was advancing in her rage,

and would have torn them to pieces, if I had not prevented her by firing upon her with my double-barrelled gun, and thus putting an end to her existance.

It was only now that we began to breathe. A few moments before, death, in the most horrible and inevitable form, seemed to stare us in the face! But now we might hope that every danger was over; I was enchanted with the behavior of my boy, who instead of giving way to fears and lamentations, as other lads of his age might have done, had stood all the time in a firm posture by my side, and had fired with a steady aim in silence. I bestowed freely on him the commendation he had so well deserved, and made him sensible how necessary it is in times of danger to preserve a presence of mind, which in many cases is of itself sufficient to effect the sought for deliverance. The young buffalo still remained a prisoner with his ears in the mouths of the dogs, and the pain occasioned him to be so furious, that I was fearful he might do them some injury; I therefore determined to advance and give them what assistance I might find practicable. To say the truth, I scarcely knew in what way to effect this. The buffalo, though young, was strong enough to revenge himself if I were to give the dogs a sign to let go his ears. I had the power of killing him with a pistol at a stroke; but I had a great desire to preserve him alive, and to tame him that he might be a substitute for the ass, which we had but little hope of recovering. I found myself in a perplexing state of indecision, when Jack suddenly interposed an effective means for accomplishing my wishes. He had his string with balls in his pocket; he drew it out hastily, and making a few steps backward he threw it so skilfully as to entangle the buffalo completely, and throw him down. As I could then approach him safely, I tied his legs two and two together with a very strong cord; the dogs released his ears, and from this moment we considered the buffalo as our own. Jack was almost mad with joy. "What a magnificent creature! How much better than the ass he will look, harnessed to the cart. How my mother and the boys will be surprised and stare at him as we draw near!" repeated he, many and many times.

The question was now how we were to get the buffalo home: having reflected, I conceived the best way would be to tie his two fore-legs together so tight that he could not run, yet loose enough for him to walk; "and," pursued I, "we will next adopt the method practiced in Italy; you will think it somewhat cruel, but the success will be certain; and it shall after-

wards be our study to make him amends by the kindest care and treatment. Hold you the cord which confines his legs with all your strength, that he may not be able to move: I then called Turk and Flora, and made each again take hold of the ears of the animal; I took from my pocket a sharp pointed knife, and taking hold of the snout, I made a hole in the nostril, into which I quickly inserted the string, which I immediately tied so closely to a tree, that the animal was prevented from the least motion of the head, which might have inflamed the wound and increased the pain. I drew off the dogs the moment the operation was performed. The creature, thus rendered furious, would have run away, but the stricture of the legs and the pain in the nostril prevented it. The first attempt I made to pull the cord, found him docile and ready to accommodate his motions to our designs, and I perceived that we might now begin our march. I left him for a short time to make some other preparations.

I was unwilling to leave so fine a prey as the dead buffalo behind us: I therefore, after considering what was to be done, began by cutting out the tongue, which I sprinkled with some of the salt we had in our provision-bag: I next took off the skin from the four feet, taking care not to tear it in the operation. I remembered that the Americans use these skins, which are of a soft and flexible quality, as boots and shoes, and I considered them as precious articles. I lastly cut some of the flesh of the animal with the skin on, and salted it, and abandoned the rest to the dogs as a recompense for their behavior. I then repaired to the river to wash myself, after which we sat down under the shade of a large tree, and ate the rest of our provisions.

As we were not disposed to leave the spot in a hurry, I desired Jack to take the saw, and cut down a small quantity of the reeds, which from their enormous size might be of use to us. We set to work, but I observed that he took pains to choose the smallest. "What shall we do," said I, "with these small-sized reeds? you are thinking, I presume, of a bag-pipe, to announce a triumphal arrival to our companions?" "You are mistaken, father," answered Jack; "I am thinking of some candlesticks for my mother, who will set a high value on them."

"This is a good thought," said I; "I am pleased both with the kindness and the readiness of your invention, and I will assist you to empty the reeds without breaking them: if we should not succeed, at least we know where to provide ourselves with more."

We had so many and such heavy articles to remove, that I dismissed for that day all thoughts of looking further for the ass. I began now to think of untying the young buffalo; and on approaching him, perceived with pleasure that he was asleep, which afforded me a proof that his wound was not extremely painful. As I began to pull him gently with the string, he gave a start; but he afterwards followed me without resistance. I fastened another string to his horns, and led him on by drawing both together; and he performed the journey with so unexpected a docility, that to ease ourselves of a part of our heavy burdens, we even ventured on the measure of fastening the bundles of reeds upon his back, and upon these we laid the salted pieces of the buffalo. The creature did not seem aware that he was carrying a load; he followed in our path, as before, and thus on the first day of our acquaintance he rendered us an essential service.

In a short time we found ourselves once more at the narrow passage between the torrent and the precipice of the rocks, which I have already mentioned. I had tied the young buffalo to a tree near the cascade, without remarking of what species it might be; when I went to release him, I saw that it was a kind of small palm tree, and on looking about me, I also observed some other palm-trees, which I had not before met with. One of the kinds, I now remarked, was from ten to twelve feet in height; its leaves were armed with thorns, and it bore a fruit resembling a small cucumber in form, but which at this time was immature, so that we could not taste it. The second, which was smaller, was also thorny; it was now in blossom, and had no fruit. I suspected that the first of these was the *little royal palm*, sometimes called *aviva*, or *Adam's needle;* and the other, the *dwarf palm*. I resolved to avail myself of both, for further fortifying my enclosure at Tent-House, and also to protect the outer side of the narrow pass immediately over the torrent of the cascade. I determined to return and plant a line of them there, as close to each other as the consideration of their growth would allow; for my intention, of course, was to effect this by means of the young shoots, which presented themselves in great abundance; we also hoped by that time to find their fruit ripe, and to ascertain their kind. We repassed the river in safety, and accompanied by the agreeable sounds of its foaming cascades, we regained the narrow pass at the turn of the rocks. We proceeded with caution, and when safe on the other side, we thought of quickening our pace to arrive the sooner at the hut.

The first solicitudes about health and safety being answered we entered upon the narrative of our adventures; when question after question was so rapidly proposed to us, that we, on our parts, were obliged to ask the necessary time for our replies. All agreed that our success with the buffalo was the most extraordinary of achievements: all longed for the morning, when they might take their fill at looking at the spirited creature we had brought with us. The day concluded with the supper, and sound repose.

CHAPTER XXV.

THE MALABAR EAGLE; SAGO MANUFACTORY; BEES.

My wife the next morning began the conversation. She told me that the boys had been good and diligent; that they had ascended Cape Disappointment with her, and had gathered wood, and made some torches for the night, and, what seemed almost incredible, ventured to fell and bring down an immense palm tree. It lay prostrate on the ground, and covered a space of at least seventy feet in length. To effect their purpose, Fritz had got up the tree with a long rope, which he fastened tight to the top of it. As soon as he had come down again, he and Ernest worked with the ax and saw to cut it through. When it was nearly divided, they cautiously managed its fall with the rope, and in this manner they succeeded. Fritz was in high spirits too on another account: he brought me on his wrist a young bird of prey, of the most beauteous plumage; he had taken it from the nest in one of the rocks near Cape Disappointment. Very young as the bird was, it had already all its feathers, though they had not yet received their full coloring, it answered to the description of the beautiful Eagle of Malabar, and I viewed it with the admiration it was entitled to: meeting with one of these birds is thought a lucky omen; and it being neither large nor expensive in its food, I was desirous to keep it and train it like a falcon, to pursue smaller birds. Fritz had already covered its eyes and tied a string to its foot; and I advised him to hold it often, and for a length of time, on his hand and to tame it with hunger, as falconers do.

When all the narratives were concluded, I ordered a fire to be lighted, and a quantity of green wood to be put on it, for the purpose of raising a thick smoke, over which I meant to hang the buffalo meat I had salted, to dry and preserve it for our future use. The young buffalo was beginning to browse, and we gave him also a little of the cow's milk and in a few days we fed him with a heap of sliced potatoes, which he greedily devoured; and this led us to conclude that the pains from the wound in his nose had subsided and that he would soon become tame.

The morning of this day was spent in again talking over our late extraordinary adventures; we left our meat suspended over the smoke of the fires during our sleep; we tied the young buffalo by the side of the cow, and were pleased to see them agree and bid fair to live in peace together. At night the dogs were set upon the watch. Fritz resolved to go to bed with his eaglet fastened to his wrist, and its eyes still bound: it remained in this state throughout the night without disturbing its master. The time of repose elapsed so calmly, that none of us awoke to keep in the torch-lights, which now for the first time the industry of the boys had supplied us with, and we did not get up till after sunrise. After a moderate breakfast, I chanted the accustomed summons for our setting out; but my young ones had some projects in their heads, and neither they nor their mother were just then in the humor to obey me.

"Let us reflect a little first," said my wife: "as we had so much difficulty in felling the palm-tree, would it not be a pity to lose our labor, by leaving it in this place? Ernest assures me it is a sago-tree; if so, the pith would be an excellent ingredient for our soups. Do, my dear, examine it, and let us see if in any way we can turn it to account."

I found that she was in the right: but in that case it was necessary to employ a day in the business; since, to lay open from one end to the other a tree of such a length and substance, was no trivial task. I however consented, as, independent of the use of the farinaceous pith, I could, by emptying it, obtain two handsome and large troughs for the conveyance of water from Jackal's River to my wife's kitchen-garden at Tent-House, and thence to my new plantations of trees.

Fritz.—One of the halves, father, will answer that purpose, and the other will serve as a conduit for our little stream from Falcon's Nest into my pretty basin lined with tortoise-shell; we then shall be constantly regaled with the agreeable view

of a fountain close to our dwelling: I fancy it now before my eyes, and that I see its course. "And I, for my part," said Ernest, "long for a sight of the sago formed into small grains, as I have seen it in Europe."

I now desired them to bring me the graters they had used for the manioc, and observed that they had to assist me in raising the palm-tree from the ground, which must be done, continued I, by fixing at each end two small cross-pieces or props to support it; to split it open as it lies would be a work of too much labor: this done, I shall want several wooden wedges to keep the cleft open while I am sawing it, and afterwards a sufficient quantity of water. "There is the difficulty," said my wife; "our Falcon's Stream is too far off, and we have not yet discovered any spring in the neighborhood of this place."

Ernest.—That is of no consequence, mother; I have seen hereabouts so great an abundance of the plants which contain water, that we need not be at a loss; for they will fully supply us, if I could only contrive to get vessels enough to hold it.

We now produced the enormous reeds we had brought home, which being hollow, would answer the purpose of vessels; and as some time was required to draw off the water from such small tubes, he and Francis at once set to work; they cut a number of the plants, which they placed slantingly over the brim of a vessel, and whilst that was filling, they were preparing another. The rest of us got round the tree, and with our united strength we soon succeeded in raising the heavy trunk, and the top of it was then sawed off. We next began to split it through the whole length, and this the softness of the wood enabled us to effect with little trouble. We soon reached the pith or marrow that fills up the middle of the trunk the whole of its length. When divided, we laid one half on the ground, and we pressed the pith together with our hands, so as to make temporary room for the pith of the other half to the trunk, which rested still on the props. We wished to empty it entirely, that we might employ it as a kneading trough, leaving merely enough of the pith at both ends to prevent a running out; and then we proceeded to form our paste.

My young manufacturers fell joyfully to work: they brought water, and poured it gradually into the trough, whilst we mixed it with the flour. In a short time the paste appeared sufficiently fermented; I then made an aperture at the bottom

of the grater on its outside, and pressed the paste strongly with my hand; the farinaceous parts pressed with ease through the small holes of the grater, and the ligneous parts which did not pass were thrown aside in a heap, in the hope that mushrooms, &c., might spring from them. My boys were in readiness to receive in the reed vessels what fell from the grater, and conveyed it directly to their mother, whose business was to spread out the small grains in the sun upon sail-cloth, for the purpose of drying them. Thus we procured a good supply of a wholesome and pleasant food; and should have had a larger stock of it, had we not been restricted as to time; but the privilege of renewing the process at pleasure by felling a sago-tree, added to some impatience to take home our two pretty conduits, and employ them as proposed, prompted us to expedite the business. The paste which remained was thrown upon the mush-room bed, and watered well to promote a fermentation.

We next employed ourselves in loading the cart with our tools and the two halves of the tree. Night coming on, we retired to our hut, where we enjoyed our usual repose, and early next morning were ready to return to Falcon's Stream. Our buffalo now commenced his service, yoked with the cow; he supplied the want of the ass, and was very tractable: it is true, I led him by the cord in his nose, and thus restrained him whenever he was disposed to deviate from his duty.

We returned the same way as we came, in order to load the cart with a provision of berries, wax, and elastic gum. I sent forward Fritz and Jack as a vanguard, with one of the dogs; they were to cut an ample road through the bushes for our cart. The two water conductors, which were very long, produced numerous difficulties, and somewhat impeded our progress. We reached the wax and gum-trees with tolerable speed and without any accident, and halted to place our sacks of berries in the cart. The elastic gum had not yielded as much as I expected, from the too rapid thickening caused by an ardent sun. We obtained, however, about a quart, which sufficed for the experiment of the impenetrable boots I had so long desired.

We set out again, still preceded by our pioneers, who cleared the way for us through the little wood of guavas. Suddenly we heard a dreadful noise, which came from our vanguard, and beheld Fritz and Jack hastening towards us. I began now to fear a tiger or panther was near at hand, or had perhaps attacked them. Turk began to bark frightfully, and

Flora joined in so hideous a yell, that I prepared myself for a bloody conflict. I advanced at the head of my troop to the assistance of my high mettled dogs, who ran furiously up to a thicket, where they stopped, and with their nose to the ground, and almost breathless, strove to enter it. I had no doubt some terrible animal was lurking there; and Fritz, who had seen it through the leaves, confirmed my suspicions; he said it was about the size of the young buffalo, and that his hair was black and shaggy. I was going to fire at it promiscuously in the thicket, when Jack, who had thrown himself on his face on the ground to have a better view of the animal, got up in a fit of laughter "It is only," he exclaimed, "our old sow, who is never tired of playing off her tricks upon us." Half vexed, half laughing, we broke into the midst of the thicket, where in reality we found our old companion stretched supinely on the earth, but by no means in a state of dreary solitude; she had round her seven little creatures, which had been littered a few days, and were sprawling about, contending with each other for the best place near their mother for a hearty meal. This discovery gave us considerable satisfaction and we all greeted the good matron, who seemed to recollect and welcome us with a sociable kind of grunting, while she licked her young without any ceremony or show of fear. And now a general consultation took place—should this new family be left where we found it, or conveyed to Falcon's Stream? Opinions being at variance, it was decided that for the present they should keep quiet possession of their retreat.

We then, so many adventures ended, pursued our road, and arrived at Falcon's Stream in safety, experiencing what is so generally true, that home is always dear and sacred to the heart, and anticipated with delight. All was in due order, and our animals welcomed our return in their own jargon and manner, but which did not fail to be expressive of their satisfaction in seeing us again. We threw them some of the food they were most partial to, which they greedily accepted, and then voluntarily went back to their usual stand. It was necessary to practice a measure dictated by prudence, which was to tie up the buffalo again, to inure it by degrees to confinement; and the handsome Malabar Eagle shared the same fate: Fritz chose to place it near the parrot on the root of a tree; he fastened it with a piece of packthread, of sufficient length to allow it free motion, and uncovered its eyes; till then the bird had been tolerably quiet; but the instant it was restored

to light it fell into a species of rage that surprised us; it proudly raised its head, its feathers became ruffled, and its eyeballs seemed to whirl in their orbits, and dart out vivid lightnings. All the poultry were terrified and fled; but the poor luckless parrot was too near the sanguinary creature to escape. Before we were aware of the danger, it was seized and mangled by the formidable hooked beak of the eagle. Fritz vented his anger in loud and passionate reproaches; he would have killed the murderer on the spot, had not Ernest ran up and entreated him to spare its life: "Parrots," said he, "we shall find in plenty, but never perhaps so beauteous, so magnificent a bird as this eagle, which, as father observes, we may train for hawking. You may, too, blame only yourself for the parrot's death; why did you uncover his eyes? I could have told you the falconers keep them covered six weeks, till they are completely tamed. But now, brother, let me have the care of him; let me manage the unruly fellow; he shall soon, in consequence of the methods I shall use, be as tractable and submissive as a new-born puppy."

Fritz refused to part with his eagle, and Ernest did not long oppose giving him the information he wanted: "I have read," said he, "somewhere, that the Caribs puff tobacco smoke into the nostrils of the birds of prey and of the parrots they catch, until they are giddy and almost senseless; this stupefaction over, they are no longer wild and untractable."

Fritz resolved on the experiment: he took some tobacco and a pipe, of which we had plenty in the sailor's chests, and began to smoke, at the same time gradually approaching the unruly bird. As soon as it was somewhat composed, he replaced the fillet over the eyes, and smoked close to its beak and nostrils so effectually, that it became motionless on the spot, and had the exact air of a stuffed bird. Fritz thought it dead, and was inclined to be angry with his brother; but I told him it would not hold on the perch if it were lifeless, and that its head alone was affected; and so it proved. The favorite came to itself by degrees, and made no noise when its eyes were unbound; it looked at us with an air of surprise, but void of fury, and grew tamer and calmer every day. The care of the monkey was now by all adjudged to Ernest as a reward, and he took formal possession of it, and made it lie down near him.

We next began a business which we had long determined on; it was to plant bamboos close to all the young trees, to support them in their growth. We had our cart loaded with

canes in readiness, and a large pointed iron to dig holes in the ground.

We began our work at the entrance of the avenue nearest to Falcon's Stream. The walnut, chestnut and cherry-trees we had planted in a regular line and at equal distances, we found disposed to bend considerably to one side. Being the strongest, I took the task of making holes with the implement upon myself, which, as the soil was light, I easily performed. The boys selected the bamboos, cut them of equal lengths, and pointed the ends to go into the ground. When they were well fixed, we threw up the earth compactly about them, and fastened the sapling by the branches to them with some long straight tendrils of a plant which we found near the spot. In the midst of our exertions we entered into conversation respecting the culture of trees. Till then my boys had only thought of eating fruits, without giving themselves much trouble about their production; but now their curiosity was excited and they asked a thousand questions, which I answered as well as I could.

Towards evening, a keen appetite hastened our return to Falcon's Stream, where we found an excellent and plentiful supper prepared by our good and patient steward.

When the sharpness of hunger was appeased a new subject was introduced, which I and my wife had been thinking of for some time: she found it difficult, and even dangerous, to ascend and descend our tree with a rope ladder: we never went there but on going to bed, and each time felt an apprehension that one of the children, who scrambled up like cats, might make a false step, and perhaps be lamed forever: bad weather might come on, and compel us for a long time together to seek an asylum in our ærial apartment, and consequently to ascend and descend oftener.

My wife had repeatedly applied to me to remedy this evil, and my own anxiety had often made me reflect if the thing were really possible. A staircase on the outside was not to be thought of; the considerable height of the tree rendered that impracticable, as I had nothing to rest it on, and should be at a loss to find beams to sustain it; but I had for some time formed the idea of constructing winding stairs within the immense trunk of the tree, if it should happen to be hollow, or I could contrive to make it so. I had heard the boys talking of a hollow in our tree, and of a swarm of bees issueing from it, and I now, therefore, went to examine whether the cavity extended to the roots, or what its circumference

might be. The boys seized the idea with ardor, they sprang up, and climbed to the tops of the roots like squirrels, to strike at the trunk with axes, and to judge from the sound how far it was hollow: but they soon paid dearly for their attempt; the whole swarm of bees, alarmed at the noise made against their dwelling, issued forth, buzzing with fury, attacked the little disturbers, began to sting them, stuck to their hair and clothes, and soon put them to flight, uttering lamentable cries. My wife and I had some trouble to stop the course of their uproar, and cover their little wounds with fresh earth to allay the smart. Jack, whose temper was on all occasions rash, had struck fiercely upon the bees' nest, and was more severely attacked by them than the rest: it was necessary, so serious was the injury, to cover the whole of his face with linen. The less active Ernest got up the last, and was the first to run off when he saw the consequences, and thus avoided any further injury than a sting or two; but some hours elapsed before the other boys could open their eyes, or be in the least relieved from the acute pain that had been inflicted. When they grew a little better, the desire of being revenged of the insects that had so roughly used them had the ascendant in their minds: they teased me to hasten the measures for getting everything in readiness for obtaining possession of their honey. The bees in the meantime were still buzzing furiously round the tree. I prepared tobacco, a pipe, some clay, chisels, hammers, &c. I took the large gourd long intended for a hive, and I fitted a place for it, by nailing a piece of board on a branch of the tree; I made a straw roof for the top, to screen it from the sun and rain; and as all this took up more time than I was aware of, we deferred the attack of the fortress to the following day, and got ready for a sound sleep, which completed the cure of my wounded patients.

CHAPTER XXVI.

TREATMENT OF BEES;—STAIRCASE;—TRAINING OF VARIOUS ANIMALS;—MANUFACTURES, &C.

Next morning, almost before dawn, all were up and in motion; the bees had returned to their cells, and I stopped the passages with clay, leaving only a sufficient aperture for the tube of my pipe. I then smoked as much as was requisite to stupefy, without killing the little warlike creatures. Not having a cap with a mask, such as bee-catchers usually wear, nor even gloves, this precaution was necessary. At first a humming was heard in the hollow of the tree, and a noise like a gathering tempest, which died away by degrees. All was become calm, and I withdrew my tube without the appearance of a single bee. Fritz had got up by me; we then began with a chisel and a small axe to cut out of the tree, under the bees' hole of entrance, a piece three feet square. Before it was entirely separated, I repeated the fumigation, lest the stupefaction produced by the first smoking should have ceased, or the noise we had been just making revived the bees. As soon as I supposed them lulled again, I separated from the trunk the piece I had cut out, producing as it were the aspect of a window, through which the inside of the tree was laid open to view; and we were filled at once with joy and astonishment on beholding the immense and wonderful work of this colony of insects. There was such a stock of wax and honey, that we feared our vessels would be insufficient to contain it. The whole interior of the tree was lined with fine honeycombs: I cut them off with care, and put them in the gourds the boys constantly supplied me with. When I had somewhat cleared the cavity, I put the upper combs, in which the bees had assembled in clusters and swarms, into the gourd which was to serve as a hive, and placed it on the plank I had purposely raised. I came down, bringing with me the rest of the honeycombs, with which I filled a small cask, previously well washed in the stream. Some I kept out for a treat at dinner; and had the barrel carefully covered with cloths and planks, that the bees, when attracted by the smell, might be unable to get at it. We assembled round the table, and regaled ourselves plentifully with the delicious treat. My wife then put by the remainder; and I proposed

to my sons to go back to the tree, to prevent the bees from swarming again there on being roused from their stupor, as they would not have failed to do, but for the precaution I took of passing a board at the aperture, and burning a few handfulls of tobacco on it, the smell and smoke of which drove them back whenever they attempted to return. At length they desisted, and became gradually reconciled to their new residence, where their queen no doubt had settled herself. I took this opportunity to relate to my children all I had read, in the interesting work by Mr. Huber of Geneva, of the queen bee, this beloved and respected mother of her subjects, who take care of and guard her, work for her, nourish the rising swarms, make the cells in which they are to lodge, prepare others of a different structure, as well as nutriment for the young queens destined to lead forth the fresh colonies. These accounts highly entertained my youthful auditory, who almost regretted having molested the repose of a fine peaceable kingdom that had flourished so long without interruption in the huge trunk. I now advised that all should watch during the night, over the whole provision of honey obtained while the bees were torpid, who, when recovered, would not fail to be troublesome, and come in legions to get back to their property; and to this end we threw ourselves on our beds in our clothes, to take an early doze: on awakening about nightfall, we found the bees quiet in the gourd, or settled in clusters upon near branches, so we went expeditiously to business. The cask of honey was emptied into a kettle, except a few prime combs, which we kept for daily consumption; the remainder, mixed with a little water, was set over a gentle fire, and reduced to a liquid consistence, strained, and squeezed through a bag, and afterwards poured back into the cask, which was left upright, and uncovered all night to cool. In the morning the wax was entirely separated, and had risen to the surface in a compact and solid cake that was easily removed; beneath was the purest, most beautiful and delicate honey that could be seen: the cask was then carefully headed again, and put into cool ground near our wine-vessels. This task accomplished, I mounted to revisit the hive, and found everything in order; the bees going forth in swarms, and returning loaded with wax, from which I judged they were forming fresh edifices in their new dwelling-place. I had been surprised that the numbers occupying the trunk of the tree should find room in the gourd, till I perceived the clusters upon the branches, and I thence concluded a young

queen was among each of them. In consequence, I procured another gourd, into which I shook them, and placed it by the former: thus I had the satisfaction of obtaining at an easy rate two fine hives of bees in activity.

We soon after these operations proceeded to examine the inside of the tree. I sounded it with a pole from the opening I had made: and a stone fastened to a string served us to sound the bottom, and thus to ascertain the height and depth of the cavity. To my great surprise, the pole penetrated without any resistance to the branches on which our dwelling rested, and the stone descended to the roots. The trunk, it appeared, had wholly lost its pith, and most of the wood internally. It seems that this species of tree, like the willow in our climates, receives nourishment through the bark; for it did not look decayed, and its far-extended branches were luxuriant and beautiful in the extreme. I determined to begin our construction in its capacious hollow that very day. The undertaking appeared at first beyond our powers: but intelligence, patience, time, and a firm resolution, vanquished all obstacles. We were not disposed to relax in any of these requisites; I was pleased to find opportunity to keep my sons in continual action, and their minds and bodies were all the better for exertion. They grew tall and strong, and were too much engaged to regret, in ignoble leisure, any of their past enjoyments in Europe.

We began to cut into the side of the tree, towards the sea, a door-way equal in dimensions to the door of the captain's cabin, which we had removed with all its frame-work and windows. We next cleared away from the cavity all the rotten wood, and rendered the interior even and smooth, leaving sufficient thickness for cutting out resting-places for the winding stairs, without injuring the bark! I then fixed in the centre the trunk of a tree about twenty feet in length, and a foot thick, completely stripped of its branches, in order to carry my winding staircase round it: on the outside of this trunk, and the inside of the cavity of our own tree, we formed grooves, so calculated as to correspond with the distance at which the boards were to be placed to form the stairs. These were continued till I had got to the height of the trunk round which they turned. I made two more apertures at suitable distances, and thus completely lighted the whole ascent. I also effected an opening near our room, that I might more conveniently finish the upper part of the staircase. A second trunk was fixed upon the first, and firmly sustained with

screws and transverse beams. It was surrounded, like the other, with stairs cut slopingly; and thus we happily effected the stupendous undertaking of conducting it to the level of our bedchamber. Here I made another door directly into it. To render it more solid and agreeable, I closed the spaces between the stairs with plank. I then fastened two strong ropes, the one descended the length of the central trunk, the other along the inside of our large tree, to assist in case of slipping. I fixed the sash-windows taken from the captain's cabin in the apertures we had made to give light to the stairs; and I then found I could add nothing further to my design. When the whole was complete, it was so pretty, solid, and convenient, that we were never tired of going up and coming down it. Our success was owing to the firm resolution adopted by all, to persevere in patient industry and constant efforts to the end; and it employed us many weeks. I have now to relate some occurrences that took place during the construction of our staircase.

A few days after the commencement of our undertaking, our brave Flora whelped us six young puppies, all healthy, and likely to live. The number was so alarming, that I was under the necessity of drowning all but a male and female to keep up the breed. A few days later, the two she-goats gave us two kids, and our ewes five lambs; so that we now saw ourselves in possession of a pretty flock: but lest the domestic animals should follow the example of the ass, and run away from us, I tied a bell to the neck of each. We had found a sufficient number of bells in the vessel, which had been shipped for trading with the savages; it being one of the articles they most value. We could now immediately trace a deserter by the sound, and bring it back to the fold.

Next to the winding stairs, my chief occupation was the management of the young buffalo, whose wound in the nose was quite healed, so that I could lead it at will with a cord or stick passed through the orifice, as the Caffrarians do. I preferred the stick, which answered the purpose of a bit, and I resolved to break in this spirited beast for riding as well as drawing. It was already used to the shafts, and very tractable in them; but I had more trouble in inuring him to the rider, and to wear a girth, having made one out of the old buffalo's hide. I formed a sort of saddle with sail-cloth, and tacked it to the girth. Upon this I fixed a burden, which I increased progressively. I was indefatigable in the training of the animal, and soon brought it to carry, patiently,

large bags of potatoes, salt and other articles, in the place of the ass. The monkey was his first rider, who stuck so close to the saddle, that in spite of the plunging and kicking of the buffalo, it was not thrown. Francis was then tried, as the lightest of the family; but throughout his excursion I led the beast with a halter, that it might not throw him off. Jack now showed some impatience to mount the animal in his turn. I next passed the stick through the buffalo's nose, and tied strong packthread at each end of it, bringing them together over the neck of the animal, and put this new-fangled bridle into the hands of the young rider, directing him how to use it. For a time the lad kept his saddle, notwithstanding the unruly gestures of the creature; at length a side jolt threw him on the sand, without his receiving much injury. Ernest, Fritz, and lastly myself, got on successively, with more or less effect. His trotting shook us to the very centre, the rapidity of his gallop turned us giddy, and our lessons in horsemanship were reiterated many days before the animal was tamed, and could be rode with either safety or pleasure. At last, however, we succeeded without any serious accident; and the strength and swiftness of our saddled buffalo were prodigious. It seemed to sport with the heaviest loads. My three eldest boys mounted it together now and then, and it ran with them with the swiftness of lightning. By continued attentions it at length became extremely docile: it was not in the least apt to start; and I really felt satisfaction in being thus enabled to make my sons expert riders, so that if they should ever have horses, they might get on the most restive and fiery without fear: none could be compared to our young buffalo; and the ass, which I had intended to employ in the same way was far surpassed by this new member of our family. Fritz and Jack, with my instructions, amused themselves in training the animal as horses are exercised in a riding-house: and by means of the little stick through the nose, they were able to do what they pleased with him.

In the midst of all this Fritz did not neglect his eagle: he daily shot some small birds which he gave it to eat, placing them sometimes between the buffalo's horns, sometimes on the back of one of the hens, or of the flamingo, or on a shelf, or at the end of a stick, in order to teach it to pounce like a falcon upon other birds. He taught it to perch on his wrist whenever he called or whistled to it; but some time elapsed before he could trust it to soar without securing its return by a long string, apprehending its bold and wild nature

would prompt it to take a distant and farewell flight from us.

Our whole company, including even the inert Ernest, was infected with the passion of becoming instructors. Ernest tried his talents in this way with his monkey, who seldom failed to furnish him with work. It was no poor specimen of the ludicrous to see the lad; he whose movements were habitually slow and studied, now constrained to skip and jump, and play a thousand antics with his pupil during training hours, and throughout, against the grain, carrying forward the lesson the grotesque mimic was condemned to learn, of bearing small loads, climbing the cocoa-trees, and to fetch and bring the nuts. He and Jack made a little hamper of rushes, very light; they put three straps to it, two of which passed under the fore, and one between the hind legs of the animal, and were then fastened to a belt in front, to keep the hamper steady on the back of the mischievous urchin. This apparatus was at first intolerable to poor Knips: he gnashed his teeth, rolled on the ground, jumped like a mad creature, and did everything to get rid of it: but all in vain, for education was the standing order, and he soon found that he must submit. The hamper was left on day and night; its sole food was what was thrown into it; and in a short time pug was so much accustomed to the burden, that he began to spit and growl whenever we attempted to take it off, and everything given to the creature to hold was instantly thrown into it. Knips became at length a useful member of our society; but he would only obey Ernest, whom he at once loved and feared, thus affording a proof of at least one of the great ends of all instruction.

These different occupations filled up several hours of the day; when, after working at our stairs, we assembled in the evening round our best of friends, the good mother, to rest ourselves, and forming a little circle, every individual of which was affectionate and cheerful, it was her turn to give us some agreeable and less fatiguing occupation in the domestic concerns of Falcon's Stream: such as improving our candle manufactory, by blending the berry and the bees' wax, and employing the reed-moulds invented by Jack: but having found some difficulty in taking out the candles when cold, I adopted the plan of dividing the moulds, cleaning the inside, and rubbing it over with a little butter, to prevent the wax from adhering to it; then to rejoin both halves with a band that could be loosened at pleasure, to facilitate the extraction of the tapers. The wicks gave us most trouble, as we had no cotton.

We tried with moderate success the fibrous threads of the karrata, and those of the algava or flame-wood; but each had the inconvenience of becoming a sort of coal or cinder. The production which gave us the most satisfaction was the pith of a species of elder; but it did not, however, lessen our desire to discover the only appropriate ingredient, the cotton-tree.

We now began to think of manufacturing our impenetrable boots without seams, of the caoutchouc or elastic gum. I began with a pair for myself; and I encouraged my children to afford a specimen of their industry, by trying to form some flasks and cups that could not break. They began by making some clay moulds, which they covered with layers of gum, agreeably to the instructions I had given them. In the meanwhile I filled a pair of stockings with sand, and covered them with a layer of clay, which I first dried in the shade, and afterwards in the sun. I then took a sole of buffalo-leather, well beaten, and studded round with tacks, which served me to fix it under the foot of the stocking; after this I poured the liquid gum into all the interstices, which on drying produced a close adhesion between the leather and stocking sole. I next proceeded to smear the whole with a coat of resin of tolerable thickness; and as soon as this layer was dried on, I put on another, and so on till I had applied a sufficiency with my brush. After this I emptied the sand, drew out the stocking, removed the hardened clay, shook off the dust, and thus obtained a pair of seamless boots, as finished as if made by the best English workman; being pliant, warm, soft, smooth, and completely waterproof. I hung them up directly, that they might dry without shrinking. They fitted uncommonly well; and my four lads were so highly pleased with their appearance, that they skipped about with joy, as they asked me to make each of them a pair. I refrained from any promise, because I wished to ascertain their strength previously, and to compare them with boots made of mere buffalo leather. Of these I at once began a pair for Fritz, with a piece of the slaughtered buffalo's skin. They gave far more trouble than those manufactured with the caoutchouc, which I used to cover the seams and render them less pervious to water. The work turned out very imperfect, and so inferior to my incomparable boots, that Fritz wore them reluctantly; and the more so, as his brothers shouted with laughter at the difficulty he had to run in them.

We had also been engaged in the construction of our foun-

tain, which afforded a perpetual source of pleasure to my wife, and indeed to all of us. In the upper part of the stream we built with stakes and stones a kind of dam, that raised the water sufficiently to convey it into the palm-tree troughs; and afterwards, by means of a gentle slope, to glide on contiguous to our habitation, where it fell into the tortoise-shell basin, which we had elevated on stones to a certain height for our convenience; and it was so contrived, that the redundant water passed off through a cane pipe fitted to it. I placed two sticks athwart each other for the gourds, that served as pails, to rest on; and we thus produced, close to our abode, an agreeable fountain, delighting with its rill, and supplying us with a pure crystal fluid, such as we frequently could not get when we drew our water from the bed of the river, which was often encumbered with the leaves and earth fallen into it, or rendered turbid by our water-fowls. The only inconvenience was, that the water flowing in this open state through the narrow channels in a slender stream, was heated, and not refreshing when it reached us. I resolved to obviate this inconvenience at my future leisure, by employing, instead of the uncovered conduits, large bamboo canes fixed deep enough in the ground to keep the water cool. In waiting the execution of this design, we felt pleasure in the new acquisition; and Fritz, who had suggested the notion, received his tribute of praise from all.

CHAPTER XXVII.

WILD ASS;—DIFFICULTY IN BREAKING IT;—THE HEATH-FOWL'S NEST.

We were scarcely up one morning, and had got to work in putting the last hand to our winding staircase, when we heard at a distance two strange kind of voices, that resembled the howlings of wild beasts, mixed with hissings and sounds of some creature at its last gasp; and I was not without uneasiness: our dogs too pricked up their ears and seemed to whet their teeth for a sanguinary combat with a dangerous enemy.

From their looks we judged it prudent to put ourselves in a state of defence; we loaded our guns and pistols, placed

them together within our castle in the tree, and prepared to repel vigorously any hostile attack from that quarter. The howlings having ceased an instant, I descended from our citadel, well armed, and put on our two faithful guardians their spiked collars and side-guards: I assembled our cattle about the tree to have them in sight, and I reascended to look around for the enemy's approach. Jack wished they might be lions—"I should like," said he, "to have a near view of the king of beasts, and should not be in the least afraid of him."

At this instant the howlings were renewed, and almost close to us. Fritz got as near the spot as he could, listened attentively and with eager looks, then threw down his gun, and burst into a loud laughter, exclaiming, "Father, it is our ass! the deserter comes back to us, chanting the hymn of return: listen; do you not hear his melodious brayings in all the varieties of the gamut? I listened, and a fresh roar, in sounds unquestionable, raised loud peals of laughter amongst us; and then followed the usual train of jests and mutual banter, at the alarm we had one and all betrayed. Shortly after, we had the satisfaction of seeing among the trees our old friend Grizzle, moving towards us leisurely, and stopping now and then to browse; but to our great joy, he was accompanied by one of his own species, of very superior beauty; and when it was nearer, I knew it to be a fine onagra, or wild ass, which I conceived a strong desire to possess, though at the same time aware of the extreme difficulty there would be in taming and rendering him subject to the use of man. Some writers, who have described it under the name of the *Œgitai* (or long-eared horse), given it by the Tartars, affirm that the taming it has been ever found impracticable; but my mind furnished an idea on the subject, which I was resolved to act on if I got possession of the handsome creature. Without delay I descended the ladder with Fritz, desiring his brothers to keep still; and I consulted my privy-counsellor on the means of surprising and taking the stranger captive.

I got ready, as soon as possible, a long cord with a running knot, one end of which I tied fast to the root of a tree; the noose was kept open with a little stick slightly fixed in the opening, so as to fall of itself on the cord being thrown round the neck of the animal, whose efforts to escape would draw the knot closer. I also prepared a piece of bamboo about two feet long, which I split at the bottom, and tied fast at the top, to serve as nippers. Fritz attentively examined my contrivance, without seeing the use of it. Prompted by the

impatience of youth, he took the ball-sling, and proposed aiming at the wild ass with it, which he said was the shortest way of proceeding. I declined adopting this Patagonian method, fearing the attempt might fail, and the beautiful creature avail itself of its natural velocity to evade us beyond recovery: I therefore told him my project of catching it in the noose, which I gave him to manage, as being nimbler and more expert than myself. The two asses drew nearer and nearer to us. Fritz holding in his hand the open noose, moved softly on from behind the tree where we were concealed, and advanced as far as the length of the rope allowed him: the onagra started on perceiving a human figure; it sprang some paces backward, then stopped as if to examine the unknown form; but as Fritz now remained quite still, the animal resumed its composure, and continued to browse. Soon after he approached the old ass, hoping that the confidence that would be shown by it, would raise a similar feeling in the stranger: he held out a handful of oats mixed with salt; our ass instantly ran up to take its favorite food, and greedily devoured it; this was quickly perceived by the other. It drew near, raised its head, breathed strongly, and came up so close, that Fritz, seizing the opportunity, succeeded in throwing the rope round its neck; but the motion and stroke so affrighted the beast, that it instantly sprang off. It was soon checked by the cord, which, in compressing the neck almost stopped its breath: it could go no further, and, after many exhausting efforts, it sank panting for breath upon the ground. I hastened to loosen the cord and, prevent its being strangled. I then quickly threw our ass's halter over its head; I fixed the nose in my split cane, which I secured at the bottom with packthread. Thus I succeeded in subduing the first alarm of this wild animal, as farriers shoe a horse for the first time. I wholly removed the noose that seemed to bring the creature into a dangerous situation; I fastened the halter with two long ropes to two roots near us, on the right and left, and let the animal recover itself, noticing its actions and devising the best way to tame it in the completest manner.

The rest of my family had by this time come down from the tree, and beheld the fine creature with admiration, its graceful shape, and well-turned limbs, which placed it so much above the ass, and nearly raised it to the noble structure of the horse. In a few moments the onagra got up again, struck furiously with its foot, and seemed resolved to free itself from

all bonds: but the pain of its nose, which was grasped and violently squeezed in the bamboo, forced it to lie down again. Fritz and I now gently undid the cords, and half led, half dragged it, between two roots closely connected, to which we fastened it afresh, so as to give the least scope for motion, and thus render its escape impracticable, whilst it enabled us to approach securely, and examine the valuable capture we had made. We also guarded against master Grizzle playing truant again, and tied him fast with a new halter, confining its fore-legs with a rope. I then fastened it and the wild ass side by side, and put before both plenty of good provender to solace their impatience of captivity.

We had now the additional occupation of training the onagra for our service or our pleasure, as might turn out to be most practicable: my boys exulted in the idea of riding it, and we repeatedly congratulated each other on the good fortune which had thus resulted from the flight of our ass. Yet I did not conceal that we should have many difficulties to encounter in taming it, though it seemed very young, and not even to have reached its full growth. But I was inclined to think proper means had not been hitherto adopted, and that the hunters, almost as savage as the animals themselves, had not employed sufficient art and patience, being probably unconscious of the advantages of either. I therefore determined to resort to all possible measures. I let the nippers remain on its nose, which appeared to distress him greatly, though we could plainly perceive their good effect in subduing the creature; for without them no one could have ventured to approach him. I took them off, however, at times, when I gave it food, to render eating easier, and I began, as with the buffalo by placing a bundle of sail-cloth on its back, to inure it to carry. When accustomed to the load, I strove to render the beast by degrees still more docile, by hunger and thirst; and I observed with pleasure, that when it had fasted a little and I supplied it with food its look and actions were less wild. I also compelled the animal to keep erect on its four legs, by drawing the cords closer that fastened it to the roots, in order to subdue gradually by fatigue its natural ferocity. The children came in turns to play with it, and scratch its ears gently, which were remarkably tender: and it was on these I resolved to make my last trial, if all other endeavors failed. For a long time we dispared of success; the onagra made furious starts and leaps when any of us went near it, kicked with its hind feet, and even attempted to bite those who touched it.

This obliged me to have recourse to a muzzle, which I managed with rushes, and put on when it was not feeding. To avoid being struck by its hind feet, I partially confined them, by fastening them to the fore feet with cords, which, however, I left moderately loose, that we might not encroach too much upon the motion necessary for its health. It was at length familiarized to this discipline, and was no longer in a rage when we approached, but grew less impatient daily, and bore to be handled and stroked.

At last we ventured to free it by degrees from its restraints and to ride it as we had done with the buffalo, still keeping the fore-feet tied: but notwithstanding this precaution and every preceding means, it proved as fierce and unruly as ever for the moment. The monkey, who was first put on its back, held on pretty well by clinging to its mane, from which it was suspended as often as the onagra furiously reared and plunged; it was therefore for the present impracticable for either of my sons to get upon it. The perverse beast baffled all our efforts, and the perilous task of breaking it was still to be persevered in with terror and apprehension. In the stable it seemed tolerably quiet and gentle; but the moment it was in any degree unshackled, it became wholly ferocious and unmanageable.

I was at length reduced to my last expedient, but not without much regret, as I resolved if it did not answer, to restore the animal to full liberty. I tried to mount the onagra, and just as in the act of rearing up violently to prevent me, I seized with my teeth one of the long ears of the enraged creature, and bit it till it bled; instantly it stood almost erect on its hind-feet, motionless, and as stiff as a stake: it soon lowered itself by degrees, while I still held its ear between my teeth. Fritz seized the moment, and sprang on its back; Jack, with the help of his mother, did the same, holding by his brother, who on his part clung to the girth. When both assured me they were firmly seated, I let go the ear: the onagra made a few springs less violent than the former, and checked by the cords on its feet, it gradually submitted, began to trot up and down more quietly, and ultimately grew so tractable, that riding it became one of our chief pleasures. My lads were soon expert horsemen; and their horse, though rather long-eared, was very handsome and well broken in. Thus patience on our parts conquered a serious difficulty, and gained for us a proud advantage.

I now explained to my companions that I learned this ex-

traordinary mode of taming from a horsebreaker I met with by chance. He had lived long in America, and carried on the skin-trade with the savages, to whom he took, in exchange, various European goods. He employed in these journeys half-tamed horses of the southern provinces of that country, which are caught in snares or with nooses. They are at first unruly, and resist burdens; but as soon as the hunter bites one of their ears, they become mild and submissive, and at last so docile that anything may be done with them. The journey is continued through forests and over heaths to the dwellings of the savages; skins are given in barter for the goods brought them, with which the horses are released. They set out again on their return, and are directed by the compass and stars to the European settlements, where they profitably dispose of their skins and horses.

In a few weeks the onagra was so effectually tamed, that we all could mount it without fear: I still, however, kept his two fore-legs confined together with the cord, to moderate the extreme swiftness of its running. In the room of a bit, I contrived a curb, and with this and a good bit, applied as wanted, to the ear, it went to right or left at the will of the rider. Now and then I mounted it myself, and not without an emotion of pride at my success in subduing an animal that had been considered by travellers and naturalists as absolutely beyond the power of man to tame. But how superior was my gratification, on seeing Fritz spring at any time on the creature's back, drive along our avenue like lightning, and do what he pleased with it, in depicting to my fond imagination, that even on a desert unknown island, I could qualify my dear children to re-enter society, and become in such respects its ornament! In beholding their physical strength and native graces unfold themselves, and these keeping pace with the improvement of their intelligence and their judgment; and in anticipating that, buried as they were in a distant retreat, far from the tumult of the world, and all that excites the passions, their sentiments would be formed in exact conformity to the paternal feelings of my heart! I had not lost the hope that we should one day return to Europe in some vessel chance might throw on our coast, or even with the aid of our pinnace: but I felt, at the same time, and my wife still more, that we should not leave the island without a lively regret, and I determined to pursue my arrangements as if we were to close existence on a spot where all around us prospered.

During the training of our horse, which we named *Light-*

foot, a tripple brood of our hens had given us a crowd of little feathered beings; forty of these at least were chirping and hopping about us, to the great satisfaction of my wife, whose zealous care of them sometimes made me smile. Some of these we kept near us, while others were sent in small colonies to feed and breed in the desert, where we could find them as they were wanted for our use.

This increase of our poultry reminded us of an undertaking we had long thought of, and was not in prudence to be deferred any longer; this was the building, between the roots of our great tree, covered sheds for all our bipeds and quadrupeds. The rainy season, which is the winter of these countries, was drawing near, and to avoid losing most of our stock, it was requisite to shelter it.

We began by forming a kind of roof above the arched roots of our tree, and employed bamboo canes for the purpose: the longest and strongest supported the roofing in the place of columns, the smaller more closely united and composed the roof itself. I filled up the interstices with moss and clay, and I spread over the whole a thick coat of tar. By these means I formed a compact and solid covering, capable of bearing pressure. I then made a railing round it, which gave the appearance of a pretty balcony, under which, between the roots, were various stalls, sheltered from rain and sun, that could be easily shut and separated from each other by means of planks nailed upon the roots: part of them were calculated to serve as a stable and yard, part as an eating-room, a store-room, &c., and as a hayloft to keep our hay and provisions dry in. This work was soon completed; but afterwards it was necessary to fill these places with stores of every kind for our supply throughout the wet season. In this task we engaged diligently, and went daily here and there with our cart to collect everything useful, and that might give us employment when the weather prevented our going far.

One evening, on our return from digging up potatoes, as our cart, loaded with bags, drawn by the buffalo, ass and cow, was gently rolling along, seeing still a vacant place in the vehicle, I advised my wife to go home with the two youngest boys, whilst I went round by the wood of oaks with Ernest and Fritz, to gather as many sweet acorns as we could find room for. We had still some empty sacks. Ernest was accompanied by his monkey, who seldom left him; and Fritz, horseman like, was on his dear onagra, which he had appropriated to himself, inasmuch as he had helped to take and

tame it and indeed because he knew how to manage it better than his brothers. Ernest was too lazy, and preferred walking at ease with the monkey on his shoulder, and the more so, because it spared him the trouble of gathering fruit.

When we reached the oaks, Lightfoot was tied to a bush, and we set actively to work to gather the acorns that had dropped from the trees. While all were busily employed, the monkey quitted its master's shoulder and skipped unperceived into the adjoining bush. It had been there some time when we heard on that side the loud cries of birds and flapping of wings, and this assured us a sharp conflict was going on between master Knips and the inhabitants of the bushes. I despatched Ernest to reconnoitre. He went stoutly towards the place, and in an instant we heard him exclaim, "Come quickly, father! A fine heath-fowl's nest full of eggs; Mr. Knips, as usual, wished to make a meal of them; the hen and he are fighting for it: come quick, Fritz, and take her; I am holding greedy-chops as well as I can."

Fritz ran up directly, and in a few moments brought out alive the male and female heath-fowl, both very beautiful; the cock finely collared, similar to one he had killed on a former occasion. I was rejoiced at this discovery, and helped my son to prevent their escape, by tying their wings and feet, and holding them while he returned to the bush for the eggs. And now Ernest came forward driving the monkey before him, and carrying his hat with the utmost care: he had stuck his girdle full of narrow sharp-pointed leaves, in shape like a knife-blade, which reminded me of the production named sword-grass; but I did not pay much attention, as I was too busily engaged in our egg-hunt, and considered his decoration as childishness. On coming up to me he uncovered his hat, and gave it me in a transport of joy, crying out, "Here, father, are some heath-fowl's eggs. I found them in a nest so well concealed under these long leaves, that I should not have observed them had not the hen, in defending herself against the monkey, scattered them about. I am going to take them home, they will please my mother; and these leaves will amuse Francis, for they are like swords, and he will like them for a plaything." I applauded Ernest's kind thought, and I encouraged him and Fritz to be thus ever considerate for the absent. The kindnesses conferred on those who are separated from us have in themselves more merit, and are more valued, than those which are personally received. It was now time to think of moving homeward: my two sons filled the bags with

acorns, and put them on Lightfoot. Fritz mounted. Ernest carried the eggs, I took charge of the hen, and we proceeded to Falcon's Stream followed by our train-wagon. Our good cattle were in such complete subjection, that it was only necessary to speak to them. I remarked Ernest often applying his ear to the hat which held the eggs, as if he thought the little ones were near coming forth; I listened also and observed some shells already broken and the young protuding: we were overjoyed at our good luck, and Fritz could not refrain from trotting on briskly to bear the tidings to his mother. When arrived, our first care was to examine the eggs: the female bird was too frightened and wild to sit upon them: fortunately we had a hen that was hatching; her eggs were immediately removed, and the new ones put in their place: the female heath-fowl was put into the parrot's cage, and hung up in the room to accustom it to our society. In less than three days all the chickens were hatched; they kept close to their foster-mother, and ate greedily a mixture of sweet acorns bruised in milk, such as we gave our tame poultry: as they grew up I plucked out the large feathers of their wings, lest they should naturally take flight; but they and their real parent gradually became so domesticated, that they daily accompanied our feathered stock in search of food, and regularly came back at night to the roost I had prepared for them, and in which this little new colony of feathered beings seemed to delight.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

FLAX;—AND THE RAINY SEASON.

Francis for a short time was highly amused with his sword-leaves, and then, like all children, who are soon tired of their toys, he grew weary of them, and they were thrown aside. Fritz picked up some of them that were quite soft and withered; holding up one which was pliable as a ribbon in his hand: "Francis," said he, "you can make whips of your sword-grass, and they will be of use in driving your goats and sheep." It had been lately decided that it should be the business of Francis to lead these to pasture. Fritz accordingly sat down

to help him divide the leaves, and afterwards plat them into whip-cords. As they were working, I saw with pleasure the flexibility and strength of the bands; I examined them more closely, and found they were composed of long fibres or filaments; and this discovery led me to surmise that this supposed sword-grass might be a very different thing, and not improbably the flax-plant of New Zealand, called by naturalists *Chlomidia*, and by other *Phormiou*. This was a valuable discovery in our situation: I knew how much my wife wished for the production, and that it was the article she felt most the want of: I therefore hastened to communicate the intelligence to her, and she expressed the liveliest joy: "This," said she, "is the most useful thing you have found; lose not a moment in searching for more of these leaves, and bring me the most you can of them; I will make you stockings, shirts, clothes, thread, ropes——In short, give me flax, looms, and frames, and I shall be at no loss in the employment of it." I could not help smiling at the scope she gave to her imagination, on the bare mention of flax, though so much was to be done between the gathering the leaves, and having the cloth she was already sewing in idea. Fritz whispered a word in Jack's ear; both went to the stable, and without asking my leave, one mounted Lightfoot, the other the buffalo, and galloped off towards the wood so fast that I had no time to call them back: they were already out of sight: their eagerness to oblige their mother in this instance pleaded their forgiveness, and I suffered them to go on without following them, purposing to proceed and bring them back if they did not soon return. In waiting for them I conversed with my wife, who pointed out to me, with all the animation and spirit of useful enterprise so natural to her character, the various machinery I must contrive for spinning and weaving her flax for the manufactory of cloths, with which she said she should be able to equip us from head to foot; in speaking of which, her eyes sparkled with doing good, the love of the purest kind of joy, and I promised her all she desired of me.

In a quarter of an hour our deserters came back. Like true hussars, they had foraged the woods, and heavily loaded their cattle with the precious plant, which they threw at their mother's feet with joyful shouts. It was next proposed that all should assist her in preparations for the work she was to engage in, and previously in steeping the flax.

Fritz.—How is flax prepared, father, and what is meant by steeping it?

Father.—Steeping flax, or hemp, is exposing it in the open air, by spreading it on the ground to receive the rain, the wind and the dew, in order in a certain degree to liquefy the plant; by this means, the ligneous parts of the flax are separated with more ease from the fibrous; a kind of vegetable glue that binds them is dissolved and it can then be perfectly cleaned with great ease, and the parts selected which are fit for spinning.

Fritz.—But may not the natural texture of this part be destroyed by exposing it so long to wet?

Father.—That certainly may happen when the process is managed injudiciously, and the flax not duly turned; the risk, however, is not great, the fibrous part has a peculiar tenacity, which enables it to resist longer the action of humidity; flax may be even steeped altogether in water without injury. Many think this the best and quickest method, and I am of their opinion.

My wife coincided with me, especially in the sultry climate we inhabited; she therefore proposed to soak the flax in Flamingo Marsh, and begin by making up the leaves in bundles, as they do hemp in Europe. We agreed to her proposal, and joined in this previous and necessary preparation of the flax during the rest of the day.

Next morning the ass was put to the small light car, loaded with bundles of leaves; Francis and the monkey sat on them, and the remainder of the family gayly followed with shovels and pickaxes. We stopped at the marsh, divided our large bundles into smaller, which we placed in the water, pressing them down with stones, and leaving them in this state till it was time to remove and set them in the sun to dry, and thus render the stems soft and easy to peel. In the course of this work we noticed with admiration the instinct of the flamingoes, in building their cone-shaped nests above the level of the marsh, each nest having a recess in the upper part, in which the eggs are securely deposited, while the contrivance enables the female to sit with her legs in the water: the nest of clay closely cemented, so as to resist all danger from the element till the young can swim.

In a fortnight we took the flax out of the water, and spread it on the grass in the sun, where it dried so rapidly that we we were able to load it on our cart the same evening, and carry it to Falcon's Stream, where it was put by till we had time to make the beetles, wheels, reels, carding-combs, &c., required by our chief for the manufacture. It was thought best to

reserve this task for the rainy season, and to employ the present time in collecting a competent stock of provisions for ourselves and for all the animals. Occasional slight showers, the harbingers of winter, had already come on: the temperature, which hitherto had been warm and serene, became gloomy and variable; the sky was often darkened with clouds, the stormy winds were heard, and warned us to avail ourselves of the favorable moment to get all that might be wanted ready.

Our first care was to dig up a full supply of potatoes and yams for bread, with plenty of cocoa-nuts, and some bags of sweet acorns. It occurred to us while digging, that the ground being thus opened and manured with the leaves of plants, we might sow in it to advantage the remainder of our European corn. Notwithstanding all the delicacies this stranger land afforded us, the force of habit still caused us to long for the bread we had been fed with from childhood: we had not yet laid ourselves out for regular tillage, and I was inclined to attempt the construction of a plough of some sort as soon as we had a sufficient stock of corn for sowing. For this time, therefore, we committed it to the earth with little preparation; the season, however, was proper for sowing and planting, as the ensuing rain would moisten and swell the embryo grain, which otherwise would perish in an arid, burning soil. We accordingly expedited the planting of the various palm-trees we had discovered in our excursions, at Tent-House, carefully selecting the smallest and the youngest. In the environs we formed a large handsome plantation of sugar-canes, so as to have hereafter everything useful and agreeable around us, and thus be dispensed from the usual toil and loss of time in procuring them.

These different occupations kept us several weeks in unremitted activity of mind and body; our cart was incessantly in motion, conveying home our winter stock: time was so precious, that we did not even make regular meals, and limited ourselves to bread, cheese, and fruits, in order to shorten them, to return quickly to our work, and despatch it before the bad season should set in.

Unfortunately, the weather changed sooner than we had expected, and than, with all our care, we could be prepared for: before we had completed our winter establishment, the rain fell in such heavy torrents, that I could not refrain from painful apprehension in surmising how we should resist such a body of water, that seemed to change the whole face of the country into a lake.

The first thing to be done, was to remove our aerial abode, and to fix our residence at the bottom of the tree, between the roots and under the tarred roof I had erected; for it was no longer possible to remain above, on account of the furious winds that threatened to bear us away, and deluged our beds with rain through the large opening in front, our only protection here being a piece of sail-cloth, which was soon dripping wet and rent to pieces. In this condition we were forced to take down our hammocks, mattresses, and every article that could be injured by the rain; and most fortunate did we deem ourselves in having made the winding stairs, which sheltered us during the operation of the removal. The stairs served afterwards for a kind of lumber-room; we kept all in it we could dispense with, and most of our culinary vessels, which my wife fetched as she happened to want them. Our little sheds between the roots, constructed for the poultry and the cattle, could scarcely contain us all; and the first days we passed in this manner were painfully embarrassing, crowded all together, and hardly able to move in these almost dark recesses, which the fœtid smell from the close adjoining animals rendered almost insupportable: in addition, we were half stifled with smoke whenever we kindled a fire, and drenched with rain when we opened the doors. For the first time since our disaster, we sighed for the comfortable houses of our dear country:—but what was to be done! we were not there, and losing our courage and our temper would only increase the evil. I strove to raise the spirits of my companions, and obviate some of the inconveniences. The now doubly-precious winding stair, was, as I have said, every way useful to us; the upper part of it was filled with numerous articles that gave us room below; and as it was lighted and sheltered by windows, my wife often worked there, seated on a stair, with her little Francis at her feet. We confined our live-stock to a smaller number, and gave them a freer current of air, dismissing from the stalls those animals that, from their properties, and being natives of the country, would be at no loss in providing for themselves. That we might not lose them altogether, we tied bells round their necks; Fritz and I sought and drove them in every evening that they did not spontaneously return. We generally got wet to the skin and chilled with cold, during the employment, which induced my wife to contrive for us a kind of clothing more suitable to the occasion; she took two seamen's shirts from the chest, and with some pieces of old coats, she made us a kind of cloth

hoods joined together at the back, and well formed for covering the head entirely: we melted some elastic gum, which we spread over the shirts and hoods: and the articles thus prepared answered every purpose of waterproof overalls, that were of essential use and comfort to us. Our young rogues were ready with their scornful jokes the first time they saw us in them; but afterwards they would have been rejoiced to have had the same: this, however, the reduced state of the gum did not allow, and we contented ourselves with wearing them in turn, when compelled to work in the rain, from the bad effects of which they effectually preserved us.

As to the smoke, our only remedy was to open the door when we made a fire; and we did without as much as we could, living on milk and cheese, and never making a fire but to bake cakes: we then used the occasion to boil a quantity of potatoes, and salt meat enough to last us a number of days. Our dry wood was also nearly expended, and we thanked Heaven the weather was not very cold; for had this been the case, our other trials would have much increased. A more serious concern was, our not having provided sufficient hay and leaves for our European cattle, which we kept housed to avoid losing them; the cow, the ass, the sheep, and the goat, the two last of which were increased in number, requiring a large quantity of provender, so that we were ere long forced to give them our potatoes and sweet acorns, which, by the bye, they found very palatable, and we remarked that they imparted a delicate flavor to their milk; —the cow, the goats, and even the sheep, amply supplied us with that precious article: milking, cleaning the animals, and preparing their food, occupied us most of the morning, after which we were usually employed in making flour of the manioc root, with which we filled the large gourds, previously placed in rows. The gloom of the atmosphere and our low window-less habitation, sensibly abridged our daylight; fortunately, we had laid in a huge store of candles, and felt no want of that article: when darkness obliged us to light up, we got round the table, where a large taper fixed on a gourd gave us an excellent light, which enabled my wife to pursue her occupation with the needle, while I on my part was forming a journal, and recording what the reader has perused of the narrative of our shipwreck and residence in this island, assisted from time to time by my sons and their admirable mother, who did not cease to remind me of various incidents belonging to the story. To Ernest, who wrote a fine hand, was entrusted the care of

writing off my pages in a clear, legible character: Fritz and Jack amused themselves by drawing from memory, the plants and animals which had most struck their observation; while one and all contributed to teach little Francis to read and write: we concluded the day with a devotional reading in the Holy Bible, performed by each in turn, and we then retired to rest, happy in ourselves, and in the innocent and peaceful course of our existence. Our kind and faithful steward often surprised us agreeably on our return from looking after the cattle, by lighting a fagot of dried bamboo, and quickly roasting by the clear and fervent heat it produced, a chicken, a pigeon, or duck, from our poultry yard, or some of the thrushes we had preserved in butter, which were excellent, and welcomed as a treat to reward extraordinary toil. Every four or five days the kind creature made us new fresh butter in the gourd-churn; and this with some fragrant honey spread on our manoic cakes, formed a collation that would have raised the envy of European epicures. These unexpected regales represented to our grateful hearts so many little festivals, the generous intention of which made us forget our bad accommodations and confinement.

The fragments of our meals belonged in right to our domestic animals, as part of the family. We had now four dogs, the eagle, and the monkey, to feed; they relied with just confidence on the kindness of their respective masters, who certainly would have deprived themselves to supply the wants of their helpless dependants. Francis had taken under his mighty protection the two puppies; my wife, Flora; and I, the brave Turk:—thus each had his attendant, of which he took care, and no one was dispensed from the offices of tenderness and vigilance. If the buffalo, the onagra, and pig, had not found sustenance abroad, they must have been killed or starved, and that would have given us much pain. In the course of these discomforts, it was unanimously resolved on, that we would not pass another rainy season exposed to the same evils; even my gentle-tempered and most beloved consort, was a little ruffled now and then with our inconvenient situation, and insisted more than any of us on the plan of building elsewhere a more spacious winter residence: she wished, however, to return to our castle in the tree every summer, and we all joined with her in that desire. The choice of a fresh abode now engrossed our attention, and Fritz in the midst of consultation came forward triumphantly with a book he had found in the bottom of our clothes chest.

"Here," said he, "is our best counsellor and model, *Robinson Crusoe;* since Heaven has destined us to a similar fate, whom better can we consult? As far as I remember, he cut himself a habitation out of the solid rock: let us see how he proceeded; we will do the same, and with greater ease, for he was alone; we are six in number, and four of us able to work." This idea of Fritz was hailed by all. We assembled, and read the famous history with an ardent interest; it seemed, though so familiar, quite new to us: we entered earnestly into every detail, and derived considerable information from it, and never failed to feel lively gratitude towards God, who had rescued us all together, and not permitted one only of us to be cast, a solitary being, on the island. The occurence of this thought produced an overwhelming sense of affection among us; we could not refrain from throwing ourselves into each other's arms, embracing repeatedly, and the pathetic scene ended in mutual congratulations.

Francis expressed his wish to have a *Man Friday;* Fritz thought it better to be without such a companion, and to have no savages to contend with. Jack was for the savages, warfare and encounters. The final result of our deliberations was to go and survey the rocks round Tent-House, and examine whether any of them could be excavated for our purpose.

Our last job for the winter, undertaken at my wife's solicitation, was a beetle for her flax, and some carding combs. I filed large nails till they were even, round and pointed; I fixed them at equal distances in a sheet of tin, and raised the sides of it like a box; I then poured melted lead between the nails and the sides, to give firmness to their points, which came out four inches. I nailed this tin on a board, and the machine was fit for work. My wife was impatient to use it; and the drying, peeling, and spinning her flax, became from this time a source of inexhaustible delight.

CHAPTER XXIX.

SPRING;—SPINNING;—SALT MINE.

I can hardly describe our joy, when, after many tedious and gloomy weeks of rain, the sky began to brighten, the sun to dart its benign rays on the humid earth, the winds to be lulled, and the state of the air became mild and serene. We issued from our dreary hovels with joyful shouts, and walked round our habitation breathing the enlivening balmy ether, while our eyes were regaled with the beauteous verdure beginning to shoot forth on every side. Reviving nature opened her arms, every creature seemed reanimated, and we felt the genial influence of that glorious luminary which had been so long concealed from our sight, and now returned, like a friend who had been absent, to bring us back blessings and delight. We rapidly forgot in new sensations the embarrassments and weary hours of that wet season, and with jocund, hopeful hearts, looked forward to the toils of summer as enviable amusements.

The vegetation of our plantation of trees was rapidly advancing; the seed we had thrown into the ground was sprouting in slender blades that waved luxuriantly; a pleasing tender foliage adorned the trees; the earth was enamelled with an infinite variety of flowers, whose agreeable tints diversified the verdure of the meadows. Odorous exhalations were diffused through the atmosphere; the song of the birds was heard around; they were seen between the leaves, joyfully fluttering from branch to branch; their various forms and brilliant plumage heightened this delightful picture of spring, and we were at once struck with wonder and penetrated with gratitude towards the Creator of so many beauties. Under these impressions we celebrated the ensuing Sunday in the open air, and, if possible, with stronger emotions of piety than heretofore. The blessings which surrounded us were ample compensation for some uneasy moments which had occasionally intervened: and our hearts, filled with fresh zeal, were resolved to be resigned, if it should be the will of God, to pass the residue of our days in this solitude with serenity of soul. The force of paternal feelings, no doubt, made me sometimes form other wishes for my children; but these I buried in my own breast, for fear of

disturbing my tranquility: but if I secretly indulged a desire for some event that might prolong and even increase their happiness I nevertheless wholly submitted all to the Divine will.

Our summer occupations commenced by arranging and thoroughly cleaning Falcon's Nest, the order and neatness of which the rain and dead leaves blown by the wind had disturbed; in other respects, however, it was not injured, and in a few days we rendered it fit for our reception; the stairs were cleared, the rooms between the roots re-occupied, and we were left with leisure to proceed to other employments. My wife lost not a moment in resuming the process of her flax. Our sons hastened to lead the cattle to the fresh pastures; whilst it was my task to carry the bundles of flax into the open air, where, by heaping stones together, I contrived an oven sufficiently commodious to dry it well. The same evening we all set to work to peel and afterwards to beat it and strip off the bark; and lastly to comb it with my carding machine, which fully answered the purpose. I took this laborious task on myself, and drew out such distaffs full of long soft flax ready for spinning, that my enraptured wife ran to embrace me, to express her thankfulness, requesting me to make her a wheel without delay, that she might enter upon her favorite work.

At an early period of my life I had practiced turnery for my amusement; now, however, I was unfortunately destitute of the requisite utensils; but as I had not forgotten the arrangement and component parts of a spinning-wheel and reel, I by repeated endeavors found means to accomplish those two machines to her satisfaction; and she fell so eagerly to spinning, as to allow herself no leisure even for a walk, and scarcely time to dress our dinners: nothing so much delighted her as to be left with her little boy, whom she employed to reel as fast as she could spin, and sometimes the other three were also engaged in turns at the wheel, to forward her business whilst she was occupied in culinary offices; but not one of them was found so tractable as the cool-tempered, quiet Ernest, who preferred this to more laborious exertions. Our first visit was to Tent-House, and here we found the ravages of winter more considerable than even at Falcon's Stream: the tempest and rain had beaten down the tent, carried away a part of the sail-cloth, and made such havoc amongst our provisions, that by far the largest portion was spotted with mildew, and the remainder could be only saved by drying them

instantly. Luckily, our handsome pinnace had been for the most part spared; it was still at anchor, ready to serve us in case of need; but our tub-boat was in too shattered a state to be of any further service.

In looking over the stores, we were grieved to find the gunpowder, of which I had left three barrels in the tent, the most damaged. The contents of two were rendered wholly useless. I thought myself fortunate on finding the remaining one in tolerable condition, and derived from this great and irreparable loss, a cogent motive to fix upon winter-quarters, where our stores, our only wealth, would not be exposed to such cruel dilapidations.

Fritz and Jack were constant in their endeavors to make me undertake the excavation in the rock, but I had no hopes of success. Robinson Crusoe found a spacious cavern that merely required arrangement; no such cavity was apparent in our rock, which bore the aspect of extreme solidity and impenetrableness; so that, with our limited powers, three or four summers would scarcely suffice to execute the design. Still the earnest desire of a more substantial habitation, to defend us from the elements, perplexed me incessantly, and I resolved to make at least the attempt of cutting out a recess that should protect the gunpowder, the most valuable of all our treasures. I accordingly set off one day, accompanied by my two boys, leaving their mother at her spinning with Ernest and Francis. We took with us pickaxes, chisels, hammers, and iron levers, to try what impression we could make on the rock. I choose a part nearly perpendicular, and much better situated than our tent: the view from it was enchanting, for it embraced the whole range of Safety Bay, the banks of Jackal's Stream, and Family Bridge, and many of the picturesque projections of the rocks. I marked out with charcoal the opening we wished to make, and we began the heavy toil of piercing the quarry. We made so little progress the first day, that in spite of our courage, we were tempted to relinquish the undertaking; we persevered; however, and my hope was somewhat revived as I perceived the stone was of a softer texture as we penetrated deeper: I concluded from this, that the ardent rays of the sun striking upon the rock had hardened the external layer, and that the stone within would increase in softness as we advanced; and it occured to me, that the substance might be a species of calcareous stone. When I had cut about a foot in depth, we could loosen it with a spade like dried mud: this determined

me to proceed with double ardor, and my boys assisted me with a spirit and zeal beyond their years.

After a few days of assiduous labor we measured the opening, and found we had already advanced seven feet into the rock. Fritz removed the fragments in a barrow, and discharged them in a line before the place, to form a sort of terrace; I applied my own labor to the upper part, to enlarge the aperture: Jack, the smallest of the three, was able to get in and cut away below. He had with him a long iron bar sharpened to the end, which he drove in with a hammer, to loosen a piece at the time; suddenly he bawled out: "It is pierced through father! Fritz, I have pierced it through!"

"Hah, ha, Master Jack at his jokes again!—But let us hear, what have you pierced? Is it the mountain? Not peradventure your hand or foot, Jack?" cried I.

Jack.—No, no, it is the mountain (the rocks resounding with his usual shout of joy); huzza, huzza! I have pierced the mountain!

Fritz now ran to him. "Come, let us see then: it is no doubt the globe at least you have pierced," said he, in a bantering tone; "you should have pushed on your tool boldly, till you reached Europe, which they say is under our feet; I should have been glad to peep into that hole."

Jack.—Well, then, peep you may, but I hardly know what you will see; come and look how far the iron is gone in, and tell me if it is all my boasting.

"Come hither, father," said Fritz, "this is really extraordinary; his iron bar seems to have got to a hollow place; see, it can be moved in every direction." I approached, thinking the incident worth attention: I took hold of the bar, which was still in the rock, and working it about, I made a sufficient aperture for one of my sons to pass, and I observed that in reality the rubbish fell, within the cavity, which I judged from the falling of the stones, was not much deeper than the part we stood on. My two lads offered to go in together and examine it: this however, I forbade. I even made them remove from the opening, as I smelled the mephitic air that issued abundantly from it, and began myself to feel giddiness in consequence of having gone too near; so that I was compelled to withdraw quickly, and inhale a purer air. "Beware, my dear children," said I, in terror, "of entering such places, for the loss of life might be the consequence."

Jack.—How can that be, father?

Father.—Because the air is mephitic, that is, foul, and therefore unfit for breathing in.

Jack.—How does air become mephitic?

Father.—In different ways: for example, when it is replete with noxious vapors, or when it contains too many igneous or inflammable particles, or when it is too heavy or dense, as fixed air is: but in general, when it merely loses its elasticity, it no longer passes freely into the lungs; respiration is then stopped, and suffocation speedily ensues, because air is indispensable to life and the circulation of the blood.

Jack.—Then all to be done is, to be off quickly when one feels a stoppage of breath.

Father.—This is certainly the natural course, when it can be taken; but the attack usually begins by a vertigo or dizziness of the head so violent as to intercept motion, which is followed by an insurmountable oppression; efforts are made to breathe, fainting follows, and without speedy help, a sudden death takes place.

Fritz.—What assistance can be administered?

Father.—The first thing to be done is to remove the person so affected to pure fresh air, and to throw cold water over his body; he must then be well dried, and afterwards rubbed with warm cloths; vital air must be infused, or tobacco-smoke thrown up; in short, he must be treated like a drowned person till signs of reanimation appear, which is not always the result.

Fritz.—But do you think, father, the air in this cavern is mephitic, as you term it, or dangerous to breathe in?

Father.—All air confined and wholly separated from that of the atmosphere, gradually loses its elasticity, and can no longer pass through the lungs: in this state it generates injurious qualities that interrupt the process of respiration. It is in this act that the atmospheric air diffused around us, unites intimately with the blood, to which it communicates one of its most essential parts, called vital air, for without it life cannot be supported. This air failing, respiration ceases, and death succeeds in a few minutes: the consequence is similar when this air is impregnated too abundantly with injurious parts.

Fritz.—And by what is good air known? How judge that one may respire freely at a few paces from this mephitic cave?

Father.—This becomes evident when inspiration and expiration are performed with ease; besides, there is an infal-

lible test: fire does not burn in foul air, yet it is made the means of correcting it. We must light a fire of sufficient strength in this hole to purify the air within, and render it friendly to respiration: at first the bad air will extinguish the fire, but by degrees the fire in its turn will expel the bad air and burn freely.

Fritz.—Oh! that will be an easy matter.

The boys now hastened to gather some dry moss, which they made into bundles; they then struck a light and set fire to them, and threw the moss blazing into the opening; but, as I had described, the fire was extinguished at the very entrance, thus proving that the air within was highly mephitic; I now saw that it was to be rarified by another and more effectual method; I recollected that we had brought from the vessel a chest that was full of grenades, rockets, and other fireworks, which had been shipped for the purpose of making signals, as well as for amusement. I sought it hastily, and took some of these, together with an iron mortar for throwing; out of it I laid a train of gunpowder, and set fire to the end which reached to where we stood: a general explosion took place, and an awful report reverberated through the dark recess; the lighted grenades flew about on all sides like brilliant meteors, rebounding and bursting with a terrific sound. We then sent in the rockets, which had also a full effect. They hissed in the cavity like flying dragons, disclosing to our astonished view its vast extent. We beheld, too, as we thought, numerous dazzling bodies, that sparkled suddenly, as if by magic, and disappeared with the rapidity of lightening, leaving the place in total darkness. A squib bursting in the form of a star, presented a spectacle we wished to be prolonged. On its separation a crowd of little winged genii came forth, each holding a small lighted lamp, and the whole fluttering in every direction with a thousand varied reverberations: everything in the cavern shone brilliantly, and offered instantly a truly enchanting sight; but they dropped in succession, fell to the ground without noise, and vanished like ethereal spirits.

After having played off our fireworks, I tried lighted straw: to our great satisfaction, the bundles thrown in were entirely consumed; we could then reasonaly hope nothing was to be feared from the air; but there still remained the danger of plunging into some abyss, or of meeting with a body of water. From these considerations, I deemed it more prudent to

defer our entrance into this unknown recess, till we had lights to guide us through it. I despatched Jack on the buffalo to Falcom Stream, to tell his mother and brothers of our discovery, directing him to return with them, and bring all the tapers that were left: my intention was to tie them together to the end of a stick, and proceed with it lighted to examine the cavity. I had not sent Jack on his embassy without a meaning; the boy possessed from nature a lively imagination: I knew he would tell his mother such wonders of the enchanted grotto, of the fireworks, and all they had brought to our view, that he would induce her to accompany him without delay, and bring us lights to penetrate the obscure sanctuary.

Jack, overjoyed, sprang on the buffalo, gayly smacked his whip, and set off so boldly, that I almost trembled for his safety. The intrepid boy was unincumbered by fear, and made a complete race-horse of his horned Bucephalus.

In three or four hours we saw them coming up in our car of state, which was now drawn by the cow and the ass, and conducted by Ernest. Francis too played his part in the cavalcade, and contended with his brother for the ropes that served as reins. Jack, mounted on his buffalo, came prancing before them; blew through his closed hand, in imitation of the French horn, and now and then whipped the ass and cow to quicken their motion. When they had crossed Family Bridge, he came forward on the gallop; and when he got to us, jumped off the beast, shook himself, took a spring or two from the ground and thus refreshed, ran up to the car to hand his mother out, like a true and gallant knight.

I immediately lighted some of the tapers; but not together, as I had intended; I preferred each taking one in his right hand, an implement in his left, another taper in his pocket, flint and steel; and thus we entered the rock in solemn procession. I took the lead, my sons followed me, and their beloved mother, with the youngest brought up the rear. The interest and curiosity she felt were not unalloyed with tender apprehensions; and indeed I felt myself that sort of fear which an unknown object is apt to excite, even our dogs that accompanied us betrayed some timidity, and did not run before as usual; but we had scarcely advanced four paces within the grotto, when all was changed to more than admiration and surprise. The most beautiful and magnificent spectacle presented itself. The sides of the cavern sparkled like diamonds, the light from our six tapers was

reflected from all parts, and had the effect of a grand illumination. Innumerable crystals of every length and shape hung from the top of the vault; which uniting with those of the sides, formed pillars, alters, entablatures, and a variety of other figures, composing the most splendid masses. We might have fancied ourselves in the palace of a fairy, or an illumined temple. In some places, all the colors of the prism were emitted from the angles of the crystals, and gave them the appearance of the finest precious stones. The waving of the lights, their bright coruscations, black points here and there intervening, the dazzling lustre of others—the whole, in short, delighted and enchanted the sight and the fancy.

The astonishment of my family was so great as to be almost ludicrous; they were all in a kind of dumb stupor, half imagining it was a dream. For my own part, I had seen stalactites, and read the description of the famous grotto of Antiparos; my sensations, therefore, were not the same. The bottom was level, covered with a white and very fine sand, as if purposely strewed, and so dry, that I could not see the least mark of humidity anywhere. All this led me to hope the spot would be healthy, convenient, and eligible for our proposed residence. I now formed a particular conjecture as to the nature of the crystallizations shooting out on all sides, and and especially from the arch-roof. They could scarcely be of that species of rock-crystals produced by the slow filtering of water falling in drops and coagulating in succession, and seldom found in excavations exhibiting so dry a nature, nor ever with so many of the crystals perpendicular and perfectly smooth. I was impatient to evince the truth or falsehood of this idea by an experiment, and discovered with great joy, on breaking a portion of one of them, that I was in a grotto of *sal gem*, that is, fossil or rock salt, found in the earth in solid crystallized masses, generally above a bed of spar or gypsum, and surrounded by layers of fossils or rock. The discovery of this fact, which no longer admitted a doubt, pleased us all exceedingly. The shape of crystals, their little solidity, and finally their saline taste, were decisive evidences.

How highly advantageous to us and our cattle was this superabundance of salt, pure and ready to be shovelled out for use, and preferable in all respects to what we collected on the shore, which required to be refined! As we advanced in the grotto, remarkable figures formed by the saline matter everywhere presented themselves; columns reaching from the bottom to the top of the vault appeared to sustain

it, and some even had cornices and capitals: here and there undulating masses which at certain distances resembled the sea. From the variegated and whimsical forms we beheld, fancy might make a thousand creations at its pleasure: windows, large open cupboards, benches, church ornaments, grotesque figures of men and animals; some like polished crystals or diamonds, others like blocks of alabaster.

We viewed with unwearied curiosity this repository of wonders, and we had all lighted our second taper, when I observed on the ground in some places a number of crystal fragments that seemed to have fallen off from the upper part. Such a separation might recur, and expose us to danger; a piece falling on any of our heads might prove instantly fatal. But on closer inspection, I was convinced they had not dropped of themselves spontaneously; the whole mass was too solid for fragments of that size to have been so detached from it; and had dampness loosened them, they would have dissolved gradually: I concluded they were broken off by the concussion caused by the explosion of our artillery and fireworks, and I thought it prudent to retire, as other loosened pieces might unexpectedly fall on us. I directed my wife and three of the children to place themselves in the entrance, while Fritz and I carefully examined every part that threatened danger. We loaded our guns with ball, and fired them into the centre of the cavern, to be more fully assured of what produced the separation of the former pieces; one or two more fell; the rest remained immovable, though we went round with long poles, and struck all we could reach. We at length felt confident, that in point of solidity there was nothing to fear, and that we might proceed without dread of accident. Loud exclamations, projects, consultations, now succeeded to our mute astonishment! Many schemes were formed for converting this magnificient grotto into a convenient and agreeable mansion for our abode. We had possession of the most eligible premises; the sole business was to turn them to the best account; and how to effect this was our unceasing theme: some voted for our immediate establishment there, but they were opposed by more sagacious counsel, and it was resolved that Falcon's Stream should still be our headquarters till the end of the year.

CHAPTER XXX.

HOUSE IN THE SALT ROCK;—HERRING FISHERY.

The lucky discovery of a previously existing cavern in the rock had, as must be supposed considerably lessened our labor: excavation was no longer requisite: I had more room than was wanted for the construction of our dwelling; to render it habitable was the present object, and to do this did not seem a difficult task. The upper bed of the rock, in front of the cavern, through which my little Jack had dug so easily, was of a soft nature, and to be worked with moderate effort. I hoped also that, being now exposed to the air and heat of the sun, it would become by degrees as hard and compact as the first layer that had given me so much trouble. From this consideration I began, while it retained its soft state, to make openings for the doors and windows of the front. This I regulated by the measurement of those I had fixed in my winding staircase, which I had removed for the purpose of placing them in our winter tenements. Intending Falcon's Nest in the future as a rural retreat for the hottest days of summer, the windows of the staircase became unnecessary; and as to the door, I preferred making one of bark similar to that of the tree itself, as it would the better conceal our abode, should we at any time experience invasion from savages or other enemies: the door and windows were therefore taken to Tent-House, and to be hereafter fixed in the rock. I had previously marked out the openings to be cut for the frames, which were received into grooves for greater convenience and solidity. I took care not to break the stone taken from the apertures, or at least to preserve it in large pieces, and these I cut with the saw and chisel into oblongs an inch and a half in thickness, to serve as tiles. I laid them in the sun, and was gratified in seeing they hardened quickly; I then removed them, and my sons placed them in order against the side of the rock, till they were wanted for our internal arrangements.

When I could enter the cavern freely with a good doorway, and it was sufficiently lighted by the windows, I erected a partition, for the distribution of our apartments and other conveniences. The extent of the place afforded ample room for my design, and even allowed me to leave several spaces

in which salt and other articles could be stored. At the request of my children, I was cautious to injure as little as possible the natural embellishments of the new family mansion; but with all my care, I could not avoid demolishing them in the division allotted to the stables: cattle are fond of salt, and would not have failed to eat away these ornaments, and perhaps in a prejudicial quantity: however, to gratify and reward my obedient children, I preserved the finest of the pillars, and the most beautiful pieces to decorate our saloon. The large ones served us for chairs and tables; the brilliant pilasters, at once enlivened and adorned the apartment, and at night multiplied the reflection of the lights. I laid out the interior in the following manner. A very considerable space was first partitioned off in two divisions; the one on the right was appropriated to our residence; that on the left was to contain the kitchen, stables, and work-room. At the end of the second division, where windows could not be placed, the cellar and store-room were to be formed; the whole separated by partition-boards, with doors of communication, so as to give us a pleasant and comfortable abode. Favored so unexpectedly by what nature had already effected of the necessary labor, we were far from repining ungratefully at what remained to be done, and entertained full hope of completing the undertaking, or at least the chief parts before winter.

The side we designed to lodge in, was divided into three apartments, the first, next the door, was the bedroom for my wife and me, the second a dining parlor, and the last a bedroom for the boys: as we had only three windows, we put one in each sleeping-room; the third was fixed in the kitchen, where my wife would often be. A grating for the present fell to the lot of our dining-room, which when too cold, was to be exchanged for one of the other apartments. I contrived a good fire-place in the kitchen, near the window; I pierced the rock a little above, and four planks nailed together, and passing through this opening, answered the purpose of a chimney. We made the work-room near the kitchen, of sufficient dimensions for the performance of undertakings of some magnitude; it served also to keep our cart and sledge in, lastly the stables, which were formed into four compartments, to separate the different species of animals, occupied all the bottom of the cavern on this side; on the other were the cellar and the magazine.

It is readily imagined, that a plan of this extent was not to be executed as if by enchantment, and that we satisfied our-

selves in the first instance with doing what was most urgent, reserving the residue for winter; yet every day forwarded the business more than we had been aware of. On every excursion, we brought something from Falcon's Stream, that found its place in the new house, where we deposited likewise, in safety, the remaining provisions from the tent.

The long stay we made at Tent-House during these employments, furnished us an opportunity of perceiving several advantages we had not reckoned upon. Immense turtles were often seen on the shore, where they deposited their eggs in the sand, and they regaled us with a rich treat; but, extending our wishes, we thought of getting possession of the turtles themselves for live stock, and of feasting on them whenever we pleased. As soon as we saw one on the sands, one of my boys was despatched to cut off its retreat; meanwhile we approached the animal, and quietly, without doing it any injury, turned it on its back, then passed a long cord through the shell, and tied the end of it to a stake, which we fixed close to the edge of the water. This done, we set the prisoner on his legs again; it hastened into the sea, but could not go beyond the end of the cord; apparently it was all the happier, finding food with more facility along shore than out at sea; and we enjoyed the idea of being able to take it when wanted. I say nothing of sea-lobsters, oysters, and many other small fishes, which we could catch in any number. The large lobsters, whose flesh was tough and coarse, were given to the dogs who preferred them to potatoes; but we shortly after became possessors of another excellent winter provision, which chance unexpectedly procured us.

One morning, when near Safety Bay, a singular sort of spectacle presented itself. At some distance from the shore an extensive surface of the water seemed in a state of ebullition, as if heated by a subterraneous fire: it swelled, subsided, foamed, like boiling water: a large number of acquatic birds hovered over it, sometimes they darted along the surface of the water, sometimes rose in the air, flying in a circle, pursuing each other in every direction; we were at a loss to judge whether sportiveness, pleasure, or warfare produced their motions.

My wife and the boys stood for a long time admiring this phenomenon and indulged themselves in various ludicrous conjectures concerning it, till I at last informed them that the movable bank before us was neither more nor less than a shoal of herrings about to enter Safety Bay, and fall into our

hands. All now had questions without end to propose about their appearing in such numbers, and I answered, that at a certain season, herrings leave the Frozen Sea together in a heap. They swim so close to each other, and occupy such a space, as to appear like a bank or island of sand, several leagues in breadth, some fathoms deep, and sometimes above a hundred thousand long. They afterwards divide into bodies, directing their course to the coasts and bays, where they spawn, that is, leave their eggs among the stones and sea-plants, and to these spots fishermen from all parts go to catch them. The herring appear eager to reach those parts where the tide is lowest, to escape the voracity of the large fishes which pursue them, by getting into shallow water; but in doing this, they become an easier prey to the birds and to man. Exposed to destruction in so many ways, one might wonder the species is not extinct, if nature had not provided against these accidents by their astonishing fecundity; 68,656 eggs have been found in a moderate-sized female: thus they continue undiminished, notwithstanding the vast numbers which are destroyed.

By this time the shoal of herring had reached the entrance of our bay. They made a loud rustling noise in the water, leaping over each other, and displaying their scales of silver hue. This accounted for the luminous sparks we had seen emitted from the sea, and which we could not previously explain. We had no time for further contemplation, but hastened to unharness our team, and supply the want of nets with our hands in catching the herrings: the boys used the largest gourds in lieu of pails, which were no sooner dipped in than filled; and we should have been at a loss where to stow them, had I not thought of employing the condemned boat of tubs. It was accordingly drawn to the water's edge by the buffalo, and placed on rollers. My wife and the two youngest lads cleaned it, whilst the other two went to the cavern for salt, and I quickly fitted up a sort of tent of sail-cloth on the strand, so as to keep off the rays of the sun while we were busied in salting. We then all engaged in the task, and I allotted to each a share adequate to his strength and skill. Fritz took his station in the water, to bring us the herrings as fast as caught. Ernest and Jack cleansed them with knives; their mother pounded the salt; Francis helped all, and I placed them in tubs as I had seen done in Europe; while a joyous shout declared the general activity. I put a layer of salt at the bottom of the barrel, then of fish, the heads towards the

staves, proceeding thus till my tubs were nearly full: I spread over the last layer of salt large palm-tree leaves, on these a piece of sail-cloth, and fitted in two half-rounded planks for a heading, which I pressed down with stones. This effected, I put the buffalo and the ass to the cart again, and conveyed it to our cool cellar in the rock. In a few days, when the herrings were sunk, I closed the barrels more accurately by means of a coating of clay and flax over the cloth, which kept out air and moisture completely, and secured us an excellent food for winter.

Scarcely had we finished our salting, when another novelty occurred; a number of sea-dogs came into the bay and river, that had followed the herrings with the utmost greediness, sporting in the water along shore, without evincing any fear of us. the fish presented no attraction to the palate, but its skin, tanned and dressed, makes excellent leather. I was in great need of it for straps and harness, to make saddles for Fritz and Jack to ride the onagra and buffalo, and in short for our own use to cut up into soles, belts, and pantaloons, of which articles we much wanted a fresh supply: besides, I knew the fat yielded good lamp oil, that might be substantial for tapers in the long evenings of winter; and that it would be further useful in tanning and rendering the leather pliant.

We had the good fortune to be again successful, and in a short time we secured a sufficient number of them, and carefully preserved the fat, of which we collected a large quantity; it was first put into a copper, melted and cleansed properly, then poured into casks, and kept for the tan-house and lamp. When time should allow, I purposed making soap with it, and this design excited my wife's zeal in the unpleasant though ultimately useful task we were engaged in. We also took care of the bladders which are very large for the purpose of holding liquids; the remaining parts that could not be turned to account were thrown into the river.

At this time I likewise made some improvements in our sledge, to facilitate the carrying of stores from Falcon's Stream to our dwelling in the rock at Tent-House. I raised it on two beams, on axle trees, at the extremities of which I put on the four gun-carriage wheels I had taken off the cannon from the vessel: by this alteration I obtained a light and convenient vehicle, of moderate height, on which boxes and casks could be placed. Pleased with the operations of the week, we set out all together with cheerful hearts for Fal-

con's Stream, to pass our Sunday there, and once more offer our pious thanks to the Almighty, for all the benefits He had bestowed upon his defenceless creatures.

CHAPTER XXXI.

NEW FISHERY;—NEW EXPERIMENTS;—NEW DISCOVERIES, AND HOUSE.

The enterprise of our dwelling went on, sometimes as a principal, sometimes as an intermediate occupation, according to the greater or less importance of other concerns; but though we advanced thus with moderate rapidity, the progress was such as to afford the hope of our being settled within it by the time of the rainy season.

From the moment I discovered gypsum to be the basis of the crystal salt in our grotto, I foresaw some great advantages I should derive from it; but to avoid enlarging the dimensions of our house by digging further, I tried to find a place in the continuation of the rock, which I might be able to blow up: I had soon the good fortune to meet with a narrow slip between the projections of the rock, which I could easily, by the means I proposed, convert into a passage that should terminate in our work-room. I found also on the ground a quantity of fragments of gypsum, and removed a great number of them to the kitchen, where we did not fail to bake a few of the pieces at a time when we made a fire for cooking, which, thus calcined, rubbed into a powder when cold: we obtained a considerable quantity of it, which I put carefully into casks for use, when the time should come for finishing the interior of our dwelling. My notion was, to form the walls for separating the apartments, of the squares of stone I had already provided, and to unite them together with a cement of this new ingredient, which would be the means, both of sparing the timber and increasing the beauty and solidity of the work.

It is almost incredible the immense quantity of plaster we had in a short time amassed; the boys were in a constant state of wonder as they looked at the heap. I seized the opportunity of imprinting on their minds the value of a firm and steady perseverance in an object once engaged in, the reward

of which they now so agreeably experienced. "When we first cast our eyes," on this rock, how little did we conceive it possible to transform it into a comfortable dwelling-place; yet we have not only in our persons sufficed for carpenters and masons, but even plasterers too; and so effectually, that, if we had it much at heart, we might adorn our walls with stucco, as is the mode in Europe; we possess both the materials and the intelligence; and with the addition of patience and industry, there is scarcely anything, even what at first should seem impossible, too difficult for our performance."

The first use I made of the plaster was to complete some covers I had begun with other materials for my herring tubs, four of which I stopped down to render them impenetrable to the air: the rest of the herring we intended to dry and smoke. For this purpose we erected a little sort of hut of reeds and branches, as is practised in Holland and America by the fishermen; we placed rows of sticks, reaching from side to side, across the hut, laid the herring upon them, and then lighted a heap composed of moss and fresh cut branches of trees, to produce a stronger and more effective vapor for the purpose: we made the door tight, and had soon the pleasure of adding a large stock of exquisitely flavored dried herrings to our former store for the ensuing winter.

About a month after the singular visit of the herrings, which had now entirely left our shores, we received another, and not a less profitable one, from a fish of a different species: we observed Safety Bay to be filled with large fishes, which seemed eager to push to the shore, for the purpose of depositing their eggs among the stones in fresh water.

As Jack and I were walking near the mouth of Jackal's River we perceived immense quantities of a large fish moving slowly towards the banks. As they came nearer, I distinguished the largest to be sturgeons by the pointed snout, while the smallest I pronounced to be salmon. Jack now strutted about in ecstasies. "What say you now, father?" said he; "this is nothing like your little paltry herrings! A single fish of this troop would fill a tub!" "No doubt," answered I: and with great gravity I added,—"Prithee, Jack, step into the river, and fling them to me one by one, that I may take them home to salt and dry."

He looked at me for a moment with a sort of vacant doubt if I could possibly be in earnest: then seizing suddenly a new idea—"Wait a moment, father," cried he, "and I will do so:" and he sprang off like lightning towards the cavern, from

whence he soon returned loaded with a bow and arrows, the bladders of the sea-dogs, and a ball of string to catch, as he assured me, every one of the fishes. I looked on with interest and curiosity to mark what was next to happen, while the animation of his countenance, the promptitude and boyish gracefulness of his motions, and the firm determination of his manner, afforded me the highest amusement. He tied the bladders round at certain distances with a long piece of string, to the end of which he fastened an arrow and a small iron hook; he placed the large ball of string in a hole in the ground, at a sufficient distance from the water's edge, and then he shot off an arrow, which the next instant stuck in one of the largest fishes. My young sportsman uttered a shout of joy. At the same moment Fritz joined us, and witnessed this unexpected feat without the least symptom of jealousy. "Well done, brother Jack," cried he, "but let me too have my turn." Saying this, he ran back and fetched the harpoon and the windlass, and returned to us accompanied by Ernest. We were well pleased with their opportune arrival, for the salmon Jack had pierced struggled so fiercely, that all our endeavors to hold the string were insufficient, and we dreaded at every throw to see it break, and the animal make good its escape. By degrees, however, its strength was exhausted, and aided by Fritz and Ernest, we succeeded in drawing it to a bank, where I put an end to its existence.

This fortunate beginning of a plan for a fishery inspired us all with hope and emulation. Fritz eagerly seized his harpoon and windlass; I, for my part, like Neptune, wielded a trident; Ernest prepared the large fishing-rod; and Jack his arrow with the same apparatus as before, not forgetting the bladders, which were so effectual in preventing the fish from sinking when struck. We were now more than ever sensible of our loss in the destruction of the tub-boat, with which we could have pursued the creature in the water, and have been spared much pains and difficulty; but, on the other hand, such numbers of fishes presented themselves at the mouth of the river, that we had only to choose among them. Jack's arrow, after missing twice, struck the third time a large sturgeon, which was so untractable that we had great difficulty in securing him. I too had caught two of the same fish, and had been obliged to go up to the middle in the water to manage my booty. Ernest, with his rod and line and a hook, had also taken two smaller ones. Fritz with his

harpoon, had struck a sturgeon at least eight feet in length, and the skill and strength of our whole company were found necessary to conduct him safe to shore, where we harnessed the buffalo to him with strong cords to draw him to Tent-House.

Our first concern was to clean our fish thoroughly inside, to preserve them fresh the longer. I separated the eggs I found in them, and which could not be less than thirty pounds, and put them aside to make a dish called caviar, greatly relished by the Russians and the Dutch. I took care also of the bladders, thinking it might be possible to make a glue from them, which would be useful for so many purposes. I advised my wife to boil some individuals of the salmon in oil, similar to the manner of preparing tunny fish in the Mediterranean: and while she was engaged in this process, I was at work upon the caviar and the glue. For the first, I washed the berries in several waters, and then pressed them closely in gourd-rinds in which a certain number of holes had been bored. When the water had run off, the berries were taken out in a substance like cheese, which was then conveyed to the hut to be dried and smoked. For the second, we cut the bladders into strips, which we fastened firmly by one end to a stake, and taking hold of the other with a pair of pincers, we turned them round and round till the strip was reduced to a kind of knot, and these were then placed in the sun to harden; this being the simple and only preparation necessary for obtaining glue from the ingredient. When thoroughly dry, a small quantity is put on a slow fire to melt. We succeeded so well, and our glue was of so transparent a quality, that I could not help feeling the desire to manufacture some pieces large enough for panes to a window-frame.

When these various concerns were complete, we began to meditate a plan for constructing a small boat as a substitute for the tub-raft, to come close into shore. I had a great desire to make it as the savages do, of the rind of a tree; but the difficulty was to fix on one of sufficient bulk for my purpose; for though many were to be found in our vicinity, yet each was on some account or other of too much value to be spared. We therefore resolved to make a little excursion in pursuit of a tree of capacious dimensions, and in a situation where it was not likely to yield us fruit, to refresh us with its shade, or to adorn the landscape round our dwelling.

In this expedition we as usual aimed at more than one

object: eager as we were for new discoveries, we yet allowed ourselves the time to visit our different plantations and stores at Falcon's Stream. We were also desirous to secure a new supply of the wax berry, of gourds, and of elastic gum. Our kitchen garden at Tent-House was in a flourishing condition; nothing could exceed the luxuriance of the vegetation, and almost without the trouble of cultivation, we had excellent roots and plants in abundance, which came in succession, and promised a rich supply of peas, beans of all sorts, lettuces, &c.; our principal labor was to give them water freely, that they might be fresh and succulent for use. We had besides, melons and cucumbers in great plenty, which, during the hottest weather, we valued more than all the rest. We reaped a considerable quantity of Turkey wheat from the seed we had sown, and some of the ears were a foot in length. Our sugar-canes were also in the most prosperous condition, and one plantation of pineapples on the high ground was also in progress to reward our labor with abundance of that delicious fruit.

This state of general prosperity at Tent-House gave us the most flattering expectations from our nurseries at Falcon's Stream. Full of these hopes, we one day set out altogether for our somewhat neglected former abode.

We arrived at Falcon's Stream, where we intended to pass the night. We visited the ground my wife had so plentifully sowed with grain, which had sprung up with an almost incredible rapidity and luxuriance, and was now ready for reaping. We cut down what was fairly ripe, bound it together in bundles, and conveyed it to a place where it would be secure from the attacks of more expert grain consumers than ourselves, of which thousands hovered round the booty. We reaped barley, wheat, rye, oats, peas, millet, lentils,—only a small quantity of each it is true, but sufficient to enable us to sow again plentifully at the proper season. The plant that had yielded the most was maize, a proof that it best loved the soil. It had already shown itself in abundance in our garden at Tent-House; but here there was a surface of land, the size of an ordinary field, entirely covered with its splendid golden ears, which still more than other plants attracted the voracity of the feathered race. The moment we drew near, a dozen at least of large bustards sprang up with a loud rustling noise which awakened the attention of the dogs; they plunged into the thickest parts, and routed numerous flocks of birds of all kinds and sizes, who took

hastily to flight: among the fugitives were some quails, who escaped by running; and lastly some kangaroos, whose prodigious leaps enabled them to elude the pursuit of the dogs.

We were so overcome by the surprise such an assemblage of living creatures occasioned, as to forget the resource we had in our guns; we stood as it were stupid with amazement during the first moments, and before we came to ourselves, the prey was beyond our reach, and for the most part out of sight. Fritz was the first to perceive and to feel with indignation the silly part we had been playing and to consider in what way we could repair the mischief. Without further loss of time, he took the bandage from his eagle's eyes (for the bird always accompanied him perched upon his game-bag) and showed him with his hand the bustards still flying, and at no great distance. The eagle took a rapid flight. Fritz jumped like lightning on the back of the onagra, and galloped over everything that intervened, in the direction the bird had taken, and we soon lost sight of them.

We now beheld a spectacle which in the highest degree excited our curiosity and interest: the eagle had soon his prey in view; he mounted above one of the bustards in a direct line, without losing sight of it for an instant, and then darted suddenly down; the bustards flew about in utter confusion, now seeking shelter in the bushes; then crossing each other in every direction, in the attempt to evade the common enemy; but the eagle remained steady in pursuit of the bird he had fixed upon for his prey, and disregarded all the rest: he alighted on the unlucky bustard, fixed his claws and his beak in its back, till Fritz, arrived full gallop, got down from the onagra, replaced the bandage on the eagle's eyes, seated him once more upon the game-bag, and having relieved the poor bustard from his persecutor, he shouted to us to come and witness his triumph. We ran speedily to the place.

At the conclusion of this adventure, we hastened forward to Falcon's Stream, and dressed the wounds of the bustard. We perceived with pleasure that it was a male, and foresaw the advantage of giving him for a companion to our solitary female of the same species, which was completely tamed. I threw a few more bundles of maize into the cart, and without further delay we arrived at our tree, one and all sinking with faintness from hunger, thirst, and fatigue. It was on such occasions that my exemplary partner evinced the superior fortitude and generosity of her temper: though necessarily more a sufferer than the rest, her first thought was always what she could ad-

minister to relieve us in the shortest time. On this occasion, as we had consumed our little store of wine, and could not soon and easily procure milk from the cow, she contrived to bruise some of the maize between two large stones, and then put it in a linen cloth, and with all her strength squeezed out the sap; she then added some juice from the sugar-canes, and in a few minutes presented us with a draught of cool refreshing liquid, invitingly white to the eye, and agreeable to the taste, which we received at her hands with feelings of grateful emotions.

The rest of the day was employed in picking the grains of the different sorts of corn from the stalks: we put what we wished to keep for sowing, into some gourd shells, and the Turkey wheat was laid carefully aside in sheaves till we should have time to beat and separate it. Fritz observed that we should also want to grind it; and I reminded him of the hand-mill we had secured from our departed ally, the wrecked vessel.

Fritz.—But, father, the handmill is so small, and so subject to be put out of order:—why should we not contrive a water-mill, as they do in Europe? We have surely rapid streams of water in abundance.

Father.—This is true; but such a mechanism is more difficult than you imagine. The wheel alone, I conceive, would be an undertaking far beyond our strength or our capacity. I am, however, well pleased with the activity and zeal which prompted your idea; and we will hereafter consider whether it may be worth while to bestow upon it further attention. We have abundance of time before us, for we shall not want a water-mill till our harvests are such as to produce plentiful crops of corn. In the meantime, let us be thinking of our proposed excursion for to-morrow; for we should set out, at at least, by sunrise.

We began our preparations accordingly. My wife chose some hens and two fine cocks, with the intention of taking them with us, and leaving them at large to produce a colony of their species at a considerable distance from our dwelling-places: I, with the same view, visited our beasts, and selected four young pigs, four sheep, two kids, and one male of each species; our numbers having so much increased, that we could well afford to spare these individuals for the experiment. If we succeeded in thus accustoming them to the natural temperature and productions of our island, we should have eased ourselves of the burden of their support, and should always be able to find them at pleasure.

The next morning, after loading the cart with all things necessary, not forgetting the rope ladder and the portable tent, we quitted Falcon's Stream. The animals, with their legs tied, were all stationed in the vehicle. We left abundance of food for those that remained behind: the cow, the ass, and the buffalo, were harnessed to the cart; and Fritz, mounted on his favorite, the onagra, pranced along before us, to ascertain the best and smoothest path for the cavalcade.

We took this time a new direction, which was straight forward between the rocks and the shore, that we might make ourselves acquainted with everything contained in the island we seemed destined forever to inhabit. In effect, the line proceeding from Falcon's Stream to Safety Bay might be said to be the extent of our dominions; for as to the adjacent exquisite country of the buffaloes, Fritz and I had discovered that the passage to it by the end of the rocks was so dangerous, and at so great a distance, that we could not hope to domiciliate ourselves upon its soil, as we had done on our side of the rocks. We found, as usual, much difficulty in pushing through the tall tough grass, and alternately through the thick prickly bushes which everywhere obtruded themselves. We were often obliged to turn aside, while I cut a passage with my hatchet; but these accidents seldom failed to reward my toil by the discovery of different small additions to our general comforts; among others, some roots of trees curved by nature to serve both for saddles and yokes for our beasts of burden. I took care to secure several, and put them in the cart.

In about an hour we found ourselves at the extremity of the wood, and a most singular phenomenon presented itself to our view: a small plain, or rather a grove of low bushes, to appearance almost covered with flakes of snow lay extended before us. Little Francis was the first to call our attention to it, he being seated in the cart. "Look, father," cried he, "here is a place full of snow; let me get down, and make some snowballs." I could not resist a hearty laugh, though myself completely at a loss to explain the nature of what in color and appearance bore so near a resemblance to it. Suddenly, however, a suspicion crossed my mind, and was soon confirmed by Fritz, who had darted forward on his onagra, and now returned with one hand filled with tufts of a most excellent species of cotton, so that the whole surface of low bushes was in reality a plantation of that valuable article.

This most useful of almost the whole range of vegetable productions bestowed by Providence on man, which with the cost of only a little labor, supplies him with apparel, and commodious beds for repose of his limbs, is found in such abundance in islands, that I had been surprised at not meeting with any before. The pods had burst from ripeness, and the winds had scattered around their flaky contents; the ground was strewed with them, they had gathered in tufts on the bushes, and they floated gently in the air.

The joy of this discovery was almost too great for utterance, and was shared by all but Francis, who was sorry to lose his pretty snowballs; and his mother, to soothe his regret, made the cotton into balls for him to play with, and promised him some new shirts and dresses; then turning to me, she poured out her kind heart in descriptions of all the comfortable things she should make for us, could I but construct a spinning-wheel, and then a loom for weaving. We ended with collecting as much cotton as our bags would hold, and my wife filled her pockets with the seed, to raise it in a garden at Tent-House.

It was now time to proceed; and we took a direction towards a point of land which skirted the wood of gourds, and, being high, commanded a view of the adjacent country. I conceived a wish to remove our establishment to the vicinity of the cotton plantation and the gourd wood, which furnished so many of the utensils for daily use throughout the family. I pleased myself in idea, with the view of the different colonies of animals I had imagined, both winged and quadruped; and in this elevation of my fancy, I even thought it might be practicable to erect a sort of farm-house on the soil, which we might visit occasionally, and be welcomed by the agreeable sounds of the cackling of our feathered subjects, which would so forcibly remind us of the customs of our forsaken but ever cherished country.

We accordingly reached the high ground which I found in all respects favorable to my design; behind, a thick forest gradually rose above us, which sheltered us from the north wind, and insensibly declined towards the south, ending in a plain clothed luxuriantly with grass, shrubs, and plants, and watered by a refreshing rivulet, which was an incalculable advantage for our animals of every kind, as well as for ourselves.

My plan for building was approved by all, and we lost no time in pitching our tent, and forming temporary accommoda-

tions for cooking our victuals. When we had refreshed ourselves with a meal, I, for my part, resolved to look about in all directions, that I might completely understand what we should have to depend upon in this place, in point of safety, salubrity, and general accommodation. I had also to find a tree that would suit for the proposed construction of a boat: and lastly, to meet if possible, with a group of trees, at such fit distances from each other as would assist me in my plan of erecting a farm-house. I was fortunate enough in no long time to find in this respect exactly what I wanted, and quite near the spot we on many accounts had felt to be so enviable. I returned to my companions, whom I found busily employed in preparing excellent beds of the cotton, upon which, at an earlier hour than usual, we all retired to rest.

CHAPTER XXXII.

COMPLETION OF TWO FARM-HOUSES;—A LAKE;—THE BEAST WITH A BILL;—A BOAT.

The trees that I had chosen for the construction of my farm embellishments, were for the most part one foot in diameter in the trunk; they presented the form of a tolerably regular parallelogram, with its longest side to the sea, the length twenty-four feet, and the breadth sixteen. I cut little hollow places or mortises in the trunks, at the distance of ten feet, one above the other, to form two stories. The upper one I made a few inches shorter before than behind, that the roof might be in some degree shelving; I then inserted beams five inches in diameter respectively in the mortises, and thus formed the skeleton of my building. We next nailed some laths from tree to tree, at equal distances from each other, to form the roof, and placed on them, in mathematical order, a covering composed of pieces of the bark of trees, cut into the shape of tiles, and in a sloping position, for the rain to run off in the wet season. As we had no great provision of iron nails we used for the purpose the strong pointed thorn of the acacia, which we had discovered the day before. We cut down a quantity of them, and laid them in the sun to dry, when they became as hard as iron, and were of essential service to our undertaking. We found great difficulty in peel-

ing off a sufficient quantity of bark from trees to cover our roof. I began with cutting the bark entirely round at distances of about two feet all the length of the trunk; I next divided the intervals perpendicularly into two parts, which I separated from the tree by sliding a wedge under the corners, to raise the bark by degrees; I next placed the pieces on the ground, with stones laid on them to prevent their curving, to dry in the sun; and lastly, I nailed them on the roof, where they had the appearance of fishes' scales—an effect that was not only pleasing to the eye, but reminded us of the roofs of our native land.

On this occasion we made another agreeable discovery; my wife took up the remaining chips of the bark for lighting a fire, supposing they would burn easily; we were surprised by a delicious aromatic odor, which perfumed the air. On examining the half consumed substance, we found some of the pieces to contain turpentine, and others gum-mastich, so that we might rely on a supply of these ingredients from the trees which had furnished the bark. It was less with a view to the gratifying our sense of smelling, than with the hope of being able to secure these valuable drugs for making a sort of pitch to complete our meditated boat, that we indulged our earnestness in the pursuit. The instinct of our goats, or the acuteness of their smell, discovered for us another pleasing acquisition: we observed with surprise that they ran from a distance to roll themselves on some chips of a particular bark which lay on the ground, and which they began to chew and eat greedily. Jack seized a piece also, to find out what could be the reason of so marked a preference as the goats had shown. My wife and I then followed his example, and we were all convinced that the chips were cinnamon, though not so fine a sort as that from the isle of Ceylon.

This new commodity was certainly of no great importance to us; but we regarded it with pleasure, as it might assist to distinguish some day of rejoicing. The tree from which we had take our bark was old, and the cinnamon was the coarser flavored on this account: I remembered to have read, that young trees produce this spice in much greater perfection.

After our next meal we resumed with ardor our undertaking of the farm, which we continued without interruption for several days. We formed the walls with matted reeds interwoven with pliant laths to the height of six feet; the remaining space to the roof was enclosed with only a simple grating, that the air and light might be admitted. A door was placed

in the middle of the front. We next arranged the interior with as much convenience as the shortness of the time and our reluctance to use all our timber would allow; we divided it half way up by a partition wall into two unequal parts; the the largest was intended for the sheep and goats, and the smallest for ourselves, when we should wish to pass a few days here. At the further end of the stable we fixed a house for the fowls, and above it a sort of hayloft for the forage. Before the door of entrance we placed two benches, contrived as well as we could of laths and odd pieces of wood, that we might rest ourselves under the shade of the trees, and enjoy the exquisite prospect which presented itself on all sides. Our own apartment was provided with a couple of the best bedsteads we could make of twigs of trees, raised upon four legs, two feet from the ground, and these were destined to receive our cotton mattresses. Our aim was to content ourselves for the present with these slight hints of a dwelling, and to consider hereafter what additions either of convenience or ornament could be made, such as plastering, &c., &c. All we were now anxious about, was to provide a shelter for our animal colonists, which should encourage and fix them in the habit of assembling every evening in one place. For several days, at first, we took care to fill their troughs with their favorite food, mixed with salt, and we agreed that we would return frequently to repeat this indirect mode of invitation for their society, till they should be entirely fixed in their expectation of finding it.

I had imagined we could accomplish what we wished at the farm in three or four days; but we found in the experiment that a whole week was necessary, and our victuals fell short before our work was done. We began to consider what remedy we could apply to so embarrassing a circumstance; I could not prevail upon myself to return to Falcon's Stream before I had completed my intentions at the farm, and the other objects of my journey. I had even come to the determination of erecting another building upon the site of Cape Disappointment; I therefore decided, that on this trying occasion I would invest Fritz and Jack with the important mission. They were accordingly despatched to Falcon's Stream, and to Tent-House, to fetch new supplies of cheese, ham, potatoes, dried fish, manioc bread, for our subsistence, and also to distribute fresh food to the numerous animals we had left there. I directed one to mount the onagra, and the other the buffalo. My two knights-errant, proud of their em-

bassy, set off with a brisk trot; they at my desire took with them the old ass, to bring the load of provisions. Fritz was to lead him with a bridle, while Jack smacked a whip near his ears to quicken his motions; and certainly, whether from the influence of climate, or the example of his companion the onagra, he had lost much of his accustomed inactivity; and this was the more important, as I intended to make a saddle for my wife to get on his back, and relieve herself occasionally, from the fatigue of walking.

During the absence of our purveyors, I rambled with Ernest about the neighboring soil, to make what new discoveries I could, and to procure, if possible, additions to our store of provisions. We followed the winding of a river towards the middle of the wall of rocks; our course was interrupted by a marsh which bordered a small lake, the aspect of which was enchantingly picturesque. I perceived, with joyful surprise, that the whole surface of the swampy soil was covered with a kind of wild rice, ripe on the stalk, and which attracted the voracity of large flocks of birds. As we approached, a loud rustling was heard, and we distinguished on the wing, bustards, Canada heath-fowl, and great numbers of smaller birds. We succeeded in bringing down five or six of them, and I was pleased to remark in Ernest a justness of aim that promised well for the future. The habits of his mind discovered themselves on this as on many previous occasions; he betrayed no ardor, he did everything with a slowness that seemed to imply dislike; yet the cool deliberation and constancy he applied to every attempt so effectually assisted his judgment, that he was sure to arrive at a more perfect execution than the other boys. He had practised but little in the study of how to fire a gun to the best advantage; but Ernest was a silent inquirer and observer, and accordingly his first essays were generally crowned with success.

Presently we saw Master Knips jump from Flora's back, and smell along the ground among some thick-growing plants, then pluck off something with his two paws, and eat of it voraciously. We ran to the spot to see what it could be, when to the relief of our parched palates, we found he had discovered there the largest and finest kind of strawberry, which is called in Europe the *Chili*, or *pine strawberry*. On this occasion, the proud creature, man, generously condescended to be the imitator of the monkey: we threw ourselves upon the ground, as near to Knips as we could creep, and ate as fast as we could swallow, till we felt refreshed. Many

of these strawberries were of an enormous size, and Ernest, after devouring an immense quantity, recollected his absent friends, and filled a small gourd-shell with the finest fruit, then covered them with leaves, and tied them down with a tendril from a neighboring plant, to present them in perfection to his mother. I, on my part, gathered a specimen of the rice to offer, that she might inform us if it was fit for culinary purposes.

Pursuing our way a little further along the march, we reached the lake, which we had described with so much pleasure from a distance, and whose banks, being overgrown with thick underwood, were necessarily concealed from the momentary view we had leisure to take of surrounding objects, particularly as the lake was situated in a deep and abrupt valley! No one, who is not a native of Switzerland, can conceive the emotion which trembled at my heart, as I contemplated this limpid, azure, undulating body of water, the faithful miniature of so many grand originals, which I had probably lost sight of forever! My eyes swam with tears! Alas! a single glance upon the surrounding picture, the different characters of the trees, the vast ocean in the distance, destroyed the momentary illusion, and brought back my ideas to the painful reality, that I and mine were—strangers in a desert island!

Another sort of object now presented itself to confirm the certainty that we were no longer inhabitants of Europe; it was the appearance of a quantity of swans gliding over the surface of the lake; but their color, instead of white, like those of our country, was a jetty black, and their plumage had so high a gloss as to produce, reflected on the water, the most astonishing effect. The six large feathers of the wings of this bird are white, exhibiting a singular contrast to the rest of the body, in other respects the birds were remarkable, like those of Europe, for the haughty gracefulness of their motions, and the voluptuous ease of their nature. We remained a long time in silent admiration; some of the swans pursued their course magnificently on the bosom of the blue water; others stopped and seemed to hold deliberations with their companions, or to admire themselves, or caress each other; many young ones followed in the train of the parent bird, who frequently turned half round, in execution of her watchful and matronly office. This was a spectacle which I could not allow to be interrupted by bloodshed, though Ernest, rendered a little vain by his success and my ecnomium, would

have been ready to fire upon the swans, if I had not absolutely forbidden the attempt; at the same time I consoled him with the promise, that we would endeavor to obtain a pair of the interesting creatures for our establishment at Falcon's Stream.

Flora at this moment dragged out of the water a creature she had killed. It was somewhat in shape like an otter, and like the tribe of water birds, web-footed: its tail was long and erect, and covered with a soft kind of hair; the head was very small, and the ears and eyes were almost invisible; to these more ordinary characters was added, a long flat bill, like that of a duck, which protruded from its snout, and produced so ludicrous an effect that we could not resist a hearty laugh. All the science of the learned Ernest, joined with my own, was insufficient to ascertain the name and nature of this animal. We had no resource but to remain ignorant; in the mean time we christened it by the name of *Beast with a Bill*, and decided that it should be carefully stuffed and preserved.

We now began to look for the shortest path for returning to the farm, which we reached at the same time with Fritz and Jack, who had well performed the object of their journey. We, on our parts, produced our offering of strawberries and our specimen of rice, which were welcomed with shouts of pleasure and surprise.

The beast with a bill was next examined with eager curiosity, and then laid aside for the plan I had formed. My wife proceeded to pluck and salt the birds we had killed, reserving one fresh for our supper, which we partook of together upon the benches before the door of our new habitation. We filled the stable with forage, laid a large provision of grain for the fowls within their house, and began arrangements for our departure.

The following day we took a silent leave of our animals, and directed our course towards the eminence in the vicinity of Cape Disappointment; we ascended it, and found it in every respect adapted to our wishes. From this eminence we had a view over the country which surrounded Falcon's Stream in one direction, and in others of a richly diversified extent of landscape, comprehending sea, land, and rocks. When we had paused for a short time upon the exhaustless beauties of the scene, we agreed with one voice, that it should be on this spot we would build our second cottage. A spring of the clearest water issued from the soil near the summit, and flowed over its sloping side, forming agreeable cascades in

its rapid course; in short, every feature of the picture contributed to form a landscape worthy the homage of a taste the most delicate and refined. I presented my children with an appropriate word. "Let us build here," exclaimed I, "and call the spot—*Arcadia;*" to which my wife and all agreed.

We lost no time in again setting to work; our experience at the farm enabled us to proceed with incredible rapidity, and our success was in every respect more complete. The building contained a dining-room, two bedchambers, two stables, and a store-room for preserving all kinds of provisions for man and beast. We formed the roof square, with four sloped sides, and the whole had really the appearance of a European cottage, and was finished in the short space of six days. What now remained to be done, was to fix on a tree fit for my project of a boat. After much search, I at length found one of prodigious size, and in most respects suitable to my views.

It was, however, no very encouraging prospect I had before me, being nothing less than the stripping off a piece of the bark that should be eighteen feet in length, and five in diameter; and now I found my rope-ladder of signal service; we fastened it by one end to the nearest branches, and it enabled us to work with the saw, as might be necessary, at any height from the ground. Accordingly, we cut quite round the trunk in two places, and then took a perpendicular slip from the whole length between the circles; by this means we could introduce the proper utensils for raising the rest by degrees, till it was entirely separated. We toiled with increasing anxiety, at every moment dreading that we should not be able to preserve it from breaking, or uninjured by our tools. When we had loosened about half, we supported it by means of cords and pulleys; and when all was at length detached, we let it down gently, and with joy beheld it lying safe on the grass. Our business was next to mould it to our purpose, while the substance continued moist and flexible.

The boys observed that we had now nothing more to do, than to nail a plank at each end, and our boat would be as complete as those used by the savages; but, for my own part, I could not be contented with a mere roll of bark for a boat, and when I reminded them of the paltry figure it would make following the pinnace, I heard not another word about the further pains and trouble, and they asked eagerly for my instructions. I made them assist me to saw the bark in the

middle of the two ends, the length of several feet; these two parts I folded over till they ended in a point; I kept them in this form by the help of the strong glue I had before made from fish-bladders, and pieces of wool nailed fast over the whole: this operation tended to widen the boat in the middle, and thus render it of too flat a form; but of this we counteracted by straining a cord all round, which again reduced it to the due proportion, and in this state we put it in the sun, to harden and fix. Many things were still wanting to the completion of my undertaking, but I had not with me proper utensils: I therefore despatched the boys to Tent-House, to fetch the sledge, and convey it there for our better convenience in finishing.

Before our departure for Tent-House, we collected several new plants for our kitchen-garden; and lastily, we made another trip to the narrow strait at the end of the wall of rocks, resolved, as I before mentioned, to plant there a sort of fortification of trees, which should produce the double effect of discouraging the invasion of savages, and allowing us to keep our pigs on the other side, and thus secure our different plantations from the chance of injury. We accomplished all these intentions to our entire satisfaction, and in addition, we placed a slight draw-bridge across the river beyond the narrow pass, which we could let down or take up at pleasure on our side. We now hastened our return to Arcadia, and after a night's repose we loaded the sledge with the boat and other matters, and returned to Tent-House.

As soon as we had despatched some necessary affairs, we resumed the completion of the boat: in two days she had received the addition of a keel, a neat lining of wood, a small flat floor, benches, a small mast and triangular sail, a rudder, and a thick coat of pitch on the outside, so that the first time we saw her in the water, we were all in ecstasies at the charming appearance she made.

Our cow in the meantime had brought fourth a young calf, a male; I pierced its nostril, as I had so successfully practiced with the buffalo, and it gave promise of future docility and strength.

We had still two months in prospect before the rainy season, and we employed them for completing our abode in the grotto, with the exception of such ornaments as we might have time to think of during the long days of winter. We made the internal divisions of planks, and that which separated us from the stables of stone, to protect us from the

offensive smell occasioned by the animals. Our task was difficult, but from habit it became easier every day. We took care to collect or manufacture a sufficient quantity of all sorts of materials, such as beams and planks, reeds and twigs for matting, pieces of gypsum for plaster, &c., &c. At length the time of the rainy season was near at hand, and we thought of it with pleasure, as it would put us in possession of the enjoyments we had procured by such unremitting industry and fatigue. We had an inexpressible longing to find ourselves domiciliated, and at leisure to converse together on the subject of all the wondrous benefits bestowed upon us by an ever-watchful and beneficent Providence.

We plastered over the walls of the principal apartments on each side with the greatest care, finishing them by pressure with a flat smooth board, and lastly a wash of size in the manner of the plasterers in Europe. This ornamental portion of our work amused us all so much, that we began to think we might venture a step further in European luxury, and agreed that we would attempt to make some carpets with the hair of our goats. To this effect we smoothed the ground in the rooms we intended to distinguish, with great care; then spread over it some sail-cloth, which my wife had joined in breadths, and fitted exactly; we next strewed the goats' hair, mixed with wool obtained from the sheep, over the whole; on this surface we threw some hot water, in which a strong cement had been dissolved; the whole was then rolled up, and was beaten for a considerable time with hard sticks; the sail-cloth was now unrolled, and the inside again sprinkled, rolled, and beaten as before; and this process was continued till the substance had become a sort of felt, which could be separated from the sail-cloth, and was lastly put in the sun to harden. We thus produced a very tolerable substitute for that enviable article of European comfort, a carpet: of these we completed two, one for our parlor, and the other for our drawing room, as we jocosely named them; both of which were completely fit for our reception by the time the rains had set in.

All we had suffered during this season in the preceding year doubled the value of the comforts and conveniences with which we were now surrounded. We were never tired of admiring our warm and well-arranged apartments, lighted with windows, and well secured with doors from wind and rain, and our granary filled with more than a sufficient supply of winter food for ourselves and for our cattle. In the morning, our first care was to feed and give them drink; and both

these were now constantly at hand, without the pains of fetching or preparing: after this we assembled in the parlor, where prayers were read, and breakfast immediately served: we then adjourned to the common room, where all sorts of industry went forward, and which contained the spinning-wheel and loom I had, though with indifferent success, constructed to gratify my wife. Here all united in the business of producing different kinds of substances, which she afterwards made into apparel. I had also contrived to construct a turning machine, having used for the purpose one of the small cannon wheels, with the help of which the boys and I managed to produce some neat utensils for general use. After dinner, our work was resumed till night, when we lighted candles; and as they cost no more than our own trouble in collecting and manufacturing the materials, we did not refuse ourselves the pleasure of using many at a time, to admire their lights splendidly reflected by the crystals everywhere pendent. We had formed a convenient portion of our dwelling into a small chapel, in which we left the crystals as produced by nature; and they exhibited a wondrous assemblage of colonades, porticoes, altars, which, when the place was lighted to supply the want of a window, presented a truly enchanting spectacle. Divine service was performed in it regularly every Sunday. I had raised a sort of pulpit, from which I pronounced such discourses as I had framed for the instruction of my affectionate group of auditors. Jack and Francis had a natural inclination for music. I did the most I could in making a flageolet apiece for them of reeds, on which they so frequently practiced as to attain a tolerable proficiencey; they accompanied their mother, who had a sweet-toned voice, the volume of which was doubled by the echoes of the grottoes, and they produced together a very pleasing little concert.

Thus, as will be perceived, we had made the first steps towards a condition of civilization; separated from society, condemned perhaps, to pass the remainder of life in this desert island, we yet possessed the means of happiness; we had abundance of all the necessaries, and many of the comforts, desired by human beings! We had fixed habits of activity and industry, we were in ourselves serene and contented; our bodily health and strength increased from day to day; the sentiment of tender attachment was perfect in every heart; we every day acquired some new and still improving channel for the exertion of our physical and moral faculties; we every-

where beheld, and at all times acknowledged, marks of the divine wisdom and goodness; our minds were penetrated with love, gratitude, and veneration for the Providence who had so miraculously rescued and preserved us, and conducted us to the true destination of man—that of providing by his labor for the wants of his offspring! I trusted in the same goodness for restoring us once more to the society of our fellow-men, or for bestowing upon us the means of founding in this desert a happy and flourishing colony of human beings, and waiting in silence for the further manifestation of his holy will, we passed our days in a course of industry, innocent pleasures, and reciprocal affection. Nearly two years had elapsed without our perceiving the smallest trace of civilized or savage man; without the appearance of a single vessel or canoe upon the vast sea by which we are surrounded. Ought we then to indulge a hope that we shall once again behold the face of a fellow-creature?—We encourage serenity and thankfulness in each other, and wait with resignation the event!

POSTSCRIPT BY THE EDITOR.

I have presented the public with the part I had in my possession, of the Journal of the Swiss Pastor, who, with his family, was shipwrecked on a desert island. It cannot escape observation, that it exhibits a lively picture of the happiness which does not fail to result from the practice of moral virtues. Thus, in a situation that seemed calculated to produce despair, we see piety, affection, industry, and generous concern for fellow-sufferings, forming the basis of an unexpected state of serenity and happiness. We also see the advantage of including in the education of boys such a knowledge of the natural productions of the earth, of the various combinations by which they may be rendered serviceable, and of the use of tools of every kind, as may qualify them to assist others, or preserve themselves, under every possible occurrence of adversity or danger. It now remains for me to inform the reader by what means the Journal of the Swiss Pastor came into my possession.

Three or four years subsequent to the occurrence of the shipwreck of the pastor and his family, an English transport

was driven by a tempest upon the same shore. The name of the vessel was *The Adventurer*, *Captain Johnson:* it was on a voyage from New Zealand to the eastern coast of North America, by Otaheite, in the South Seas, to fetch a cargo of skins and furs for China, and to proceed from Canton to England. A violent tempest, of several days' duration, drove it from its track. The vessel continued to beat about in unknown seas, and was now so injured by the weather, that the best hope of the captain and his company was to get into some port where they might refit. They discovered a coast with some high lands, and as the wind had somewhat abated, they made with all speed for the shore. When within a short distance, they cast their anchor, and put out a boat containing some of the officers, to examine the coast and find a place for landing. They rowed backward and forward for some time without success: at length they turned a promontory, and perceived a bay whose calm waters seemed to invite their approach. This was the *Safety Bay* of the wrecked islanders: the boat put on shore, and the officers with astonishment beheld the traces of the abode of man. A handsome well-conditioned pinnace and a small boat were there at anchor: near the strand, under a rock, was a tent, and farther on, in the rock, a house-door and windows announced European comforts and workmanship. The officers advanced towards the spot, and were met half-way by a man of middle age, dressed like a European, and armed with a gun. The stranger accosted them with friendly tones and gestures; he spoke first German, and then some words in English. Lieutenant Bell, one of the English officers, who spoke the German language, answered. A mutual confidence immediately ensued. We need not add, that the stranger was the Family Robinson, whose wife and children happened at the moment to be at Falcon's Stream. He had discovered the English ship in the morning with his glass: and, unwilling to alarm his family, he had come, perceiving she bore this way, alone to the coast.

After an interchange of cordial feelings, and a hospitable reception of the officers at the dwelling, the Swiss Pastor put his Journal into the hands of Lieutenant Bell to be conveyed to Captain Johnson, that he also might become acquainted with the story of the solitary islanders. At the end of an hour's conversation, the newly-found friends separated, in the pleasing expectation of meeting again on the following day.—But Heaven had otherwise ordained.

During the night the tempest revived with new terrors.

The Adventurer could not be held at anchor, but was obliged to steer for safety to the bosom of the ocean. As there was no favorable change of weather for several days, the vessel was driven so far from the coast of Safety Bay, as to leave no possibility of returning, and Captain Johnson was compelled to renounce the gratification of seeing this extraordinary family, or of proposing to convey them all to Europe.

Captain Johnson brought the Journal of the Swiss Pastor to England, from whence it was transmitted to a friend in Switzerland, who has deemed its contents an instructive lesson to the world.

PART II.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

CONTINUATION OF THE JOURNAL.—A STORM

I left the reader at the moment in which I had placed the first part of my journal in the hands of Lieutenant Bell to deliver to Captain Johnson, of the English vessel the *Adventurer*, expecting him to return the next day with Lieutenant Bell. We separated in this hope, and I thought it necessary to inform my family of this expected visit, which might decide their future lot. My wife and elder sons might wish to seize this only occasion that might occur to revisit their native country—to quit their beloved island, which would doubtless cost them much sorrow at the last moment, but was necessary to their future comfort. I could not help feeling distressed at the prospect of my dear children's solitary old age, and I determined, if they did not wish to return with Captain Johnson, to request him to send some colonists out to people our island.

It will be remembered that I had left home alone, and at an early hour, having perceived a vessel from the top of our tree with my telescope. I had set out without breakfast, without giving my sons their tasks, or making any arrangements for the labors of the day. My conference with Lieutenant Bell had been long; it was now past noon, and knowing how prompt my wife was to alarm herself, I was surprised that I did not meet her, nor any of my sons. I began to be uneasy, and on my arrival I hastily mounted the tree, and found my faithful partner extended on her bed, surrounded by her four sons, and apparently in great pain. I demanded with a cry of grief, what had happened; all wished to speak at once, and it was with some difficulty I learned, that my dear wife, in descending the staircase, had been seized with a giddiness in her head, and had fallen down and injured herself so much, that she was unable to rise without assistance; she was now enduring great pain in her right leg and in her

left foot. "Ernest and I," added Fritz, "carried her without delay to her bed, though not without difficulty, for the staircase is so narrow; but she continued to get worse, and we did not know what to do."

Jack.—I have rubbed her foot continually, but it swells more and more, as well as her leg which I dare not touch, it hurts her so much.

Ernest.—I remember, father, that of the chests that we brought from the ship, there is one unopened, which is marked "*medicines*," may it not contain something that will relieve mother?

Father.—Perhaps it may, my son. You did well to remember it; we will go to Tent-House for it. Fritz, you shall accompany me to assist in bringing it.

I wished to be alone with Fritz, to consult him about the English vessel, and was glad of this opportunity. Before I left my wife, I intended to examine her leg and foot, which were exceedingly painful. When I was preparing to enter the Church, I had studied medicine and practical surgery, in order to be able to administer to the bodily afflictions of my poor parishioners, as well as to their spiritual sorrows. I knew how to bleed, and could replace a dislocated limb. I had often made cures; but since my arrival at the island I had neglected my medical studies, which happily had not been needed. I hoped now, however, to recall as much of my knowledge as would be sufficient to cure my poor wife. I examined her foot first, which I found to be violently sprained. She begged me then to look at her leg, and what was my distress to find that it was fractured above the ankle; however, the fracture appeared simple, without splinters, and easy to cure. I sent Fritz without delay to procure me two pieces of the bark of a tree, between which I placed the leg, after having, with the assistance of my son, stretched it till the two pieces of broken bone united; I then bound it with bandages of linen, and tied the pieces of bark round the leg, so that it might not be moved. I bound the sprained foot very tightly, till I could procure the balsam which I expected to find in the chest. I felt assured, that the giddiness of the head, which had caused her fall, proceeded from some exciting cause, which I suspected, from the pulse and the complexion, must be a fulness of blood; and it appeared to be necessary to take away some ounces, which I persuaded her to allow me to do, when I should have brought my medicine-chest and instruments from Tent-House. I left her, with many charges, to

the care of my three younger sons, and proceeded to Tent-House with Fritz, to whom I now related my morning adventure, and consulted him how we should mention it to his mother. Fritz was astonished. I saw how his mind was employed; he looked round on our fields and plantations, increasing and prospering.

"We must not tell her, father," said he. "I will be at Tent-House early in the morning; you must give me some commission to execute; I will await the arrival of the Captain, and tell him that my dear mother is ill, and that he may return as he came."

"You speak rashly, Fritz," answered I. "I have told you that this ship has suffered much from the storm, and needs repairs. Have you not often read the golden rule of our divine Master, *Do unto others as you would have others do unto you?* Our duty is to receive the Captain into our island, and to assist him in repairing and refitting his vessel."

"And he will find," said he, "we know something of that kind of work. Did you show him our beautiful pinnace and canoe? But can such a large vessel enter our Bay of Safety?"

"No," replied I; "I fear there will not be sufficient water; but we will show the Captain the large bay at the other end of the island, formed by Cape Disappointment; he will find there a beautiful harbor."

"And he and his officers may live at the farm, and we can go over every day to assist in repairing their vessel," continued Fritz.

"Very well," said I; "and when it is finished, he will, in return, give us a place in it to return to Europe."

"To return to Europe, father!" cried he; "to leave our beautiful winter dwelling, Tent-House, and our charming summer residence, Falcon's Nest; our dear, good animals; our crystals of salt; our farms; so much that is our own, and which nobody covets, to return into Europe to poverty, to war, to those wicked soldiers who have banished us! We want nothing. Dear father, can you consent to leave our beloved island?"

"You are right, my dear son," said I. "Would to God we might always remain here happily together; but we are of different ages, and by the law of nature we must one day be separated. Consider, my dear son, if you should survive your brothers, how cheerless it would be to live quite alone on this desert island, without any one to close your eyes. But let us look at these trees; I see they are tamarind-trees;

their fruit contains a pulp which is very useful in medicine, and which will suit your mother, I think, as well as the juice of the orange or lemon. We shall find some of the latter at our plantation near Tent-House; but, in the meantime, do you climb the tamarind-tree, and gather some of those pods which resemble those of beans, fill one side of the bag with them, the other we will reserve for the oranges and lemons. Not to lose any time, I will go on to Tent-House to seek for the two chests, and you can follow me."

Fritz was up the tamarind-tree in a moment. I crossed Family Bridge, and soon reached the grotto. I lighted a candle, which I always kept ready, entered the magazine, and found the two chests labelled.

They were neither large nor heavy, and, having tied cords round them for the convenience of carrying them, I proceeded to visit the orange and lemon trees, where I found the fruit sufficiently ripe for lemonade. Fritz came to meet me, with a good supply of tamarinds. We filled the other end of his sack with oranges and lemons. He threw it over his shoulder, and neither of us being overloaded, we pursued our way homewards very quickly, notwithstanding the heat, which was excessively oppressive, though the sun was hidden under the thick clouds, which entirely concealed the sea from us. Nothing was to be seen but the waves breaking against the rocks. Fritz expressed his fears that a storm was coming on, which might prove fatal to the vessel, and wished to take out the pinnace and endeavor to assist Captain Johnson.

Delighted as I felt with his fearless humanity, I could not consent; I reminded him of the situation of his mother. "Forgive me dear father," said he; "I had forgotton everything but the poor vessel. But the captain may do as we did, leave his ship between the rocks, and come, with all in the vessel, to establish themselves here. We will give them up a corner of our island; and if there should be any ladies amongst them, how pleasant it would be for mother to have a friend!"

The rain now fell in torrents, and we proceeded with great difficulty. After crossing the bridge, we saw at a distance a very extraordinary figure approaching us; we could not ascertain what species of animal it was. It appeared taller than any of the monkeys we had seen, and much larger, of a black or brown color. We could not distinguish the head, but it seemed to have two thick and movable horns before it.

We had fortunately taken no gun with us, or Fritz would certainly have fired at this singular animal. But as it rapidly approached us, we soon recognized the step, and the cry of pleasure which hailed us. "It is Jack," we exclaimed; and in fact it was he, who was hurrying to meet us with my large cloak and water-proof caoutchouc boots. I had neglected to take them, and my dear little fellow had volunteered to bring them to Tent-House. To protect himself on the way, he had put the cloak on, covering his head with the hood, and my boots being too large for him he had put one on each arm, which he held up to secure his hood. Conceive what a singular figure he made. Notwithstanding our uneasiness, and our wretched condition, for we were wet to the skin, we could not but laugh heartily at him. I would not consent to use the coverings he had brought; neither Fritz nor I could be worse for the distance we had to go, and Jack was younger and more delicate; I obliged him therefore to retain his curious protection; and asked how he had left his mother. "Very uneasy," said he, "about you; else I think she must be much better, for her cheeks are very red, and her eyes very bright, and she talks incessantly. She would have come herself to seek you, but could not rise; and when I told her I would come, she bid me be very quick; but when I was coming down stairs, I heard her call me back for fear of the rain and the thunder; I would not hear her, but ran as fast as I could, hoping to reach Tent-House. Why did you come back so soon?"

"To spare you half your journey, my brave little man," said I, hastening on; for Jack's account of his mother made me uneasy. I perceived she must be laboring under fever, and the blood ascending to her head. My children followed me, and we soon reached the foot of our castle in the air.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

LIGHTNING AND WONDERFUL ESCAPE.

We entered our apartment literally as if we had come out of the sea, and I found my poor Elizabeth much agitated. "Heaven be praised!" said she; "but where is Jack, that rash little fellow?"

"Here I am mother," said he, "as dry as when I left you. I have left my dress below, that I might not terrify you; for if Mr. Fritz had had his gun, I might have been shot as a *rhinoceros*, and not been here to tell you my story."

The good mother then turned her thoughts on Fritz and me, and would not suffer us to come near her till we had changed our drenched garments. To oblige her, we retired to a little closet I had contrived between two thick branches at the top of the staircase, which was used to contain our chests of linen, our dresses, and our provisions. Our dress was soon changed; we hung up the wet garments, and I returned to my companion, who was suffering from her foot, but still more from a frightful headache. She had a burning fever. I concluded that bleeding was urgently needed, but commenced by assuaging her thirst with some lemonade. I then opened my box of surgical instruments, and approached the opening to the east which served us for a window, and which we could close by means of a curtain, that was now entirely raised to give air to our dear invalid, and to amuse my children who were watching the storm. The mighty waves that broke against the rocks, the vivid lightning bursting through the castles of murky clouds, the majestic and incessant rolling of the thunder, formed one of those enchanting spectacles to which they had been from infancy accustomed. As in the Swiss mountains we are liable to frightful storms, to which it is necessary to familiarize one's self as one cannot avoid them, I had accustomed my wife and children, by my own example, to behold, not only without fear, but even with admiration, these great shocks of the elements,—these convulsions of nature.

I had opened the chest, and my children had directed their attention to the instruments it contained; the first were a little rusty, and I handed them to Ernest, who, after examining them, placed them on a table inside the window. I was

searching for a lancet in good condition, when a clap of thunder, such as I had never heard in my life, terrified us all so much, that we nearly fell down. This burst of thunder had not been preceeded by any lightning, but was accompanied by two immense forked columns of fire, which seemed to stretch from the sky to our very feet. We all cried out, even my poor wife; but the silence of terror succeeded, and seemed to be the silence of death. I flew to the bedside, and found my dear patient in a state of total insensibility. I was convinced that she was dead, and I was dumb with despair. I was roused from my stupor by the voice of my children. I then remembered that I had not lost all: there still remained duties to fulfill, and affection to console me. "My children," cried I, extending my arms to them, "come and comfort your unfortunate father: come and lament with him the best of wives and mothers." Terrified at the appearance of their mother, they surrounded her bed calling on her in piercing accents. At that moment I saw my little Francis was missing, and my grief was augmented by the fear that he had been killed by the lightning. I hastily turned to the window, expecting to find my child dead, and our dwelling in flames. Fortunately, all was safe; but, in my distraction, I scarcely thanked God for His mercy, at the very moment even when he graciously restored to me my lost treasures. Francis, frightened by the storm, had hidden himself in his mother's bed, and fallen asleep; awaked by the thunder, he had not dared to move, fearing it announced the arrival of the savages; but at last, the cries of his brothers roused him, and, raising his pretty fair head, supposing his mother sleeping, he flung his arms round her neck, saying, "Wake, mother, we are all here,—father, my brothers, and the storm too, which is very beautiful, but frightens me. Open your eyes, mother; look at the bright lightning and kiss your little Francis."

Either his sweet voice, or the cries of her elder children, restored her faculties: she gradually recovered, and called me to her. The excess of my joy threatened to be almost as fatal as my grief. With difficulty I controlled my own feelings and those of my boys: and, after I had sent them from the bed, I ascertained that she was not only really living but much better. The pulse was calm, and the fever had subsided, leaving only a weakness that was by no means alarming. I relinquished joyfully, the intention of bleeding her, the necessity of which I had trembled to contemplate, and contented myself with employing the boys to prepare a cooling mixture,

composed of the juice of the lemon, of barley, and tamarinds, which they completed to the great satisfaction of their mother, I then ordered Fritz to descend to the yard, to kill a fowl, pluck and boil it, to make broth, a wholesome and light nourishment for our dear invalid. I told one of his brothers to assist him, and Jack and Francis, frequently employed under their mother, were ready in a moment. Ernest alone remained quietly on his seat, which I attributed to his usual indolence, and tried to make him ashamed of it. "Ernest," said I, "you are not very anxious to oblige your mother; you sit as if the thunderbolt had struck you."

"It has, indeed, rendered me unfit to be of any service to my good mother," said he, quietly; and, drawing his right arm from under his waistcoat, he showed it to me, most frightfully black and burnt.

This dear child, who must have suffered very much, had never uttered a complaint, for fear of alarming his mother; and even now he made a sign to me to be silent, lest she should hear and discover the truth. She soon, however, fell into a sleep, which enabled me to attend to poor Ernest, and to question him about the accident. I learned that a long and pointed steel instrument which he was examining near the large window, stooping over it to see it better, had attracted the lightning, which, falling partly on the hand in which he held it, had caused the misfortune. There were traces on his arm of the electric fire, and his hair was burnt on one side. By what miracle the electric fluid had been diverted, and how we, dwelling in a tree, had been preserved from a sudden and general conflagration, I knew not. My son assured me he had seen the fire run along the instrument he held, and from thence fall perpendicularly to the earth, where it seemed to burst with a second explosion. I was impatient to examine this phenomenon, and to see if any other traces were left, except those on the hand of my son, which it was necessary in the first place to attend to. I remembered frequently to have applied with success in burns, the most simple and easy of remedies, which everybody can command: this is to bathe the hand affected in cold water, taking care to renew it every eight or ten minutes. I placed Ernest between two tubs of cold water, and exhorting him to patience and perseverance, I left him to bathe his hand, and approached the opening, to try and discover what had preserved us, by averting the direction of the lightning, which one might have expected would have killed my son, and destroyed our dwel-

ling. I saw only some light traces on the table; but, on looking more attentively, I found that the greater part of the surgical instruments which Ernest had placed upon it were either melted or much damaged. In examining them separately, I remarked one much longer than the rest, which projected beyond the edge of the table, and was much marked by the fire. I could not easily take it up; it had adhered somewhat in melting, and in endeavoring to disengage it I saw that the point, which was beyond the opening, touched a thick wire which seemed to be suspended from the roof of our tent. All was now explained to me; except that I could in no way account for this wire, placed expressly to serve as a conductor for the lightning. It seemed to be the work of magic. The evening was too far advanced for me to distinguish how it was fastened, and what fixed it below; therefore, enjoining Ernest to call loudly if he needed me, I hastened down. I saw my three cooks very busy, as I passed through, preparing the broth for their mother, they assured me it would be excellent. Fritz boasted that he had killed the fowl with all speed, Jack that he had plucked it without tearing it much, and Francis that he had lighted and kept up the fire. They had nothing to employ them just then, and I took them with me to have some one to talk to on the phenomenon of the lightning. Below the window I found a large packet of iron wire, which I had brought from Tent-House some days before, intending on some leisure day to make a sort of grating before our poultry-yard. By what chance was it here, and hooked at one end to the roof of our house? Some time before I had replaced our cloth canopy by a sort of roof covered with bark nailed upon laths; the cloth still enclosed the sides and front; all was so inflammable, that, but for the providential conductor, we must have been in flames in an instant. I thanked God for our preservation; and little Francis, seeing me so happy, said—

"Is it quite true, papa that this wire has preserved us!"

"Yes, it is true, my darling; and I wish to know what good genius has placed it there, that I may be thankful," said I.

"Ah, father!" said my little fellow, "embrace me, but do not thank me; for I did not know that I was doing good."

Astonished at this information, I requested my boy to tell me why and how he had fixed the wire.

"I wanted to reach some figs," said he, "when you and

Fritz were at Tent-House, and Jack and Ernest were nursing mother; I wished to do some good for her. I thought she would like some of our sweet figs; but there were none within my reach, and I had no stick long enough to beat them down. I went below, and found that great roll of wire. I tried to break a piece off, but could not; and I then determined to carry the whole up to our dwelling, and to bend one end into a hook, by which I might catch some of the branches, and bring them near me to gather the figs. I was very successful at first, and secured one or two figs. I had my packet of wire on the table by the window, and stood near it myself. I thought I could reach a branch that hung over our roof, loaded with fruit. I leaned forward, and extended my hook to the branch; I felt I had secured it, and joyfully began to pull. You know, father, they bend and don't break; but it remained immovable, as well as my hook, which was held by one of the laths of the roof. I pulled with all my strength, and in my efforts, I struck my foot against the roll of wire, which fell to the ground without detaching the hook. You may judge how firm it is, for it is no trifling leap from our house to the ground."

"A good work, indeed, my boy," said I, "is yours, for it has saved us. God has inspired you, and has made use of the hand of a child for our preservation. Your conductor shall remain where you have so happily placed it; we may still have need of it. The sky still looks very threatening; let us return to your mother, and take a light with us."

I had contrived a sort of portable lantern, made of isinglass, which lighted us in our offices. Moreover, a calibash pierced with small holes, with a candle inside, was placed at the top of the winding staircase, and lighted it entirely, so that we were able to descend without danger by night as well as by day. I was, however, uneasy about the way I should bring my wife down, if we found it necessary to remove her during her sickness; I named it to Fritz.

"Have no uneasiness, father," said he, "Ernest and I are very strong now, and we can carry mother like a feather."

"You and I might, my dear boy," said I; "but Ernest cannot be of much assistance to us at present."

I then related his misfortune to him. They were distressed and astonished, not comprehending the cause, which I promised to explain. They wished now, however, to see their brother; Fritz then requested, in a low tone of voice, that he might go to Tent-House, to see if the vessel and the cap-

tain had arrived. Seeing his brothers listening with curiosity, I thought it best to tell them the affair, requesting them, however, not to name it to their mother at present. Jack, who was now fourteen years of age, listened with the most interest, his eyes sparkling with joy and surprise.

"A vessel!—people from Europe! Do you think they have come to see us? Perhaps they are our relations and friends."

"How glad should I be," said Francis, "if my good grandmother were there; she loved me so much, and was always giving me sweetmeats."

This was the mother of my dear wife, from whom she had parted with extreme regret; I knew that a single word from the child would have rivived all her sorrows, and would in her present state be dangerous. I therefore forbade him naming such a thing to his mother, even if we mentioned the vessel.

We ascended, and found our dear patient awake, with Ernest at her side, his hand tied up, and somewhat relieved; though, from not having applied the water immediately, there were several blisters, which he requested me to open. It was necessary to tell his mother he had had a burn; she named several remedies, and I was hesitating which to use, when Fritz giving me a significant glance, said, "Don't you think, father, that the leaves of the karata, which cured Jack's leg so well, would be as serviceable to Ernest's hand?"

"I have no doubt of it," said I: "but we have none here."

"I know very well where they grow," said he. "Come Jack, we shall soon be there; we shall have a little rain, but what of that? we shall not be melted, and we can have a bath."

My wife was divided between her desire to relieve Ernest, and her fear of the boys venturing out in such a stormy night. She agreed at last, provided Jack had my cloak, and Fritz the boots, and that they should take the lantern. Thus equipped they set out: I accompanied them outside the tree; Fritz assuring me they would be back in three hours, at most. He intended to proceed along the rocks towards Tent-House, to make what observations he could; for, as he told me, he could not get the poor captain and his vessel out of his head. It was now seven o'clock, I gave them my blessing, and, left them with injunctions to be prudent, and returned with an anxious heart to my invalids.

CHAPTER XXXV.

SAFE RETURN OF THE BOYS.

On entering, I found Francis sitting on his mother's bed, telling her the story of the lightning, of the wire which was called *a conductor*, of the figs that he was going to gather for her, and that father had called him—little Francis—*the preserver of the whole family.* Having briefly explained to them the results of Francis' fortunate device, I procured some raw potato to apply to Ernest's hand, which still gave him great pain, and bathed my wife's foot with some *eau d'arquebusade*, which I procured from my medicine-chest; here I also met with some laudanum, a few drops of which I infused into the lemonade, wishing her to sleep till her sons returned. She soon was in a sweet slumber; the boys followed her example, and I was left alone with my anxieties; happy, however, to see them at rest after such an evening of agitation. The hours passed, still my children returned not. I was continually at the window, listening for their steps or the sound of their voices; I heard only the rain falling in torrents, the waves breaking against the rocks, and the wind howling frightfully. I could not help thinking of the danger they ran, having twice to cross the river, which was doubtless swollen by the rain. I was not so much alarmed for Fritz, a strong, bold youth of nineteen years of age, and determined hunter: as to poor Jack, bold even to rashness, and having neither strength nor experience to secure him, I could not help fancying him carried away by the stream, and his brother not daring to return without him.

My wife occasionally awoke, but the narcotic stupefied her; she did not perceive the absence of her sons. Francis slept tranquilly; but when Ernest awoke, and heard the tempest so terribly augmented, he was almost distracted; all his selfishness, all his indolence disappeared. He entreated me to allow him to go in search of his brothers, and with difficulty I detained him. To convince him that he was not the sole cause of the danger of Fritz and Jack, I related to him, for the first time, the history of the boat and the vessel, and assured him that the great cause of their anxiety to go over to Tent-House, was to search for some traces of the unfortunate seamen and their vessel, exposed to that furious sea.

"And Fritz, also, is exposed to that sea," cried Ernest. "I know it; I am sure that he is at this moment in his canoe, struggling against the waves!"

"And Jack, my poor Jack!" sighed I, infected with his fears.

"No, father," added Ernest; "be composed; Fritz will not be so imprudent; he will have left Jack in our house at the rock; and, probably, seeing the hopelessness of his undertaking, he is returned himself now, and is waiting there till the stream subsides a little; do allow me to go, dear father; you have ordered me cold water for my burnt hand, and it will certainly cure it to get well wet."

I could not consent to expose my third son to the tempest, which was now become frightful; the sail-cloth which covered our window was torn into a thousand pieces, and carried away; the rain, like a deluge, forced itself into our dwelling, even to the bed where my child and wife were lying. I could neither make up my mind to leave them myself in this perilous situation, nor to spare my boy who could not be of any use to his brothers. I commanded him to remain, succeeded in persuading him of their probable safety, and induced him to lie down to rest.

Now, in my terrible solitude, I turned to Him "who tempers the wind to the shorn lamb;" who forbids us not to address Him in the trials He sends us, to beseech Him to soften them, or to give us strength to bear them. Kneeling down, I dared to supplicate Him to restore my children, submissively adding, after the example of our blessed Saviour, "Yet, not my will but thine be done, O Lord!"

My prayers appeared to be heard; the storm gradually abated, and the day began to break. I awoke Ernest, and, having dressed his wounded hand, he set out for Tent-House, in search of his brothers. I followed him with my eyes as far as I could see; the whole country appeared one vast lake, and the road to Tent-House was like the bed of a river; but protected by his good gaiters of buffalo-skin, he proceeded fearlessly, and was soon out of my sight.

I was recalled from the window by the voice of my wife, who was awake, and anxiously inquiring for her sons.

"They are gone," said I, "to gather the leaves of the karata for Ernest's burnt hand, and he wished to go, too."

Her deep sleep had entirely chased from her memory all the events of the previous evening, and I was glad to allow Francis to repeat his little tale of the buffalo and his *conductor*,

in order to gain time. She was astonished and uneasy to hear of Ernest's accident, and was afraid they would *get wet* in searching for the karata, little aware of the hours of anguish I had endured waiting and watching for those she believed had only just left home.

At that moment, the dear and well-known voices were heard under the great window.

"Father, I am bringing back my brothers," cried Ernest.

"Yes, father, we are all alive, and as wet as fishes," added the sweet voice of Jack.

"But not without having had our troubles," said the manly voice of Fritz.

I rushed down the staircase to meet them, and embracing them, I led them, trembling with emotion, to the bed of their mother, who could not comprehend the transport of joy I expressed.

"Dear Elizabeth," said I, "here are our sons; God has given them to us a second time."

"Have we then been in any danger of losing them?" said she. "What is the meaning of this?"

They saw their mother was unconscious of their long absence, and assured her it was only the storm which had so completely wetted them, that had alarmed me. I hastened to get them to change their clothes, and go to bed a little while to rest themselves; as, however anxious I was myself, I wished to prepare my wife for their recital, and also to tell her of the vessel. Jack would not go till he had produced his bundle of the karata leaves.

"There is enough for six and thirty thunder-storms," said he; "and I will prepare them. I have had some experience with my own, and I know the best method."

He soon divided one of the leaves with his knife, after cutting away the triangular thorn from the end, and applied it to his brother's hand, binding it with his handkerchief. Having completed this dressing, he threw off his clothes, and jumping into his bed, he and his brothers were sound asleep in ten minutes.

I then sat down by my wife, and began my tale, from my first view of the vessel, and my anxious watching for intercourse with it; in order that we might take the opportunity to return to Europe.

"But why should we return to Europe? said she; "we want nothing here now, since I have got flax, cotton, and a wheel. Our children lead an active, healthy, and innocent life, and

live *with us*, which they might not do in the world. For four years, we have been happy here, and what shall we find in Europe to compensate us for what we leave here? poverty, war, and none of those things which we have here abundantly."

"But we should find grandmother," said little Francis; and stopped, recollecting my prohibition.

He had, however, said sufficient to bring tears to his mother's eyes.

"You are right, my darling," said she, "that is my only regret; but my dear parent was aged and infirm, in all probability I should no longer find her in this world; and if removed to Heaven, she watches over us in this island, as well as if we were in Europe."

After my dear wife had subdued the agitation this remembrance caused her, I pursued the conversation as follows:

CHAPTER XXXVI.

ADVENTURES—RETURNING CALM.

"I see, my dear wife," said I, "that you, as well as the rest of my family, are contented to remain on this island, where it seems it is the will of God for us to dwell, as it is most improbable that in such a tempest Captain Johnson would risk approaching the island, if indeed, it has not been already fatal to him. I am impatient to learn if Fritz has any tidings of him; for it was on the shore near Tent-House that he and Jack passed the night."

"Well done, my good and courageous boys!" said their mother; they might at any rate have given assistance to them if wrecked."

"You are more courageous than I am, my dear Elizabeth," answered I; I have passed the whole night mourning for my children, and you think only of the good they might have done to their fellow-creatures.

My sons were awake by this time, and I eagerly inquired if they had discovered any traces of the vessel. Fritz said they had not; but he feared it would never be able to resist the fury of the tempest.

"No, indeed," said Jack; "those mountains of waves, which

were not fixtures like other mountains, came full gallop to swallow up Fritz the great, Jack the little, and their fine canoe."

My wife nearly fainted when she heard they had ventured on that terrible sea; and I reminded Fritz that I had forbidden him to do this.

"But you have often said to me, father," said he, "do unto others as you would they should do unto you; and what a happiness it would have been to us, when our vessel was wrecked, if we had seen a canoe!"

"With two bold men coming to our assistance," said Jack; "but go on with your story, Fritz."

Fritz continued: "We proceeded first to the rocks, and, with some difficulty, and not until Jack had shed some blood in the cause, we secured the karata leaves, with their ugly thorns at the end. When our sack was full, we proceeded along the rocks towards Tent-House. From this height I tried to discover the ship, but the darkness obscured everything. Once I thought I perceived at a great distance a fixed light, which was neither a star nor the lightning, and which I lost sight of occasionally. We had now arrived at the cascade, which, from the noise, seemed much swollen by the rain—our great stones were quite hidden by a boiling foam. I would have attempted to cross, if I had been alone; but, with Jack on my shoulders, I was afraid of the risk. I therefore prepared to follow the course of the river to Family Bridge. The wet ground continually brought us on our knees, and with great difficulty we reached the bridge. But judge of our consternation? the river had risen so much that the planks were covered, and, as we conceived the whole was destroyed. I then told Jack to return to Falcon's Nest with the karata leaves, and I should swim across the river. I returned about a hundred yards up the stream to find a wider and less rapid part and easily crossed.

"Judge of my surprise when I saw a human figure approaching to meet me; I had no doubt it was the captain of the vessel, and—"

"And it was Captain Jack, *sans peur at sans reproche*," said the bold little fellow; "I was determined not to return home a poltroon who was afraid of the water. When Fritz was gone, I tried the bridge, and soon found there was not sufficient water over it to risk my being drowned. I took off my boots, which might have made me slip, and my cloak, which was too heavy, and making a dart, I ran with all my

strength across, and reached the other side. I put on my boots, which I had in my hands, and advanced to meet Fritz, who called out, as soon as he saw me, 'Is it you, captain?' I tried to say, 'Yes, certainly,' in a deep tone, but my laughter betrayed me."

"To my great regret," said Fritz; "I should truly have preferred meeting Captain Johnson; but I fear he and his people are at the bottom of the sea. After meeting with Jack, we proceeded to Tent-House, where we kindled a good fire, and dried ourselves a little. We then refreshed ourselves with some wine which remained on the table where you had entertained the captain, and proceeded to prepare a signal to inform the vessel that we were ready to receive them. We procured a thick bamboo cane from the magazine; I fixed firmly to one end of it the large lantern of the fish's bladder you gave us to take; I filled the lamp with oil, and placed in it a thick cotton wick, which, when lighted, was very brilliant. Jack and I then placed it on the shore at the entrance of the bay. We fixed it before the rock, where the land wind would not reach it, sunk it three or four feet deep in the ground, steadied it with stones, and then went to rest over our fire, after this long and difficult labor.

"After drying ourselves a little, we sat out on our return, when, looking towards the sea, we were startled by the appearance of the same light we had noticed before; we heard, at the same time, the distant report of a gun, which was repeated three or four times at irregular intervals. We were persuaded that it was the vessel calling to us for aid, and, remembering the command of our Saviour, we thought you would forgive our disobedience if we presented to you in the morning, the captain, the lieutenant, and as many as our canoe would contain. We entered it then without any fear, for you know how light and well-balanced it is; and, rowing into the bay, the sail was spread to the wind, and we had no more trouble. I then took the helm, my only signal-light shone clearly on the shore; and, *except* for the rain which fell in torrents, the waves which washed over our canoe, and uneasiness about the ship and about you, and our fear that the wind might carry us into the open sea, we should have had a delightful little maritime excursion.

"When we got out of the bay, I perceived the wind was driving us towards Shark's Island, which, being directly before the bay, forms two entrances to it. I intended to go round it, and disembark there, if possible, that I might look out for

some trace of the ship, but we found this impossible; the sea ran too high, besides, we should have been unable to moor our canoe, the island not affording a single tree or anything we could lash it to, and the waves would soon have carried it away. We had now lost sight of the light, and, hearing no more signals, I began to think on your distress when we did not arrive at the hour we promised. I therefore resolved to return by the other side of the bay, carefully avoiding the current, which would have carried us into the open sea. I lowered the sail by means of the ropes you had fixed to it, and we rowed into port.

"We carefully moored the canoe, and, without returning to Tent-House, took the road home. We crossed the bridge as Jack had done, found the waterproof cloak and bag of karata leaves where he had left them, and soon after met Ernest. As it was daylight I did not take him for the captain, but knew him immediately, and felt the deepest remorse when I heard from him in what anxiety and anguish you had passed the night. Our enterprise was imprudent, and altogether useless; but we might have saved life, which would have been an ample remuneration. I fear all is hopeless. What do you think, father of their fate?"

"I hope they are far from this dangerous coast," said I; "but, if still in our neighborhood, we will do all we can to assist them. As soon as the tempest is subsided, we will take the pinnace and sail round the island. You have long urged me to this, Fritz; and who knows but on the opposite side we may find some traces of our own poor sailors,—perhaps even meet with them?"

The weather gradually clearing, I called my sons to go out with me. My wife earnestly besought me not to venture on the sea; I assured her it was not sufficiently calm, but we must examine our plantations, to ascertain what damage was done, and at the same time we might look out for some traces of the wreck, besides, our animals were becoming clamorous for food. Therefore, leaving Ernest with her, we descended to administer in the first place to their wants.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

EXPEDITION IN SEARCH OF THE VESSEL.

Our animals were impatiently expecting us; they had been neglected during the storm, and were ill supplied with food, besides being half-sunk in water. The ducks and the flamingo liked it well enough, and were swimming comfortably in the muddy water; but the quadrupeds were complaining aloud, each in his own proper language, and making a frightful confusion of sounds.

Valiant, especially,—the name Francis had bestowed on the calf I had given him to bring up,—bleated incessantly for his young master, and could not be quieted till he came. It is wonderful how this child, only twelve years old, had tamed and attached this animal; though sometimes so fierce, with him he was as mild as a lamb. The boy rode on his back, guiding him with a little stick, with which he touched the side of his neck as he wished him to move. But if his brothers had ventured to mount, they would have been certainly thrown off.

A pretty sight was our cavalry: Fritz on his handsome onagra, Jack on his huge buffalo, and Francis on his young bull. There was nothing left for Ernest but the donkey, and its slow and peaceful habits suited him very well.

Francis ran up to his favorite, who showed his delight at seeing him as well as he was able, and at the first summons followed his master from the stable. Fritz brought out *Lightfoot*, Jack, his buffalo, and I followed with the cow and the ass. We left them to sport at liberty on the humid earth, till we removed the water from their stable, and supplied them with fresh food. We then drove them in, considering it advisable to pursue our expedition on foot, lest the bridge should still be overflowed. Francis was the superintendent of the fowls, and knew every little chicken by name; he called them out, and scattered their food for them, and soon had his beautiful and noisy family fluttering round him.

After having made all our animals comfortable, and given them their breakfast, we began to think of our own. Francis made a fire and warmed some chicken broth for his mother; for ourselves, we were contented with some new milk, some some salt herrings, and cold potatoes. I had often searched

in my excursions for the precious *bread-fruit* tree so highly spoken of by modern travellers, which I had hoped might be found in our island, from its favorable situation; but I had hitherto been unsuccessful. We were unable to procure the blessing of *bread*, our ship biscuit had long been exhausted, and, though we had sown our European corn, we had not yet reaped any.

After we had together knelt down to thank God for His merciful protection through the terrors of the past night, and besought Him to continue it, we prepared to set out. The waves still ran high, though the wind had subsided, and we determined merely to go along the shore, as the roads still continued impassable from the rain, and the sand was easier to walk on than the wet grass; besides, our principal motive for the excursion was to search for any traces of a recent shipwreck.

At first we could discover nothing, even with the telescope; but Fritz, mounting a high rock, fancied he discovered something floating towards the island. He besought me to allow him to take the canoe, which was still where he left it the preceding night. As the bridge was now easy to cross, I consented, only insisting on accompanying him to assist in managing it. Jack who was much afraid of being left behind, was the first to leap in and seize an oar. There was however, no need of it; I steered my little boat into the current and we were carried away with such velocity as almost to take our breath. Fritz was at the helm, and appeared to have no fear; I will not say that his father was so tranquil. I held Jack, for fear of accidents, but he only laughed, and observed to his brother that the canoe galloped better than Lightfoot.

We were soon in the open sea, and directed our canoe towards the object we had remarked, and which we still had in sight. We were afraid it was the boat upset; but it proved to be a tolerably large cask, which had probably been thrown overboard to lighten the distressed vessel; we saw several others, but neither mast nor plank to give us any idea that the vessel and boat had perished. Fritz wished much to have made the circuit of the island, to assure ourselves of this, but I would not hear of it; I thought of my wife's terror; besides, the sea was still too rough for our frail bark, and we had, moreover, no provisions.

My canoe had not been well built, it would have run great risk of being overset by the waves, which broke over it.

Jack, when he saw one coming, lay down on his face, saying he preferred having them on his back rather than in his mouth; he jumped up as soon as it passed, to help to empty the canoe, till another wave came to fill it again. But, thanks to my outriggers, we preserved our balance very well, and I consented to go as far as *Cape Disappointment*, which merited the name a second time, for we found no trace here of the vessel, though we mounted the hill, and thus commanded a wide extent of view.

As we looked around the country, it appeared completely devastated: trees torn up by the roots, plantations levelled with the ground, water collected into absolute lakes, all announced desolation; and the tempest seemed to be renewing. The sky was darkened, the wind arose, and was unfavorable for our return. Nor could I venture the canoe on the waves, which every instant became more formidable. We moored our bark to a large palm-tree we found at the foot of the hill, near the shore, and set out by land to our home.

We crossed the Gourd Wood and the Wood of Monkeys, and arrived at our farm, which we found, to our great satisfaction, had not suffered much from the storm. The food we had left in the stables was nearly consumed; from which we concluded that the animals we had left here had sheltered themselves during the storm. We refilled the mangers with the hay we had preserved in the loft, and, observing the sky getting more and more threatening, we set out without delay for our house, from which we were yet a considerable distance.

To avoid *Flamingo Marsh*, which was towards the sea, and *Rice Marsh*, towards the rock, we determined to go through *Cotton Wood*, which would save us from the wind, which was ready to blow us off our feet. I was still uneasy about the ship, which the lieutenant had told me was out of repair; but I indulged a hope that they might have taken refuge in some bay, or found anchorage on some hospitable shore, where they might get their vessel into order.

Jack was alarmed lest they should fall into the hands of the *anthropophagi*, who eat men like hares or sheep, of whom he had read in some book of travels; and excited the ridicule of his brother, who was astonished at his ready belief of travelers' tales, which he asserted were usually false.

"But Robinson Crusoe would not tell a falsehood," said Jack indignantly; "and there were cannibals came to his island, and were going to eat Friday, if he had not saved him."

"O! Robinson could not tell a falsehood," said Fritz, "because he never existed. The whole history is a romance—is not that the name, father, that is given to works of imagination?"

"It is," said I; "but we must not call Robinson Crusoe a romance; though Robinson himself, and all the circumstances of his history are probably fictitious, the details are all founded on truth—on the adventures and descriptions of voyagers who may be depended on, and unfortunate individuals who have actually been wrecked on unknown shores. If ever our journal should be printed, many may believe that it is only a romance—a mere work of the imagination."

My boys hoped we should not have to introduce any savages into our romance, and were astonished that an island so beautiful had not tempted any to inhabit it. In fact, I had often been myself surprised at this circumstance; but I told them many voyagers had noticed the isle apparently fertile, and yet uninhabited; besides, the chain of rocks which surrounded this might prevent the approach of savages, unless they had discovered the little *Bay of Safety* where we had landed.

Fritz said he anxiously desired to circumnavigate the island, in order to ascertain the size of it, and if there were similar chains of rocks on the opposite side. I promised him as soon as the stormy weather was past, and his mother well enough to remove to Tent-House, we would take our pinnace, and set out on our little voyage.

We now approached the marsh, and he begged me to let him go and cut some canes, as he projected making a sort of carriage for his mother. As we were collecting them, he explained his scheme to me. He wished to weave, of these reeds, which were very strong, a large and long sort of panier, in which his mother might sit or recline, and which might be suspended between two strong bamboo canes by handles of rope. He then proposed to yoke two of our most gentle animals, the cow and the ass, the one before, and the other behind, between these shafts, the leader to be mounted by one of the children as director; the other would follow naturally, and the good mother would thus be carried, as if in a litter, without any danger of jolting.

I was pleased with this idea, and we all set to work to load ourselves each with a huge burden of reeds. They requested me not to tell my wife, that they might give her an agreeable surprise. It needed such affection as ours to induce us to the

undertaking in such unpropitious weather. It rained in torrents, and the marsh was so soft and wet, that we were in danger of sinking at every step. However, I could not be less courageous than my sons, whom nothing daunted, and we soon made up our bundles, and placing them on our heads, they formed a sort of umbrella, which was not without its benefits.

We soon arrived at Falcon's Nest. Before we reached the tree, I saw a fire shine to such a distance, that I was alarmed; but soon found it was only meant for our benefit by our kind friends at home. When my wife saw the rain falling, she had instructed her little assistant to make a fire in our usual cooking place, at a little distance from the tree, and protected by a canopy of water-proof cloth from the rain. The young cook had not only kept up a good fire to dry us on our return, but had taken the opportunity of roasting two dozen of those excellent little birds which his mother had preserved in butter, and which, all arranged on the old sword which served us for a spit, were just ready on our arrival, and the fire and feast were equally grateful to the hungry, exhausted, and wet travellers, who sat down to enjoy them.

However, before we sat down to our repast, we went up to see our invalids, whom we found tolerably well, though anxious for our return. Ernest, with his sound hand, and the assistance of Francis, had succeeded in forming a sort of *rampart* before the opening into the room, composed of the four hammocks in which he and his brothers slept, placed side by side, on end. This sufficiently protected them from the rain, but excluded the light, so that they had been obliged to light a candle, and Ernest had been reading to his mother in a book of voyages that had formed part of the captain's small library.

It was a singular coincidence, that, while we were talking of the savages on the way home, they were also reading of them; and I found my dear wife much agitated by the fears these accounts had awakened in her mind. After soothing her terrors, I returned to the fire to dry myself, and to enjoy my repast. Besides the birds, Francis had prepared fresh eggs and potatoes for us. He told me that his mother had given up her office of cook to him, and assured me that he would perform the duties to our satisfaction, provided he was furnished with materials, Fritz was to hunt, Jack was to fish, I was to order dinner, and he would make it ready.

"And when we have neither game nor fish," said Jack, "we

will attack your poultry-yard." This was not at all to the taste of poor little Francis, who could not bear his favorites to be killed, and who had actually wept over the chicken that was *slaughtered* to make broth for his mother. We were obliged to promise him, that, when other resources failed, we would apply to our barrels of salt-fish. He, however, gave us leave to dispose as we liked of the ducks and geese, which were too noisy for him.

After we had concluded our repast, we carried a part of it to our friends above, and proceeded to give them an account of our expedition. I then secured the hammocks somewhat more firmly, to save us from the storm that was still raging, and, the hour of rest being at hand, my sons established themselves on mattresses of cotton, made by their kind mother and in spite of the roaring wind, we were soon in profound repose.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

HOME EMPLOYMENTS—PLANS, ETC.

The storm continued to rage the whole of the following day, and even the day after, with the same violence. Happily our tree stood firm, though several branches were broken: among others, that to which Francis' wire was suspended. I replaced it with more care, carried it beyond our roof, and fixed at the extremity the pointed instrument which had attracted the lightning. I then substituted for the hammocks before the window, strong planks, which remained from my building, and which my sons assisted me to raise with pulleys, after having sawed them to the proper length. Through these I made loop-holes, to admit the light and air. In order to carry off the rain, I fixed a sort of spout, made of the wood of a tree I had met with, which was unknown to me, though apparently somewhat like the elder. The whole of the tree, almost to the bark, was filled up with a sort of pitch, easily removed. From this tree I made the pipes for our fountain, and the remainder was now useful for these rain-spouts.

I employed those days in which I could not go out, in separating the seeds and grain, of which I saw we should

have need, and in mending our work-tools; my sons, in the meantime, nestled under the tree among the roots, were incessantly employed in the construction of the carriage for their mother. The karatas had nearly completed the cure of Ernest's hand, and he was able to assist his brothers in preparing the canes, which Fritz and Jack wove between the flat wooden wands, with which they had made the frame of their pannier; they succeeded in making it so strong and close, that they might have carried liquids in it.

My dear wife's foot and leg were gradually improving; and I took the opportunity of her confinement, to reason with her on her false notions of the dangers of the sea, and to represent to her the gloomy prospect of our sons, if they were left alone in the island. She agreed with me, but could not resolve to leave it; she hoped God would send some vessel to us, which might leave us some society; and after all, if our sons were left, she pointed out to me, that they had our beautiful pinnace, and might at any time, of their own accord leave the island.

"And why should we anticipate the evils of futurity, my dear friend?" said she. "Let us think only of the present. I am anxious now to know if the storm has spared my fine kitchen-garden."

"You must wait a little," said I. "I am as uneasy as you, for my maize-plantations, my sugar-canes, and my corn-fields."

At last, one night, the storm ceased, the clouds passed away, and the moon showed herself in all her glory. How delighted we were! My wife got me to remove the large planks I had placed before the opening, and the bright moon-beams streamed through the branches of the tree into our room; a gentle breeze refreshed us, and so delighted were we in gazing on that sky of promise, that we could scarcely bear to go to bed, but spent half the night in projects for the morrow; the good mother alone said, that she could not join in our excursions. Jack and Francis smiled at each other, as they thought of their litter, which was now nearly finished.

A bright sun awoke us early next morning. Fritz and Jack had requested me to allow them to finish their carriage; so leaving Ernest with his mother, I took Francis with me to ascertain the damage done to the garden at Tent-House, about which his mother was so anxious. We easily crossed the bridge, but the water had carried away some of the planks; however, my little boy leaped from one plank to an-

other with great agility, though the distance was sometimes considerable. He was so proud of being my sole companion, that he scarcely touched the ground as he ran on before me; but he had a sad shock when he got to the garden; of which we could not find the slightest trace. All was destroyed, the walks, the fine vegetable beds, the plantation of pines and melons—all had vanished. Francis stood like a marble statue, as pale and as still; till, bursting into tears, he recovered himself.

"O! my good mother," said he; "what will she say when she hears of this misfortune? But she need not know it, father," added he, after a pause; "it would distress her too much; and if you and my brothers will help me, we will repair the damage before she can walk. The plants may not be so large; but the earth is moist, and they will grow quickly, and I will work hard to get it in order."

I embraced my dear boy, and promised him this should be our first work. I feared we should have many disasters to repair; but a child of twelve years old gave me an example of resignation and courage. We agreed to come next day to begin our labor, for the garden was too well situated for me to abandon it. It was on a gentle declivity, at the foot of the rocks, which sheltered it from the north winds, and was conveniently watered from the cascade. I resolved to add a sort of bank, or terrace, to protect it from the violent rains; and Francis was so pleased with the idea that he began to gather the large stones which were scattered over the garden, and to carry them to the place where I wished to build my terrace.

He would have worked all day, if I would have allowed him; but I wanted to look after my young plantations, my sugar-canes, and my fields, and after the destruction I had just witnessed, I had everything to fear. I proceeded to the avenue of fruit-trees that led to Tent-House, and was agreeably surprised. All were half-bowed to the ground, as well as the bamboos that supported them, but few were torn up, and I saw that my sons and I, with the labor of two or three days, could restore them. Some of them had already began to bear fruit, but all was destroyed for this year. This was, however, a trifling loss, compared with what I had anticipated; for, having no more plants of European fruits, I could not have replaced them. Besides, having resolved to inhabit Tent-House at present, entirely,—being there defended from storms,—it was absolutely necessary to contrive some

protection from the heat. My new plantations afforded little shade yet, and I trembled to propose to my wife to come and inhabit these burning rocks. Francis was gathering some of the beautiful unknown flowers of the island for his mother, and, when he had formed his nosegay, bringing it to me,—

"See, father," said he, "how the rain has refreshed these flowers. I wish it would rain still, it is so dreadfully hot here. Oh! if we had but a little shade."

"That is just what I was thinking of, dear," said I; "we shall have shade enough when my trees are grown; but in the meantime——"

"In the mean time, father," said Francis, "I will tell you what you must do. You must make a very long broad colonnade before our house, covered with cloth, and open before, so that mother may have air and shade at once."

I was pleased with my son's idea, and promised him to construct a gallery soon, and call it the *Franciade* in honor of him. My little boy was delighted that his suggestion should be thus approved, and begged me not to tell his mother, as he wished to surprise her, as much as his brothers did with their carriage; and he hoped the *Franciade* might be finished before she visited Tent-House. I assured him I would be silent; and we took the road hence, talking about our new colonnade.

I projected making it the most simple and easy way. A row of strong bamboo-canes planted at equal distances along the front of our house, and united by a plank of wood at the top, cut into arches between the canes; others I would place sloping from the rock, to which I would fasten them by iron cramps; these were to be covered with sail-cloth, prepared with the elastic gum, and well secured to the plank. This building would not take much time, and I anticipated the pleasure of my wife when she found out that it was the invention of her little favorite, who, of a mild and reflecting disposition, was beloved by us all.

As we walked along, we saw something approaching, that Francis soon discovered to be his brothers, with their new carriage: and concluding that his mother occupied it, he hastened to meet them, lest they should proceed to the garden. But, on our approach, we discovered that Ernest was in the litter, which was borne by the cow before, on which Fritz was mounted, and by the ass behind, with Jack on it. Ernest declared the conveyance was so easy and delightful, that he should often take his mother's place.

"I like that very much," said Jack; "then I will take care that we will harness the onagra and the buffalo for you, and they will give you a pretty jolting, I promise you. The cow and ass are only for mother. Look, father, is it not complete? We wished to try it as soon as we finished it, so we got Ernest to occupy it while mother was asleep."

Ernest declared it only wanted two cushions, one to sit upon the other to recline against, to make it perfect; and though I could not help smiling at his love of ease, I encouraged the notion, in order to delay my wife's excursion till our plans were completed. I then put Francis into the carriage beside his brother; and, ordering Fritz and Jack to proceed with their equipage to inspect our corn fields, I returned to my wife, who was still sleeping. On her awakening, I told her the garden and plantations would require a few days labor to set them in order, and I should leave Ernest, who was not yet in condition to be a laborer, to nurse her and read to her.

My sons returned in the evening, and gave me a melancholy account of our corn-fields; the corn was completely destroyed and we regretted this the more, as we had very little left for seed. We had anticipated a feast of *real bread*, but we were obliged to give up all hope for this year, and to content ourselves with our cakes of cassava and with potatoes. The maize had suffered less, and might have been a resource for us, but that the large hard grain was so very difficult to reduce to flour fine enough for dough. Fritz often recurred to the necessity of building a mill near the cascade at Tent-House; but this was not the work of a moment, and we had time to consider of it; for at present we had no corn to grind.

As I found Francis had let his brothers into all our secrets, it was agreed that I, with Fritz, Jack, and Francis, should proceed to Tent-House next morning. Francis desired to be of the party, that he might direct the laying out of the garden, he said with an important air, as he had been his mother's assistant on its formation. We arranged our bag of vegetable-seeds, and, having bathed my wife's foot with a simple imbrocation, we offered our united prayers, and retired to our beds to prepare ourselves for the toils of the next day.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

A CHEST—ITS CONTENTS—AND THEIR APPROPRIATION.

We rose early; and, after our usual morning duties, we left our invalids for the whole day, taking with us for our dinner, a goose and some potatoes, made ready the evening before. We harnessed the bull and the buffalo to the cart, and I sent Fritz and Jack to the wood of bamboos, with orders to load the cart with as many as it would contain; and, especially to select some very thick ones for my colonnade; the rest I intended for props for my young trees; and this I proposed to be my first undertaking.

Francis would have preferred beginning with the *Franciade*, or the garden, but he was finally won over by the thoughts of the delicious fruits which we might lose by our neglect; the peaches, plums, pears, and, above all, the cherries, of which he was very fond. He then consented to assist me in holding the trees whilst I replaced the roots; after which he went to cut the reeds to tie them. Suddenly I heard him cry, "Father, father, here is a large chest come for us; come and take it." I ran to him, and saw that it was the very chest we had seen floating, and which we had taken for the boat at a distance; the waves had left it in our bay, entangled in the reeds, which grew abundantly here. It was almost buried in the sand. We could not remove it alone, and, notwithstanding our curiosity, we were compelled to wait for the arrival of my sons. We returned to our work, and it was pretty well advanced when the tired and hungry party returned with their cartload of bamboos. We rested, and sat down to eat our goose. Guavas and sweet acorns, which had escaped the storm, and which my sons brought, completed our repast. Fritz had killed a large bird in the marsh, which I took at first for a young flamingo; but it was a young cassowary, the first I had seen in the island. This bird is remarkable for its extraordinary size, and for its plumage, so fine and short that it seems rather to be hair than feathers. I should have liked to have had it alive to ornament our poultry-yard, and it was so young we might have tamed it; but Fritz's unerring aim had killed it at once. I wished to let my wife see this rare bird, which, if standing

on its webbed feet would have been four feet high; I therefore forbade them to meddle with it.

As we ate, we talked of the chest, and, our curiosity being stronger than our hunger, we swallowed our repast hastily, and then ran down to the shore. We were obliged to plunge into the water up to the waist, and then had some difficulty to extricate it from the weed and slime, and to push it on shore. No sooner had we placed it in safety than Fritz, with a strong hatchet, forced it open, and we all eagerly crowded to see the contents. Fritz hoped it would be powder and fire-arms; Jack, who was somewhat fond of dress, and had notions of elegance, declared in favor of clothes, and particularly of linen, finer and whiter than that which his mother wove; if Ernest had been there, books would have been his desire; for my own part, there was nothing I was more anxious for than European seeds, particularly corn; Francis had a lingering wish that the chest might contain some of those gingerbread cakes which his grandmother used to treat him with in Europe, and which he had often regretted; but he kept this wish to himself, for fear his brothers should call him "little glutton," and assured us that he should like a little pocket-knife, with a small saw, better than anything in the world; and he was the only one who had his wish.

The chest was opened; and we saw that it was filled with a number of trifling things likely to tempt savage nations, and to become the means of exchange, principally glass and iron ware, colored beads, pins, needles, looking-glasses, children's toys, constructed as models, such as carts, and tools of every sort; amongst which we found some likely to be useful, such as hatchets, saws, planes, gimlets, &c.; besides a collection of knives, of which Francis had the choice; and scissors, which were reserved for mother, her own being nearly worn out. I had likewise the pleasure of finding a quantity of nails of every size and kind, besides iron hooks, staples, &c., which I needed greatly.

After we had examined the contents, and selected what we wanted immediately, we closed up the chest, and conveyed it to our magazine at Tent-House. We had spent so much time in our examination, that we had some difficulty to finish propping our trees, and to arrive at home before it was dark. We found my wife somewhat uneasy at our lengthened absence, but our appearance soon calmed her. "Mother," said I, "I have brought back all your chickens to crowd under your wing."

"And we have not come back empty handed," said Jack, "Look, mother; there are a beautiful pair of scissors, a large paper of needles, another of pins, and a thimble! How rich you are now! And, when you get well, you can make me a pretty waistcoat, and a pair of trousers, for I am in great want of them."

"And I, mother," said Francis, "have brought you a mirror, that you may arrange your cap; you have often been sorry father did not remember to bring one from the ship. This was intended for the savages, and I will begin with you."

"I believe I rather resemble one now," said my good Elizabeth, arranging the red and yellow silk handkerchief which she usually wore on her head.

"Only, mother," said Jack, "when you wear the comical, pointed bonnet which Ernest made you."

"What matters it," said she, whether it be pointed or round? It will protect me from the sun, and it is the work of my Ernest, to whom I am much obliged."

Ernest, with great ingenuity and patience, had endeavored to plait his mother a bonnet of the rice-straw; he had succeeded; but not knowing how to form the round crown, he was obliged to finish it in a point, to the great and incessant diversion of his brothers.

"Mother," said Ernest, in his usual grave and thoughtful tone. "I should not like you to look like a savage; therefore, as soon as I regain the use of my hand, my first work shall be to make you a bonnet, which I will take care shall be formed with a round crown, as you will lend me one of your large needles, and I will take to sew the crown on, the head of either Jack or Francis."

"What do you mean? My head!" said they both together.

"O, I don't mean to take it off your shoulders," said he; "it will only be necessary that one of you should kneel down before me, for a day perhaps, while I use your head as a model; and you need not cry out much if I should chance to push my needle in."

This time the philosopher had the laugh on his side, and his tormentors were silenced.

We now explained to my wife where we had found the the presents we had brought her. My offerings to her were a light axe, which she could use to cut her fire-wood with, and an iron kettle, smaller and more convenient than the one she had.

Fritz had retired, and now came in, dragging with difficulty his huge cassowary. "Here, mother," said he "I have brought you a little chicken for your dinner;" and the astonishment and laughter again commenced. The rest of the evening was spent in plucking the bird, to prepare part of it for next day. We then retired to rest, that we might begin our labor early next morning. Ernest chose to remain with his books and his mother, for whom he formed with the mattresses a sort of reclining chair, in which she was able to sit up in bed and sew. Thus she endured a confinement of six weeks, without complaint, and in that time got all our clothes put into good order.

Francis had nearly betrayed our secret once, by asking his mother to make him a mason's apron. "A mason's apron?" said she; "are you going to build a house, child?"

"I meant to say a gardener's apron," said he.

His mother was satisfied, and promised to comply with his request.

In the meantime, my three sons and I labored assiduously to get the garden into order again, and to raise the terraces, which we hoped might be a defence against future storms. Fritz had also proposed to me to construct a stone conduit, to bring the water to our kitchen-garden from the river, to which we might carry it back, after it had passed round our vegetable-beds. This was a formidable task, but too useful an affair to be neglected; and aided by the geometrical skill of Fritz, and the ready hands of my two younger boys, the conduit was completed.

I took an opportunity at the same time, to dig a pond above the garden, into which the conduit poured the water; this was always warm with the sun, and by means of a sluice, we were able to disperse it in little channels to water the garden. The pond would also be useful to preserve small fish and crabs for use.

We next proceeded to our embankment. This was intended to protect the garden from any extraordinary overflow of the river, and from the water running from the rocks after heavy rains. We then laid out our garden on the same plan as before, except that I made the walks wider and not so flat; I carried one directly to our house which, in the autumn, I intended to plant with shrubs, that my wife might have a shady avenue to approach her garden; where I also planned an arbor furnished with seats, as a resting-place for her. The rocks were covered with numerous climbing plants, bearing every

variety of elegant flower, and I had only to make my selection.

All this work, with the enclosing the garden with palisades of bamboo, occupied us about a fortnight, in which time our invalids made great progress towards their recovery. After the whole was finished, Francis entreated me to begin his gallery. My boys approved of my plan, and Fritz declared that the house was certainly comfortable and commodious, but that it would be wonderfully improved by a colonnade, with a little pavilion at each end, and a fountain in each pavilion.

"I never heard a word of these pavilions," said I.

"No," said Jack, "they are our own invention. The colonnade will be called the *Franciade;* and we wish our little pavilions to be named, the one *Fritzia*; and the other *Jackia*, if you please."

"I agreed to this reasonable request, and only begged to know how they could procure water for their fountains. Fritz undertook to bring the water, if I would only assist them in completing this little scheme, to give pleasure to their beloved mother. I was charmed to see the zeal and anxiety of my children to oblige their tender mother. Her illness seemed to have strengthened their attachment: they thought only how to console and amuse her. She sometimes told me she really blessed the accident, which had taught her how much she was valued by all around her.

CHAPTER XL.

A FORGE—INGENIOUS BELLOWS, AND OTHER IMPROVEMENTS.

The next day was Sunday—our happy Sabbath for repose and quiet conversation at home. After passing the day in our usual devotions and sober reading, my three elder boys requested my permission to walk towards our farm in the evening. On their return, they informed me it would be necessary to give a few days' labor to our plantations of maize and potatoes. I therefore determined to look to them.

Though I was out early next morning, I found Fritz and Jack had been gone some time, leaving only the ass in the stables, which I secured for my little Francis. I perceived

also, that they had dismounted my cart, and carried away the wheels; from which I concluded that they had met with some tree in their walk the preceding evening, suitable for the pipes for their fountains, and that they had now returned to cut it down, and convey it to Tent-House.

As I did not know where to meet with them, I proceeded with Francis on the ass to commence his favorite work. I drew my plan on the ground first. At the distance of twelve feet from the rock which formed the front of our house, I marked a straight line of fifty feet, which I divided into ten spaces of five feet each for my colonnade; the two ends were to be reserved for the two pavilions my sons wished to build.

I was busy in my calculations, and Francis placing stakes in the places I wished to dig, when the cart drove up with our two good laborers. They had, as I expected, found the evening before a species of pine, well adapted for their pipes. They had cut down four, of fifteen or twenty feet in length, which they had brought on the wheels of the cart, drawn by the four animals. They had some difficulty in transporting them to the place; and the greatest still remained—the boring the trunks, and then uniting them firmly. I had neither augers nor any tools fit for the purpose. I had, certainly, constructed a little fountain at Falcon's Nest; but the stream was near at hand, and was easily conveyed by cane pipes to our tortoise-shell basin. Here the distance was considerable, the ground unequal, and, to have the water pure and cool, underground pipes were necessary.

I thought of large bamboos, but Fritz pointed out the knots, and the difficulty of joining the pieces, and begged me to leave it to him, as he had seen fountains made in Switzerland, and had no fears of success.

In the meantime, all hands set to work at the arcade. We selected twelve bamboos, of equal height and thickness, and fixed them securely in the earth, at five feet from each other. These formed a pretty colonnade, and were work enough for one day.

We took care to divert all inquiries at night, by discussing the subjects which our invalids had been reading during the day. The little library of our captain was very choice; besides the voyages and travels, which interested them greatly, there was a good collection of historians, and some of the best poets, for which Ernest had no little taste. However, he requested earnestly that he might be of our party next day, and Francis good-naturedly, offered to stay with

mother, expecting, no doubt, Ernest's congratulations on the forward state of the *Franciade.*

The next morning Ernest and I set out, his brothers having preceded us. Poor Ernest regretted, as we went, that he had no share in these happy schemes for his mother. I reminded him, however, of his dutiful care of her during her sickness, and all his endeavors to amuse her. "And besides," added I, "did you not make her a straw bonnet?"

"Yes," said he, "and I now remember what a frightful shape it was. I will try to make a better, and will go to-morrow morning to choose my straw."

As we approached Tent-House, we heard a most singular noise, echoing at intervals amongst the rocks. We soon discovered the cause; in a hollow of the rocks I saw a very hot fire, which Jack was blowing through a cane, whilst Fritz was turning amidst the embers a bar of iron. When it was red-hot, they laid it on an anvil I had brought from the ship, and struck it alternately with hammers to bring it to a point.

"Well done, my young smiths," said I; "we ought to try all things, and keep what is good. Do you expect to succeed in making your auger? I suppose that is what you want."

"Yes, father," said Fritz; "we should succeed well enough if we only had a good pair of bellows; you see we have already got a tolerable point."

Now Fritz could not believe anything was impossible. He had killed a kangaroo the night before, and skinned it. The flesh made us a dinner; of the skin he determined to make a pair of bellows. He nailed it, with the hair out, not having time to tan it, to two flat pieces of wood, with holes in them; to this he added a reed for the pipe; he then fixed it, by means of a long cord and a post, to the side of his fire, and Jack with his hand or his foot, blew the fire, so that the iron was speedily red-hot, and quite malleable. I then showed them how to twist the iron into a screw,—rather clumsy, but which would answer the purpose tolerably well. At one end they formed a ring, in which we placed a piece of wood transversely, to enable them to turn the screw. We then made a trial of it. We placed a tree on two props, and Fritz and I managed the auger so well, that we had our tree pierced through in a very little time, working first at one end and then at the other. Jack, in the meantime, collected the shavings we made, which he deposited in the kitchen for his mother's use, to kindle the fire.

Ernest, meanwhile, was walking about, making observa-

tions, and giving his advice to his brothers on the architecture of their pavilions, till, seeing they were going to bore another tree, he retired into the garden to see the embankment. He returned, delighted with the improvements, and much disposed to take some employment. He wanted to assist in boring the tree, but we could not all work at it. I undertook this labor myself, and sent him to blow the bellows, while his brothers labored at the forge, the work not being too hard for his lame hand. My young smiths were engaged in flattening the iron to make joints to unite their pipes; they succeeded very well, and then began to dig the ground to lay them. Ernest, knowing something of geometry and land surveying, was able to give them some useful hints, which enabled them to complete their work successfully.

Leaving them to do this, I employed myself in covering in my long colonnade. After I had placed on my columns a plank cut in arches, which united them, and was firmly nailed to them, I extended from it bamboos, placed sloping against the rock, and secured to it by cramps of iron, the work of my young smiths. When my bamboo roof was solidly fixed, the canes as close as possible, I filled the interstices with a clay I found near the river, and poured gum over it; I had thus an impervious and brilliant roof, which appeared to be varnished, and striped green and brown. I then raised the floor a foot, in order that there might be no damp, and paved it with the square stones I had preserved when we cut the rock.

It must be understood that all this was the work of many days. I was assisted by Jack and Fritz, and Ernest and Francis alternately, one always remaining with his mother, who was still unable to walk. Ernest employed his time, when at home, in making the straw bonnet, without either borrowing his brother's head for a model, or letting any of them know what he was doing. Nevertheless, he assisted his brothers with their pavilions by his really valuable knowledge. They formed them very elegantly,—sometimes like a Chinese pagoda. They were exactly square, supported on four columns, and rather higher than the gallery. The roofs terminated in a point, and resembled *a large parasol.* The fountains were in the middle, the basins, breast-high, were formed of the shells of two turtles from our reservoir, which were mercilessly sacrificed for the purpose, and furnished our table abundantly for some days. They succeeded the

cassowary, which had supplied us very seasonably: its flesh tasted like beef, and made excellent soup.

But to return to the fountains. Ernest suggested the idea of ornamenting the end of the perpendicular pipe, which brought the water to the basin, with shells. Every sort might be collected on the shore, of the most brilliant colors, and curious and varied shapes. He was passionately devoted to natural history, and had made a collection of these, endeavoring to classify them from the descriptions he met with in the books of voyages and travels. Some of these, of the most dazzling beauty, were placed round the pipe, which had been plastered with clay, from thence the water was received into *a volute*, shaped like an antique urn, and again was poured gracefully into the large turtle-shell; a small channel conveyed it then out of the pavilions. The whole was completed in less time than I could have imagined, and greatly surpassed my expectations; conferring an inestimable advantage on our dwelling, by securing us from the heat.

All honor was rendered to Master Francis, the inventor, and *The Franciade* was written in large letters on the middle arch; *Fritzia* and *Jackia* were written in the same way over the pavilions. Ernest alone was not named; and he seemed somewhat affected by it. He had acquired a great taste for rambling and botanizing, and had communicated it also to Fritz, and, now that our labors were ended at Tent-House, they left us to nurse our invalid, and made long excursions together which lasted sometimes whole days.

As they generally returned with some game, or some new fruit, we pardoned their absence, and they were always welcome. Sometimes they brought a kangaroo, sometimes an agouti, the flesh of which resembles that of a rabbit, but is richer; sometimes they brought wild ducks, pigeons, and even partridges. These were contributed by Fritz, who never went out without his gun and his dogs.

Ernest brought us natural curiosities, which amused us much, stones, crystals, petrefactions, insects, butterflies of rare beauty, and flowers whose colors and fragrance no one in Europe can form an idea of. Sometimes he brought fruit, which we always administered first to our monkey as taster; some of them proved very delicious. Two of his discoveries, especially, were most valuable acquisitions, the guajaraba, on the large leaf of which one may write with a pointed instrument, and the fruit of which, a sort of grape, is very good to eat; also the date-palm, every part of which is so useful, that

we were truly thankful to Heaven, and our dear boys for the discovery. Whilst young, the trunk contains a sort of *marrow*, very delicious. The date-palm is crowned by a head, formed of from forty to eighty leafy branches, which spread round the top. The dates are particularly good, about half-dried; and my wife immediately began to preserve them. My sons could only bring the fruit now, but we proposed to transplant some of the trees themselves near our abode. We did not discourage our sons in these profitable expeditions; but they had another aim, of which I was yet ignorant.

In the meantime, I usually walked with one of my younger sons towards Tent-House, to attend to our garden, and to see if our works continued in good condition to receive mother, who daily improved; but I insisted on her being completely restored, before she was introduced to them.

Our dwelling looked beautiful among the picturesque rocks, surrounded by trees of every sort, and facing the smooth and lovely Bay of Safety. The garden was not so forward as I could have wished; but we were obliged to be patient, and hope for the best.

CHAPTER XLI.

A GROTTO—ITS DISCOVERY AND ENLARGEMENT.

One day, having gone over with my younger sons to weed the garden, and survey our possessions, I perceived that the roof of the gallery wanted a little repair, and called Jack to raise for me the rope ladder which I had brought from Falcon's Nest, and which had been very useful while we were constructing the roof; but we sought for it everywhere; it could not be found; and, as we were quite free from *robbers* in our island, I could only accuse my elder sons, who had doubtless carried it off to ascend some tall cocoa-nut tree. Obliged to be content, we walked into the garden by the foot of the rocks.

Since our arrival, I had been somewhat uneasy at hearing a dull continued noise, which appeared to proceed from this side. The forge we had passed, now extinguished, and our workmen were absent. Passing along, close to the rocks, the noise became more distinct, and I was truly alarmed. Could

it be an earthquake? Or perhaps it announced some volcanic explosion. I stopped before that part of the rock where the noise was loudest; the surface was firm and level; but, from time to time, blows and falling stones seemed to strike our ears. I was uncertain what to do; curiosity prompted me to stay, but a sort of terror urged me to remove my child and myself. However, Jack, always daring, was unwilling to go till he had discovered the cause of the phenomenon. "If Francis were here," said he, "he would fancy it was wicked gnomes, working underground, and he would be in a fine fright. For my part, I believe it is only people come to collect salt in the rock."

"People!" said I; "you don't know what you are saying, Jack. I could excuse Francis and his *gnomes*,—it would be at least a poetic fancy, but yours is quite absurd. Where are the people to come from?"

"But what else can it be?" said he. "Hark! you may hear them strike the rock."

"Be certain, however," said I, "there are no people." At that moment, I distinctly heard human voices, speaking, laughing, and apparently clapping their hands. I could not distinguish any words, I was struck with a mortal terror; but Jack, whom nothing could alarm, clapped his hands also, with joy, that he had guessed right.

"What did I say, father? Was I not right? Are there not people within the rock?—friends, I hope."

He was approaching the rock, when it appeared to me to be shaking; a stone soon fell down, then another. I seized hold of Jack to drag him away, lest he should be crushed by the fragments of rock. At that moment another stone fell, and we saw two heads appear through the opening,—the heads of Fritz and Ernest.

Judge of our surprise and joy! Jack was soon through the opening and assisting his brothers to enlarge it. As soon as I could enter, I stepped in, and found myself in a real grotto, of a round form, with a vaulted roof, divided by a narrow crevice, which admitted the light and air. It was, however, better lighted by two large gourd lamps. I saw my long ladder of ropes suspended from the opening at the top, and thus comprehended how my sons penetrated into this recess, of which it was impossible to suspect the existence from the outside. But how had they discovered it? and what were they making of it! These were my two questions. Ernest replied at once to the last:—

"I wished," said he, "to make a resting-place for my mother, when she came to her garden. My brothers have each built some place for her and called it by their name. I had a desire that some place in our island might be dedicated to Ernest, and I now present you the *Grotto Ernestine*."

"And after all," said Jack, "it will make a pretty dwelling for the first of us that marries."

"Silence, little giddy-pate," said I; "where do you expect to find a wife in this island? Do you think you shall discover one among the rocks, as your brothers have discovered the grotto? But tell me, Fritz, what directed you here?"

"Our good star, father," said he. "Ernest and I were walking round these rocks, and talking of his wish for a resting-place for my mother on her way to the garden. He projected a tent; but the path was too narrow to admit it; and the rock, heated by the sun, was like a stove. We were considering what we should do, when I saw on the summit of the rock a very beautiful little unknown quadruped. From its form I should have taken it for a young chamois, if I had been in Switzerland; but Ernest reminded me that the chamois was peculiar to cold countries, and he thought it was a gazelle or antelope; probably the gazelle of Guinea or Java, called by naturalists the chevrotain.

"You may suppose that I tried to climb the rock on which this little animal remained standing, with one foot raised, and its pretty head turning first to one side and then to the other; but it was useless to attempt it here, where the rock was smooth and perpendicular; besides, I should have put the gazelle to flight, as it is a timid and wild animal. I then remembered there was a place near Tent-House where a considerable break occurred in the chain of rocks, and we found that, with a little difficulty, the rock might be scaled by ascending the ravine.

Ernest laughed at me, and asked me if I expected the antelope would wait patiently till I got to it? No matter, I determined to try, and told him to remain; but he soon determined to accompany me, for he fancied that, in the fissure of a rock, he saw a flower of a beautiful rose-color, which was unknown to him. My learned botanist thought it must be an *erica*, or heath, and wished to ascertain the fact. One helping the other, we soon got through all difficulties, and arrived at the summit; and here we were amply repaid by the beautiful prospect on every side. We will talk of that after-

wards, father; I have formed some idea of the country from which these rocks separate us.

"But to return to our grotto. I went along, first looking for my pretty gazelle, which I saw licking a piece of rock, where doubtless she found some salt. I was hardly a hundred yards from her, my gun ready, when I was suddenly stopped by a crevice, which I could not cross, though the opening was not very wide. The pretty quadruped was on the rock opposite to me; but of what use would it have been to shoot it, when I could not secure it? I was obliged to defer it till a better opportunity offered, and turned to examine the opening, which appeared deep; still I could see that the bottom of the cavity was white, like that of our former grotto. I called Ernest, who was behind me, with his plants and stones, to impart to him an idea that suddenly struck me. It was, to make this the retreat for my mother. I told him that I believed the floor of the cave was nearly on a level with the path that led to the garden, and we had only to make an opening in the form of a natural grotto, and it would be exactly what he wished.

"Ernest was much pleased with the idea, and said he could easily ascertain the level by means of a weight attached to a string; but, though he was startled at the difficulty of descending to our labor every day, and returning in the evening, he would not agree to my wish of beginning at the outside of the rock, as we had done in our former grotto. He had several reasons for wishing to work from within. 'In the first place,' said he, 'it will be so much cooler this summer weather; we should soon be unable to go on laboring before the burning rock; then our path is so narrow, that we should not know how to dispose of the rubbish; in the interior it will serve to make a bench round the grotto; besides, I should have such pleasure in completing it secretly, and unsuspected, without any assistance or advice except yours, my dear Fritz, which I accept with all my heart; so pray find out some means of descending and ascending readily.'

"I immediately recollected your rope-ladder, father; it was forty feet long, and we could easily fasten it to the point of the rock. Ernest was delighted and sanguine. We returned with all speed. We took first a roll of cord and some candles; then the rope-ladder, which we rolled up as well as we could, but had great difficulty in conveying it up the rock; once or twice, when the ascent was very difficult, we were obliged to fasten a cord to it, and draw it up after us; but determination,

courage, and perseverance overcame all obstacles. We arrived at the opening, and, on sounding it, we were glad to find our ladder would be long enough to reach the bottom. We then measured the outside of the rock, and ascertained that the floor of the grotto was near the same level as the ground outside.

"We remembered your lessons, father, and made some experiments to discover if it contained mephitic air. We first lighted some candles, which were not extinguished; we then kindled a large heap of sticks and dried grass, which burned well, the smoke passing through the opening like a chimney. Having no uneasiness about this, we deferred our commencement till the next day. Then we lighted the forge, and pointed some iron bars we found in the magazine; these were to be our tools to break open the rock. We secured also, your chisel, as well as some hammers, and all our tools were thrown down below; we then arranged two gourds to serve us for lamps; and, when all was ready, and our ladder firmly fixed, we descended ourselves; and we have nothing more to tell you except that we were very glad when we heard your voices outside at the very time when our work was drawing to an end. We were sure, when we distinguished your voices so clearly that we must be near the external air; we redoubled our efforts, and here we are. Now tell us, father, are you pleased with our idea? and will you forgive us for making a mystery of it?"

I assured them of my forgiveness, and my cordial approbation of their manly and useful enterprise; and made Ernest happy by declaring that it should always be called the *Grotto Ernestine.*

"Thanks to you all, my dear children," said I; "your dear mother will now prefer Tent-House to Falcon's Nest, and will have no occasion to risk breaking a limb in descending the winding staircase. I will assist you to enlarge the opening, and as we will leave it in all the simplicity of a natural grotto, it will soon be ready."

We all set to work; Jack carried away the loosened stones and rubbish, and formed benches on each side the grotto. With what had fallen outside, he also made two seats in the front of the rock, and before evening all was complete. Fritz ascended to unfasten the ladder, and to convey it by an easier road to Tent-House; he then rejoined us, and we returned to our castle in the air which was henceforward only to be looked on as a pleasure-house. We

resolved, however, to establish here as we had done at our farm, a colony of our cattle, which increased daily: we had now a number of young cows, which were most useful for our support. We wished, however, for a female buffalo, as the milk of that animal makes excellent cheese. Conversing on our future plans, we soon reached home, and found all well.

CHAPTER XLII.

JOURNEY IN THE LITTER TO TENT-HOUSE.

In a few days we completed the *Grotto Ernestine.* It contained some stalactites; but not so many as our former grotto. We found, however, a beautiful block of salt, which resembled white marble, of which Ernest formed a sort of altar, supported by four pillars, on which he placed a pretty vase of citron-wood, which he turned himself, and in which he arranged some of the beautiful *erica* which had been the cause of his discovering the grotto. It was one of those occasions when his feelings overcame his natural indolence, when he became for a time the most active of the four, and brought forward all his resources, which were many. This indolence was merely physical; when not excited by any sudden circumstance, or by some fancy which soon assumed the character of a passion, he loved ease, and to enjoy life tranquilly in study. He improved his mind continually, as well by his excellent memory, as by natural talent and application. He reflected, made experiments, and was always successful.

He had at last succeeded in making for his mother a very pretty bonnet. He had also composed some verses, which were intended to celebrate her visit to Tent-House; and this joyful day being at last fixed, the boys all went over, the evening before, to make their preparations. The flowers that the storm had spared were gathered to ornament the fountains, the altar, and the table, on which was placed an excellent cold dinner, entirely prepared by themselves.

Fritz supplied and roasted the game;—a fine bustard, the flesh of which resembles a turkey, and a brace of partridges. Ernest brought pines, melons, and figs; Jack should have sup-

plied the fish, but was able only to procure oysters, crabs, and turtle's eggs. Francis had the charge of the dessert, which consisted of a dish of strawberries, honeycomb, and the cream of a cocoa-nut. I had contributed a bottle of Canary wine, that we might drink mother's health. All was arranged on a table in the middle of the *Franciade*, and my sons returned to accompany the expedition next day.

The morning was beautiful, and the sun shone brightly on our emigration. My wife was anxious to set out, expecting she should have to return to her aërial dwelling. Though her leg and foot were better, she still walked feebly, and she begged us to harness the cow and ass to the cart, and to lead them as gently as possible.

"I will only go a little way the first day," said she, "for I am not strong enough to visit Tent-House yet.

We felt quite convinced she would change her opinion when once in her litter. I wished to carry her down the staircase; but she declined, and descended very well with the help of my arm. When the door was open, and she found herself once more in the open air, surrounded by her children, she thanked God, with tears of gratitude, for her recovery and all his mercies to us. Then the pretty osier carriage arrived. They had harnessed the cow and young bull to it; Francis answering for the docility of Valiant, provided he guided him himself. Accordingly, he was mounted before, his cane in his hand, and his bow and quiver on his back, very proud to be mother's charioteer. My other three boys, mounted on their animals, were ready before, to form the advanced guard, while I proposed to follow, and watch over the whole.

My wife was moved even to tears, and could not cease admiring her new carriage, which Fritz and Jack presented to her as their own work. Francis, however, boasted that he had carded the cotton for the soft cushion on which she was to sit, and I, that I had made it. I then lifted her in; and, as soon as she was seated, Ernest came to put her new bonnet on her head, which greatly delighted her; it was of fine straw, and so thick and firm that it might defend her from the rain. But what pleased her most was that it was the shape worn by the Swiss peasants in the Canton of Vaud, where my dear wife had resided some time in her youth. She thanked all her dear children, and felt so easy and comfortable in her new conveyance, that we arrived at Family Bridge without her feeling the least fatigue. Here we stopped.

"Would you like to cross here, my dear?" said I; "and, as we are very near, look in at your convenient Tent-House, where you will have no staircase to ascend. And we should like to know, too, if you approve of our management of your garden."

"As you please," said she; "in fact, I am so comfortable in my carriage, that if it were necessary, I could make the tour of the island. I should like to see my house again; but it will be so very hot at this season, that we must not stay long."

"But you must dine there, my dear mother," said Fritz, "it is too late to return to dinner at Falcon's Nest; consider, too, the fatigue it would occasion you."

"I would be very glad, indeed, my dear," said she, "but what are we to dine on? We have prepared no provision, and I fear we shall all be hungry."

"What matter," said Jack, "provided you dine with us? You must take your chance. I will go and get some oysters, that we may not die with hunger;" and off he galloped on his buffalo. Fritz followed him, on some pretence, on Lightfoot, Mother wished she had brought a vessel to carry some water from the river, for she knew we could get none at Tent-House. Francis reminded her we could milk the cow, and she was satisfied, and enjoyed her journey much. At last we arrived before the colonnade. My wife was dumb with wonder for some moments.

"Where am I, and what do I see?" said she, when she could speak.

"You see the *Franciade*, mother," said her little boy; "this beautiful colonnade was my invention, to protect you from the heat; stay, read what is written above: *Francis, to his dear mother. May this colonnade, which is called the Franciade, be to her a temple of happiness.* Now mother, lean on me, and come and see my brothers' gifts,—much better than mine;" and he led her to Jack's pavilion, who was standing by the fountain. He held a shell in his hand, which he filled with water, and drank, saying, "To the health of the Queen of the Island; may she have no more accidents, and live as long as her children! Long live Queen Elizabeth, and may she come every day to *Jackia* to drink her son Jack's health."

I supported my wife, and was almost as much affected as herself. She wept and trembled with joy and surprise. Jack and Ernest then joined their hands, and carried her to

the other pavilion, where Fritz was waiting to receive her, and the same scene of tenderness ensued.

"Accept this pavilion, dear mother," said he; "and may *Fritzia* ever make you think of Fritz."

The delighted mother embraced them all, and observing Ernest's name was not commemorated by any trophy, thanked him again for her beautiful bonnet. She then drank some of the delicious water of the fountain, and returned to seat herself at the repast, which was another surprise for her. We all made an excellent dinner; and, at the dessert, I handed my Canary wine round in shells; and then Ernest rose and sung us very prettily, to a familiar air, some little verses he had composed:—

On this festive, happy day,
Let us pour our grateful lay;
Since Heaven has hush'd our mother's pain,
And given her to her sons again.
Then from this quiet, lovely home,
Never, never, may we roam,
All we love around us smile;
Joyful is our desert isle.

When o'er our mother's couch we bent,
Fervent prayers to Heaven we sent,
And God has spared that mother dear,
To bless her happy children here.
Then from this quiet, lovely home,
Never, never, may we roam;
All we love around us smile,
Joyful is our desert isle.

We all joined in chorus, and none of us thought of the ship, of Europe, or of anything that was passing in the world. The island was our universe, and Tent-House was a palace we would not have exchanged for any the world contained. This was one of those happy days that God grants us sometimes on earth, to give us an idea of the bliss of Heaven; and most fervently did we thank Him, at the end of our repast, for all His mercies and blessings to us.

After dinner, I told my wife she must not think of returning to Falcon's Nest, with all its risks of storms and the winding staircase, and she could not better recompense her sons for their labors than by living among them. She was of the same opinion, and was very glad to be so near her kitchen and her stores, and to be able to walk alone with the assistance of a stick in the colonnade, which she could do already;

but she made me promise to leave Falcon's Nest as it was. It would be a pretty place to walk to, and besides, this castle in the air was her own invention.

We agreed that this very evening she should take possession of her own pretty room, with the good felt carpet, on which she could walk without fear; and that the next day I should go with my elder sons and the animals to bring the cart, such utensils as we needed, and, above all, the poultry. Our dogs always followed their masters, as well as the monkey and jackal, and they were so domesticated we had no trouble with them.

I then prevailed on my wife to go into her room and rest for an hour, after which we were to visit the garden. She complied, and, after her repose, found her four sons ready to carry her in her litter as in a sedan-chair. They took care to bring her straight to the grotto, where I was waiting for her. This was a new surprise for the good mother. She could not sufficiently express her astonishment and delight, when Jack and Francis, taking their flageolets, accompanied their brothers, who sung the following verse, which Ernest had added to his former attempt:

Dear mother, let this gift be mine:
Accept the Grotto Ernestine.
May all your hours be doubly blest
Within this tranquil place of rest.

Then from this quiet, lovely home,
Never, never, may we roam;
All we love around us smile,
Joyful is our desert isle.

What cause had we to rejoice in our children! we could not but shed tears to witness their affection and perfect happiness.

Below the vase of flowers on the block of salt, Ernest had written:—

Ernest, assisted by his brother Fritz,
Has prepared this grotto,
As a retreat for his beloved mother,
When she visits her garden.

Ernest then conducted his mother to one of the benches, which he had covered with soft moss as a seat for her, and there she rested at her ease to hear the history of the discovery of the grotto.

It was now my turn to offer my present; the garden, the embankment, the pond and the arbor. She walked, supported by my arm, to view her little empire, and her delight was extreme; the pond, which enabled her to water her vegetables, particularly pleased her, as well as her shady arbor, under which she found all her gardening tools, ornamented with flowers, and augmented by two light *watering-pans*, constructed by Jack and Francis, from two gourds. They had canes for spouts, with the gourd bottles at the end, pierced with holes, through which the water came in the manner of a watering-pan. The embankment was also a great surprise; she proposed to place plants of pines and melons on it, and I agreed to it. Truly did she rejoice at the appearance of the vegetables, which promised us some excellent European provision, a great comfort to her. After expressing her grateful feelings, she returned to the grotto, and, seating herself in her sedan chair, returned to Tent-House, to enjoy the repose she needed, after such a day of excitement. We did not, however, lie down before we had together thanked God for the manifold blessings He had given us, and for the pleasure of that day.

"If I had been in Europe," said my dear wife, "on the festival of my recovery, I should have received a nosegay, a ribbon, or some trinket; here I have had presented a carriage, a colonnade, pavilions, ornamental fountain, a large grotto, a garden, a pond, an arbor, and a straw bonnet!"

CHAPTER XLIII.

OCCUPATION OF TENT-HOUSE.

The next and following days were spent in removing our furniture and property, particularly our poultry, which had multiplied greatly. We also constructed a poultry-yard, at a sufficient distance from our house to save our sleep from disturbance, and still so near that we could easily tend them. We made it as a continuation of the colonnade, and on the same plan, but inclosed in the front by a sort of wire trellis-work, which Fritz and Jack made wonderfully well.

Fritz who had a turn for architecture and mechanics, gave me some good hints, especially one, which we put into exe-

cution. This was to carry the water from the basin of the fountain through the poultry-yard, which enabled us also to have a little pond for our ducks. The pigeons had their abode above the hen-roosts, in some pretty baskets, which Ernest and Francis made, similar to those made by the savages of the Friendly Isles, of which they had seen engravings in Cook's Voyages. When all was finished, my wife was delighted to think, that, even in the rainy season, she could attend to her feathered family and collect their eggs.

"What a difference," said she, admiring the elegance of our buildings,—"what a difference between this Tent-House and the original dwelling that suggested the name to us, and which was our only shelter four years ago! What a surprising progress luxury has made with us in that time! Do you remember, my dear, the barrel, which served us for a table, and the oyster-shells for spoons, the tent where we slept, crowded together on dried leaves, and without undressing, and the river half a mile off, where we were obliged to go to drink if we were thirsty? Compared to what we were then, we are now great *lords*."

"Kings, you mean, mother," said Jack; "for all this island is ours, and it is like a kingdom."

"And how many millions of subjects does Prince Jack reckon in the kingdom of his august father?" said I.

Prince Jack declared he had not yet counted the parrots, kangaroos, the agoutis, and monkeys. The laughter of his brothers stopped him. I then agreed with my wife that our luxuries had increased; but I explained to her that this was the result of our industry. All civilized nations have commenced as we did; necessity has developed the intellect which God has given to man alone, and by degrees the arts have progressed, and knowledge has extended more perhaps than is conducive to happiness. What appeared luxury to us now was still simplicity compared with the luxury of towns, or even villages, among civilized nations. My wife declared she had everything she wished for, and should not know what more to ask for, as we now had only to rest and enjoy our happiness.

I declared against spending our time in rest and indolence, as the sure means of ending our pleasure: and I well knew my dear wife was, like myself, an enemy to idleness; but she dreaded any more laborious undertakings.

"But, mother," said Fritz, "you must let me make a mill under the cascade; it will be so useful when our corn grows,

and even now for the maize. I also think of making an oven in the kitchen, which will be very useful for you to bake your bread in."

"These would indeed be useful labors," said the good mother, smiling; "but can you accomplish them?"

"I hope so," said Fritz; "with the help of God and that of my dear brothers."

Ernest promised his best aid, in return for his brother's kind services in forming his grotto, only requesting occasional leisure for his natural history collections. His mother did not see the utility of these collections, but, willing to indulge her kind and attentive Ernest, she offered, till she could walk well, to assist him in arranging and labelling his plants, which were yet in disorder, and he gratefully consented. In procuring her some paper for the purpose, of which I had brought a large quantity from the vessel, I brought out an unopened packet, amongst which was a piece of some fabric, neither paper nor stuff apparently.

We examined it together, and at length remembered it was a piece of stuff made at Otaheite, which our captain had bought of a native at an island where he had touched on our voyage. Fritz appearing much interested in examining this cloth, Ernest said gravely, "I can teach you how to make it;" and, immediately bringing *Cook's Voyages*, where a detailed description is given, he proceeded to read it. Fritz was disappointed to find it could only be made of the bark of three trees—of these our island produced only one. These trees were the mulberry-tree, the bread-fruit, and the wild fig. We had the last in abundance, but of the two former we had not yet discovered a single plant.

Fritz was not, however, discouraged. "They ought to be here," said he, "since they are found in all the South-Sea Islands. Perhaps we may find them on the other side of the rocks, where I saw some superb unknown trees from the height where we discovered the grotto; and who knows but I may find my pretty gazelle there again. The rogue can leap better than I can over those rocks. I had a great wish to descend them, but found it impossible; some are very high and perpendicular; others have overhanging summits. I might, however, get round as you did by the pass, between the torrent and the rocks at the Great Bay."

Jack offered to be his guide, even with his eyes shut, into that rich country where he conquered and captured his buffalo; and Ernest begged to be of the party. As this was an ex-

expedition which I had long projected, I agreed to accompany them next day, their mother being content to have Francis left with her as a protector. I cautioned Fritz not to fire off his gun when we approached the buffaloes, as any show of hostility might render them furious; otherwise the animals, unaccustomed to man have no fear of him, and will not harm him. "In general," added I, "I cannot sufficiently recommend to you to be careful of your powder; we have not more than will last us a year; and there may be a necessity to have recourse to it for our defence."

"I have a plan for making it," said Fritz, who never saw a difficulty in anything. "I know it is composed of charcoal, saltpetre, and sulphur—and we ought to find all these materials in the island. It is only necessary to combine them, and to form it into little round grains. This is my only difficulty; but I will consider it over; and I have my mill to think on first. I have a confused recollection of a powder manufactory at Berne; there was some machinery that went by water; this machinery moved some hammers, which pounded and mixed the ingredients—was not this the case, father?"

"Something like it," said I; "but we have many things to do, before making powder. First, we must go to sleep; we must set out before daybreak, if we intend to return to-morrow evening."

We did indeed rise before the sun, which would not rise for us. The sky was very cloudy, and shortly we had an abundant and incessant rain, which obliged us to defer our journey, and put us all in bad humor, but my wife, who was not sorry to keep us with her, and who declared that this gracious rain would water her garden and bring it forward.

Fritz was the first who consoled himself; he thought on nothing but building mills, and manufacturing gunpowder. He begged me to draw him a mill; this was very easy so far as regards the exterior,—that is the wheel, and the waterfall that sets it in motion. But the interior,—the disposition of the wheels, the stones to bruise the grain, the sieve, or bolter, to separate the flour from the bran; all this complicated machinery was difficult to explain; but he comprehended all, adding his usual expression,—"I will try, and I shall succeed."

Not to lose any time, and to profit by this rainy day, he began by making sieves of different materials, which he fastened to a circle of pliant wood, and tried, by passing through them the flour of the cassava; others with the hair of the ona-

gra, which is very long and strong, and some with the fibres of bark. His mother admired his work, which he continued to improve more and more. She assured him the sieve would be sufficient for her; it was useless to have the trouble of building a mill.

"But how shall we bruise the grain, mother?" said he, "it would be tedious and hard work."

"And you think there will be no hard work in building your mill?" said Jack. "I am curious to see how you will contrive to form that huge stone, which is called the mill-stone."

"You shall see," said Fritz; "only find me the stone, and it shall be done. Do you think, father, that our rock would be suitable?"

I told him I thought it would be hard enough, but it would be difficult to cut from the rock a piece large enough for the purpose. He made his usual reply,—

"*I will try.* Ernest and Jack will assist me; and perhaps you, father."

I declared my willingness, but named him the *master-mason*, we must be only his workmen. Francis was impatient to see the mill in operation.

"O!" said Jack, "you shall soon have that pleasure. It is a mere trifle; we only want stone, wood, tools, and science."

At the word "*science*," Ernest, who was reading in a corner, without listening to us, raised his head suddenly, saying,—

"What science are you in need of?"

"Of one you know nothing of, Mr. Philosopher," said Jack. "Come, tell us, do you know how to build a mill?"

"A mill!" answered Ernest; "of what description? There are many sorts. I was just looking in my dictionary for it. There are corn-mills, and powder-mills, oil-mills, wind-mills, water-mills, hand-mills, and saw-mills; which do you want?"

Fritz would have liked them all.

"You remind me," said I, "that we brought from the vessel a hand-mill and a saw-mill; taken to pieces, to be sure, but numbered and labelled, so that they could be easily united. They should be in the magazine, where you found the anvil and iron bars. I had forgotten them."

"Let us go and examine them," said Fritz, lighting his lantern; "I shall get some ideas from them."

"Rather," said his mother, "they will spare you the trouble of thinking and laboring."

I sent them all four to seek these treasures, which, heaped

in an obscure corner of the store-room, had escaped my recollection. When we were alone, I seriously besought my wife not to oppose any occupations our children might plan, however they might seem beyond their power; the great point being to keep them continually occupied, so that no evil or dangerous fancies might fill their minds.

"Let them," said I, "cut stone, fell trees, or dig fountains, and bless God that their thoughts are so innocently directed." She understood me, and promised not to discourage them, only fearing the excessive fatigue of these undertakings.

Our boys returned from the magazine, delighted with what they had found, and loaded with work-tools. Those of the masons,—the chisel, the short hammer, and the trowel, were not to be found, and rarely are taken out to sea; but they had collected a great number of carpenters' tools,— saw, planes, rules, &c. And now that Fritz was a smith, he had no difficulty in making any tool he wanted. He was loaded on each shoulder, and in each hand he brought a specimen of gunpowder; one sort was in good condition, and they had found a barrel of it; the other was much damaged by the water. Jack and Francis were also bending under the weight of various articles; among which I saw some pieces of the hand-mill Fritz wished to examine. Ernest, always rather idle, came proudly on, with a leather belt across his shoulders, to which was suspended a large tin box for plants, and a leather portmanteau for stones, minerals, and shells.

His brothers, even Francis, rallied him unmercifully on his immense burden. One offered to help him, another to go and bring the ass; he preserved his grave and thoughtful air, and extended himself on a seat near his mother, who was occupied with his specimens of natural history. Jack deposited his load in a corner, and ran out; we soon saw him return with a hugh screw machine on his head, which he placed before Ernest, saying, with an air of respect,—

"I have the honor to bring for his Highness the Prince of the Isle Penguins, the press for his august plants, which his Highness doubtless found too heavy; and, truly, it is no little weight."

Ernest did not know whether to thank him or to be angry; but he decided to join in the jest, and therefore, answered gravely that he was distressed that his Highness the Prince of the Monkeys should have taken so much trouble to oblige him; that he ought to have employed some of his docile subjects to do it; after all, he confessed that the press, which he

had not noticed, gave him great pleasure; and he placed some plants in it immediately, which he had collected the evening before.

The rain ceasing for a short time, I went with Fritz and Jack to examine our embankment, and to open the sluices of the pond. We found all right, and our garden looking beautiful after the rain. On our return, we looked in at the *Grotto Ernestine*, which we found inundated from the opening above. We proposed to make a trench, or little channel, to carry off the rain-water from it. We returned home, and retired to bed, in hopes of being able to set out next morning. We were, however, again disappointed, and for a longer period than we expected. The rain continued some days, and the country was again a complete lake; we had, however, no storm nor wind, and our possessions did not suffer; so we resolved to wait patiently till the weather would permit us to go.

My wife was delighted to be in her comfortable abode, and to have us around her; neither did we waste the time. Ernest finished the arrangement of his collection with his mother and Francis. Fritz and Jack prepared the tools that would be wanted in their great undertaking—the first was to be a saw-mill. In order to prepare the planks they wished, a very large saw, which they had found amongst the tools, would suit their purpose; but it was necessary to set it in motion by water, and there was the difficulty. Fritz made several models from the thin wood of our chests and the wheels of our guns, but they were too small. In the mean time, the mind of my young mechanic was exercised, his ideas were enlarged and improved; and, as this science was so necessary in our situation, I allowed him to go on with his experiments.

Notwithstanding the rain, protected by my cloak, he went several times to the cascade to look out for a place where he should erect his mills to the best advantage, and have a constant supply of water. Ernest assisted him by his advice, and promised his labor when it should be needed.

Jack and Francis were helping their mother to card cotton, of which she had made a large collection, intending to spin it for our clothing; and I exercised my mechanical talents in turning a large wheel for her, which it was necessary should revolve very easily, her leg being still stiff; and a reel, by which four bobbins were filled at once, by turning a handle.

These different occupations aided us to pass the rainy season, which visited us earlier this year, and did not remain so

long. My wife knew something of dyeing cloth; and, some of the plants she had helped Ernest to dry having left their color on the papers, she made some experiments, and succeeded in obtaining a very pretty blue, to dye our clothes with; and, with the cochineal from our fig-tree, a beautiful red brown with which she had dyed for herself a complete dress.

Thus passed several weeks. Ernest read to us from some amusing or instructive work every evening; and, when his collections were all put in order, he worked at his lathe, or at the business of weaving. At last the sun appeared; we spent some days enjoying it in our delightful colonnade. We went to visit the grotto and the garden where all was going on well —the embankment had prevented the inundation. Satisfied with our work, we now fixed our departure for the next day, once more hoping the rain would not come again to disappoint us.

CHAPTER XLIV.

EXPEDITION OF DISCOVERY.—RESULTS.—BROWN BEARS.

The next day the weather was delightful. We rose before daybreak. My eldest sons took their work-tools, which we might want, and their guns also, but under the condition that they should not use them till I gave the word "Fire!" I carried the bag of provisions. Our flock of sheep had increased so much at the farm, that we allowed ourselves to kill one, and my wife had roasted a piece for us the preceding evening; to this we added a cake of cassava, and for our dessert we depended on the fruits of the trees we might discover.

But, previous to our departure, while I was taking leave of my wife and Francis, I heard a dispute in the colonnade, of which I hastened to learn the cause. I found it was a question between Fritz and Jack, whether we should make the tour of the island by sea or land; and each was anxious for my support. Fritz complained that, since the two expeditions in the canoe, Jack believed himself the first sailor in the world, and they had given him the name of the Lord of the Waves because he was constantly saying,—

"When I was under the waves—when the waves were washing over me, do you think that they left us dry?"

"No, Mr. Sportsman," said Jack, "You got enough of them, and that's the reason you don't wish to try them again. For my part, I love the waves, and I sing, 'The sea! the sea! it was the sea that brought us here!'"

"What a boaster you are," said Fritz: "it was only yesterday you said to me. 'I will guide you; I know the way by the rocks; I got my buffalo there, and I intend to have another.' Was it in the pinnace you intended to pass the defile, and pursue buffaloes?"

"No, no! I meant on foot," said Jack; "but I thought we should be only two then. But, as we are four—father at the helm, and three bold rowers, why should we fatigue ourselves in making the tour of the island on our legs, when we have a good vessel to carry us? What says Mr. Philosopher the prince of idlers to it?"

"For my part," said Ernest, quietly, "I am quite indifferent whether I use my legs in walking, or my arms in rowing, it is equally fatiguing; but walking gives me more chance of filling my plant-box and my game-bag."

"And does he think," added Fritz, "that the mulberry and bread-fruit trees, which we shall certainly find on the other side, grow on the sea? without naming my gazelle, which does not run over the waves."

"No, it is waiting, without moving, for you to shoot it," said Jack; "and, Ernest, perhaps you may find on the sea some of those curious things half plants, half animals, which you were showing me in a book."

"The zoophytes, or polypi: for they are the same family, though there are more than a thousand species," said Ernest, charmed to display his knowledge. But I stopped him by saying: "We will dispense with the thousand names at present. After hearing all your arguments, attend to mine; even Jack must yield to them. Our aim now being to search for the trees we are in need of, and to examine the productions of the island, our most sensible plan will be to walk."

Jack still contended that we might land occasionally; but I showed him the danger of this, the island being in all probability, surrounded by reefs, which might extend so far into the sea as to take us out of the sight of the island; this I intended to ascertain some day; and in the meantime I proposed to them that we should endeavor to find a pass round the rocks on our side, from whence we could walk to the defile at the other end, take our canoe, which we had left at anchor near the Great Bay, and return to Tent-House.

Jack was in ecstasies. He declared the pass must be very well concealed that escaped his search, and, seizing his lasso and his bow, rushed out the first, singing "The sea! the sea!"

'There goes a sailor formed by nature," thought I, as we followed the course of the chain of rocks to the left of our dwelling. It conducted us first to the place of our landing, that little uncultivated plain of triangular form, of which the base was washed by the sea, and the point was lost among the rocks. I found here some traces of our first establishment; but how wretched all appeared compared with our present comforts!

We tried here in vain to find a passage to cross the rocks—the chain was everywhere like an impenetrable wall. We arrived at the ravine Fritz and Ernest had scaled when they discovered their grotto; and, truly nothing but the courage and rashness of youth could have undertaken this enterprise, and continued it daily for three weeks. It appeared to me almost impossible. Fritz offered to ascend, to show me how they accomplished it: but I would not consent, as it could serve no useful purpose. I thought it better for us to proceed to the border of the island, where it was not impossible there might be a small space on the strand, between the rocks and the sea, round which we could pass; from my sons being able to distinguish from the summit the country on the other side, it was evident the chain of rocks could not be very broad.

Suddenly Fritz struck his forehead, and, seizing Ernest by the arm—"Brother," said he, "what fools we have been!"

Ernest inquired what folly they had been guilty of.

"Why did we not," said Fritz, "when we were working within our grotto, attempt to make the opening on the other side? We should not have had much difficulty, I am persuaded; and, if our tools had not been sufficient, a little powder would have opened us a door on the other side. Only consider, father, the convenience of bringing the cart, loaded with the trees we wanted, through our grotto, and to be able to go a-hunting without having I don't know how many miles to go."

"Well, we can still do that," said Ernest, in his usual calm, grave manner; "if we do not find another passage, we will make one through the Grotto Ernestine, with mother's permission, as it is her property."

This idea of my son appeared good. It was quite certain, from our experience at Tent-House and in the Grotto, that

the cavity in the rocks was of very great extent, and it did not appear difficult to pierce through to the other side; but some other chain of rocks, some gigantic tree, some hill, at the end of our tunnel, might render all our labor useless.

I proposed that we should defer our work till we had examined the nature of the ground on the other side. My sons agreed; and we proceeded with renewed courage, when we were suddenly checked by the sight of the sea beating against a perpendicular rock of terrific height, which terminated our island on this side, and did not give us a chance of going on. I saw the rock did not extend far; but how to get round it I could not devise. I did not conceive we would get the pinnace round, as the coast seemed surrounded by reefs; masses of rock stood up in the sea, and the breakers showed that more were hidden.

After much consideration and many plans, Ernest proposed that we should swim out to the uncovered rocks, and endeavor to pass round. Fritz objected, on account of his arms and ammunition; but Ernest suggested that the powder should be secured in the pockets of his clothes, which he might carry on his head, holding his gun above the water.

With some difficulty we arranged our incumbrances, and succeeded in reaching the range of outer rocks, without swimming, as the water was not above our shoulders. We rested here awhile, and, putting on some of our clothes, we commenced our walk over sharp stones, which wounded our feet. In many places where the rocks lay low, we were up to the waist in the water. Ernest, the proposer of the plan, encouraged us, and led the way for some time; but at last he fell behind, and remained so long, that I became alarmed, and calling aloud, for I had lost sight of him, he answered me, and at last I discovered him stretched on the rock, endeavoring to separate a piece from it with his knife.

"Father," said he, "I am not certain that this bed of rocks, over which we are walking, and which we fancied was formed of stone or flints, is nothing but the work of those remarkable zoophytes, called coral insects, which form coral and many other extraordinary things; they can even make whole islands. Look at these little points and hollows, and these stars of every color and every form; I would give all the world to have a specimen of each kind."

He succeeded in breaking off a piece, which was of a deep orange-color inside; he collected also, and deposited in his bag, some other pieces, of various form and colors. These

greatly enriched his collection; and, idle as he was, he did not complain of any difficulty in obtaining them. He had given his gun to Jack, who complained much of the ruggedness of our road.

Our march was truly painful, and I repented more than once of having yielded to the idea. Besides the misery of walking along these shelly rocks, which presented points like the sharp teeth of a saw, tearing our shoes and even our skin, the sea, in some of the lower places, was so high as to bar our passage, and we were obliged in the interval, between two waves to rush across, with the water to our chins. We had some difficulty to avoid being carried away. I trembled especially for Jack; though small and light, he preferred facing the wave to avoiding it. I was several times obliged to catch hold of him, and narrowly escaped destruction along with him. Happily, our march was not above half a mile, and we gained the shore at last without any serious accident, but much fatigued and foot-sore; and we made a resolution never more to cross the coral reefs.

After dressing ourselves, resting and taking a slight refreshment on the beach, we resumed our march more at our ease into the interior of the island; but, though the long grass was not so sharp as the coral, it was almost as troublesome, twisting round our legs, and threatening to throw us down every step we took.

Ernest, loaded with his bag of fragments of rock, coral, and zoophytes, had given his gun to Jack; and, fearing an accident among the long grass, I thought it prudent to discharge it. In order to profit by it, I fired at a little quadruped, about the size of a squirrel, and killed it. It appeared to me to be the animal called by naturalists the palm-squirrel, because it climbs the cocoa and date-palms, hooks itself by its tail, which is very long and flexible, to the upper branches, and feeds at leisure on the fruit, of which it is very fond. We amused ourselves by details of the habits of this animal, occasionally separating to make more discoveries, but agreeing on a particular call, which was to assemble us when necessary,—a precaution by no means useless, as it turned out.

Fritz, with his head raised, went on examining all the trees and occasionally giving a keen look after his gazelle.

Ernest, stooping down, examined plants, insects, and occasionally pursuing rare and beautiful butterflies, was filling his bag and plant-box with various curiosities.

Jack, with his lasso in his hand, prepared himself to fling

it round the legs of the first buffalo he met with, and was vexed that he did not see any.

For my own part, I was engaged in surveying the chain of rocks, in order to discover that which contained the Grotto Ernestine. It was easy to recognize it, from its summit cleft in two; and I wished to ascertain, as nearly as possible, if the cleft extended to the base of the rock, as this would render our work much easier.

This side of the island did not resemble that near the Great Bay, with which Jack and I had been so much charmed. The island was much narrower here, and instead of the wide plain, crossed by a river, divided by delightful woods, giving an idea of paradise on earth; we were journeying through a contracted valley, lying between the rocky wall which divided the island, and a chain of sandy hills, which hid the sea and sheltered the valley from the wind. Fritz and I ascended one of these hills, on which a few pines and broom were growing, and perceived beyond them a barren tract, stretching to the sea, where the coral reefs rose to the level of the water, and appeared to extend far into the sea.

Any navigators sailing along these shores, would pronounce the island inaccessible and entirely barren. This is not the fact; the grass is very thick, and the trees of noble growth; we found many unknown to us, some loaded with fruit, also, several beautiful shrubs covered with flowers; the dwarf orange-tree, the elegant melaleuca, the nutmeg-tree, and the Bengal rose blending its flowers with the fragrant jasmine. I should never finish, if I were to try and name all the plants found in this shady valley, which might be called the botanic garden of Nature. Ernest was in ecstasies; he wished to carry away everything, but he did not know how to dispose of them.

"Ah!" said he "if only our grotto were open to this side!"

At this moment Fritz came running, out of breath, crying out; "the bread-fruit tree! I have found the bread-fruit tree! here is the fruit,—excellent, delicious bread. Taste it, father; here, Ernest; here, Jack;" and he gave us each a part of an oval fruit, about the size of an ordinary melon, which really seemed very good and nourishing.

"There are many of these trees," continued he, "loaded with fruit. Would that we had our grotto opened, that we might collect a store of them, now that they are ripe."

My boys pointed out to me exactly the situation of the grotto, judging from the rock above, and longed for their

tools, that they might commence the opening directly. We proceeded to make our way through a border of trees and bushes, which separated us from the rock, that we might examine it, and judge of the difficulties of our undertaking. Jack preceded us, as usual, after giving Ernest his gun; Fritz followed him, and suddenly turning to me, said:

"I believe kind Nature has saved us much trouble; the rock appears to be divided from top to bottom; at the foot I see a sort of cave, or grotto, already made."

At this moment Jack uttered a piercing cry, and came running to us, his lasso in his hand. "Two monstrous beasts!" cried he. "Help! help!"

We rushed forward, our guns ready, and saw at the entrance of the cave two large brown bears. The black bear, whose fur is most valued, is only found in cold and mountainous countries; but the brown prefers the south. It is a carnivorous animal, considered very ferocious. The black bear lives only on vegetables and honey. Of these, the one I judged to be the female seemed much irritated, uttering deep growls, and furiously gnashing her teeth.

As I knew something of these animals, having met with some on the Alps, I remembered having heard that a sharp whistling terrifies and checks them. I therefore whistled as long and loudly as I could, and immediately saw the female retire backwards into the cave, while the male, raising himself on his hind legs, stood quite still, with his paws closed. My two elder sons fired into his breast: he fell down, but, being only wounded, turned furiously on us. I fired a third shot at him, and finished him.

We then hastened to load our guns again, to be ready to receive his companion. Jack wished to use his lasso; but I explained to him that the legs of the bear were too short and thick for such a measure to be successful.

He related to us, that, having entered the cave, he saw something moving at the bottom. He took up a stone, and threw it with all his strength at the object; immediately he heard a frightful growling, and saw two large beasts coming towards him; he had barely time to escape and call for help, and then to hide himself behind a tree.

To save ourselves from the other bear, it was necessary that we should take some prompt measures. We therefore advanced, and formed a line of battle before the entrance of the cave. I then gave the word,—fire! and we all three fired off our pieces at the same moment; a ferocious roar made

us hope the bullets had taken effect; but to make sure, and to prevent the escape of the animal if it was still living, we gathered a large heap of dried branches and leaves before the opening, to which I set fire. As soon as it blazed, we saw by the light the bear laid motionless on its side; but it is well known that this animal is crafty enough sometimes to feign itself dead, till its enemy approaches near enough to be in its power, when it seizes him in its enormous paws and strangles him. We took a lighted branch, and approached with great precaution. The cave did not extend far; the animal was lying on a heap of dried leaves, prepared for its young ones; I ascertained that it was really dead. I then, with the assistance of my sons, drew it out of the cave, which was too dark for the work, and I wished to secure the rich and beautiful skins which might be useful to us in winter.

We set to work, and, as the animals were still warm, we succeeded more easily than I could have expected; but the skins were so heavy, it was almost impossible to remove them; we therefore left them in the cave, the bottom of which was sandy, closing the entrance with boughs, that no animal might enter to devour them, and abandoned the two bodies, only regretting the abundance of fat which would have been useful for many domestic purposes.

CHAPTER XLV.

BIVOUAC.—THE STARS.

We resumed our search, thanking God for our preservation from this danger, in which my dear Jack at any rate, might have perished. As a proof and trophy of our adventure, we cut off the fore paws of the animal, to carry to my wife. It is said that these form a very delicious dish, fit for the table of a king.

The valley now began to expand, and presented a more varied appearance. It was intersected with beautiful plains or savannas, of which the grass had evidently been eaten, and with more extensive woods, through which we had great difficulty in forcing a passage; so thick and entangled were the lianas and underwood. We succeeded in passing them by

keeping at the borders, where we also felt in greater safety from the wild beasts and reptiles, of which we saw many species that had their abode at the foot of the rocks. Besides the fatigue of our journey, we were tormented with thirst, never having seen any water since we left the sea. The soil was so moist, that I was of opinion we might have found water by digging; but having been compelled to leave our spades when we came along the reef, we had no tools suitable for the purpose.

We were also impatient to wash ourselves after the butchery of the bears, when, to our great satisfaction, we heard the murmur of waters, which I concluded was the river Jack and I had seen in our former expedition. He had frequently inquired about it, and we had foolishly thought it had extended along the whole valley, which could not be. It was a gentle stream, gushing from a perpendicular rock, which reminded me of the source of the river Orbe, in the Canton of Vaud; it issued forth in its full width, rolling at first over a rocky bed; then, forming a graceful bend, it took its course towards the great bay, and fell in a cascade into the sea. We remained some time here to fill our gourds, drinking moderately and taking a bath which refreshed us all greatly.

The evening was approaching, and we began to fear we should not reach home before night. I had warned my wife that there was a possibility that we might be delayed, though I could not then anticipate the cause of our delay. We endeavored, however, by walking as quickly as we could, and resting no more, to reach our farm at any rate.

We followed the course of the river, on the opposite shore of which rose a wide plain, where we saw the herd of buffaloes quietly grazing, ruminating, and drinking, without paying the slightest attention to us.

We thought we distinguished some other quadrupeds amongst them which Fritz was certain were zebras or onagras; but certainly not his dear gazelle, for which he had incessantly looked round. Jack was in despair that the river separated us from the buffaloes, so that he could not cast his lasso round the legs of one of them, as he had promised Ernest. He even wished to swim across the stream, to have a hunt; but I forbade him, encouraging him to hope that perhaps a single buffalo might cross to our side, and throw itself in the way of his lasso. I was far from wishing such a thing myself, for we had no time to lose, nor any means to secure and lead it home, should we succeed in capturing one.

not having any cords with us; and moreover, intending to return from the bay in the canoe.

When we arrived at the bay, the night, which comes on rapidly in equinoctial countries, had almost closed. We were scarcely able to see, without terror, the changes, that the late storm had occasioned; the narrow pass which led from the other side of the island, between the river and a deep stream that flowed from the rocks, was entirely obstructed with rocks and earth fallen upon it; and, to render our passage practicable, it was necessary to undertake a labor that the darkness now prevented, and which would at any time be attended with danger. We were obliged, then, to spend the night in the open air, and separated from our dear and anxious friends at Tent-House.

Fortunately, Fritz had collected a store of bread-fruit for his mother, with which he had filled his own pockets and those of his brothers. These, with water from the river, formed our supper; for we had nothing but the bone of our leg of mutton left.

We turned back a little way, to establish ourselves under a clump of trees, where we were in greater safety. We loaded our muskets, we kindled a large fire of dry branches, and, recommending ourselves to the protection of God, we laid ourselves down on the soft moss to wait for the first rays of light.

With the exception of Jack, who from the first slept as if he had been in his bed, we none of us could rest. The night was beautiful: a multitude of stars shone over our heads in the ethereal vault. Ernest was never tired of gazing on them. After some questions and suppositions on the plurality of worlds, their courses and their distances, he quitted us to wander on the borders of the river, which reflected them in all their brilliancy. From this night his passion for astronomy commenced, a passion which he carried beyond all others. This became his favorite and continual study, nor did he fall far short of Duval, whose history he had read. Whilst he was engaged in contemplation, Fritz and I conversed on our projects for tunnelling to the grotto, and on the utility of such a passage,—as this side of the island was quite lost to us, from the difficulty in reaching it.

"And yet," said I, "it is to this difficulty we owe the safety we have enjoyed. Who can say that the bears and the buffaloes may not find the way through the grotto? I confess I am not desirous of their visits, nor even of those of the onagras. Who knows but they might persuade your

favorite Lightfoot to return and live among them? Liberty has many charms. Till now, we have been very happy on our side of the island, without the productions of this My dear boy, there is a proverb, 'Let *well* alone.' Let us not have too much ambition, it has ruined greater states than ours."

Fritz seemed grieved to give up his plan, and suggested that he could forge some strong bars of iron to place before the opening, which could be removed at will.

"But," said I, "they will not prevent the snakes from passing underneath. I have noticed some with terror, as they are animals I have a great antipathy to; and if your mother saw one crawl into her grotto, she would never enter it again; even if she did not die of fright."

"Well, we must give it up," said Fritz; "but it is a pity. Do you think, father, there are more bears in the island than those we killed?"

"In all probability," said I; "it is scarcely to be supposed that there should only be two. I cannot well account for their being here. They can swim very well, and perhaps the abundance of fruit on this part of the island may have attracted them."

I then gave my son a short account of their manners and habits, from the best works on the history of these animals.

CHAPTER XLVI.

ATTEMPTED RETURN—LOSS OF THE CANOE.

Whilst we continued to talk and to admire the beauty of the stars, they at length began to fade away before the first light of morning. Ernest returned to us, and awoke Jack, who had slept uninterruptedly, and was quite unconscious where he was. We returned to the pass, which now, by the light of day, seemed to us in a more hopeless state than in the dusk of evening. I was struck with consternation: it appeared to me that we were entirely enclosed at this side; and I shuddered to think of crossing the island again, to pass round at the other end; of the risk we should run of meeting wild beasts, and of the painful and perilous passage along the coral reefs.

At that moment I would gladly have consented to open a

passage through the grotto, at the hazard of any visitors, in order to get through myself, that I might relieve the anxious feeling of my dear wife and boy. The thoughts of their agony unnerved me, and took away all courage for the commencement of a labor which seemed impossible, our only utensils being a small saw, and a little dibble for taking up plants, which Ernest had been unwilling to leave behind us. The pass, by which Jack and I had passed, was covered with rocks and masses of soil, which obstructed even the course of of the stream; the river had opened itself a wider course, far beyond its former one.

"It is impossible," said Fritz, gazing on the ruins, "that we can remove all these immense stones, without proper tools; but, perhaps with a little courage we may cross over them; the rivulet, being widened, cannot be very deep. At all events it cannot be worse than the coral reefs."

"Let us try; but I fear it will be impossible, at least for *him*," said I, pointing to Jack.

"*Him*, indeed, father, and why not?" said the bold fellow; "*he* is perhaps as strong, and more active than some of *them*; ask Fritz what he thinks of his workmen. Shall I go the first to show you the way?"

And he was advancing boldly, but I checked him, and said, that before we undertook to scale these masses of rock, absolutely bare, where we had nothing to support us, or hold by, it would be as well to examine if, by descending lower, we could not find a less dangerous road. We descended to the narrow pass, and found our drawbridge, plantation, all our fortification that my boys were so proud of, and where, at Fritz's request, I had even planted a small cannon, all—all destroyed; the cannon swallowed up with the rest. My boys deplored their disappointment; but I showed them how useless such a defence must ever be. Nature had provided us with a better fortification than we could construct, as we just now bitterly experienced.

We had descended several yards lower with incredible difficulty, plunged in a wet, heavy soil, and obliged to step across immense stones, when Fritz, who went first, cried out joyfully:

"The roof, father! the roof of our *chalet!* it is quite whole; it will be a bridge for us, if we can only get to it."

"What roof? What chalet?" said I, in astonishment.

"The roof of our little hermitage," said he, "which we had covered so well with stones, like the Swiss *chalets*."

I then recollected that I had made this little hut after the

fashion of the Swiss chalet, of bark, with a roof nearly flat, and covered with stones, to secure it against the winds. It was this circumstance, and its situation, that had saved it in the storm. I had placed it opposite the cascade that we might see the fall in all its beauty, and, consequently, a little on one side of the passage filled up by the fall of the rocks. Some fragments reached the roof of the hut, and we certainly could not have entered it; but the chalet was supported by this means, and the roof was still standing, and perfectly secure. We contrived to slide along the rock which sustained it; Jack was the first to stand on the roof and sing victory. It was very easy to descend on the other side, holding by the poles and pieces of bark, and we soon found ourselves safe in our *own* island. Ernest had lost his gun in the passage: not being willing to resign his bag of curiosities, he had dropped the gun into the abyss.

"You may take the gun I left in the canoe," said Fritz; "but, another time, throw away your stones, and keep your gun—you will find it a good friend in need."

"Let us embark in our canoe," cried Jack. "The sea! the sea! Long live the waves! they are not so hard as the stones."

I was very glad to have the opportunity of conveying my canoe back to the port of Tent-House; our important occupations had prevented me till now, and everything favored the plan: the sea was calm, the wind favorable, and we should arrive at home sooner, and with less fatigue, than by land. We skirted the great Bay to the Cabbage-palm Wood. I had moored the canoe so firmly to one of the palms, I felt secure of it being there. We arrived at the place, and no canoe was there! The mark of the cord which fastened it was still to be seen round the tree, but the canoe had entirely disappeared. Struck with astonishment, we looked at each other with terror, and without being able to articulate a word. What was become of it?

"Some animal,—the jackals; a monkey, perhaps, might have detached it," said Jack; "but they could not have eaten the canoe." And we could not find a trace of it, any more than of the gun Fritz had left in it.

This extraordinary circumstance gave me a great deal of thought. Savages surely, had landed on our island, and carried off our canoe. We could no longer doubt it when we discovered on the sands the print of naked feet! It is easy to believe how uneasy and agitated I was.

I hastened to take the road to Tent-House, from which we were now more than three leagues distant. I forbade my sons to mention this event, or our suspicions, to their mother, as I knew it would rob her of all peace of mind. I tried to console myself. It was possible that chance had conducted them to the Bay; that they had seen our pretty canoe; and that, satisfied with their prize, and seeing no inhabitants, they might not return. Perhaps, on the contrary, these islanders might prove kind and humane, and become our friends. There was no trace of their proceedings further than the shore. We called at *The Farm*, on purpose to examine. All appeared in order; and certainly, if they had reached here, there was much to tempt them: our cotton mattresses, our osier seats, and some household utensils that my wife had left here. Our geese and fowls did not appear to have been alarmed, but were pecking about as usual for worms and insects.

I began to hope that we might get off with the loss of our canoe,—a loss that might be repaired. We were a sufficient number, being well armed, not to be afraid of a few savages, even if they penetrated further into the island, and showed hostile intentions. I exhorted my sons to do nothing to irritate them; on the contrary, to meet them with kindness and attention, and to commit no violence against them, unless called upon to defend their lives. I also recommended to them to select from the wrecked chest, some articles likely to please the savages, and to carry them always about with them. "And I beseech you, once more," added I, "not to alarm your mother.

They promised me; and we continued our road unmolested to Falcon's Nest. Jack preceded us, delighted, he said, to see our castle again, which he hoped the savages had not carried away. Suddenly, we saw him return, running with terror painted on his countenance.

"They are there!" said he; "they have taken possession of it; our dwelling is full of them. O! how frightful they are! What a blessing mother is not there; she would have died of fright to see them enter."

I confess I was much agitated, but not wishing to expose my children to danger before I had done all in my power to prevent it, I ordered them to remain behind till I called them. I broke a branch from a tree hastily; which I held in one hand, and in the other some long nails, which I found by chance in the bottom of my pocket; and I advanced thus to my Tree-Castle.

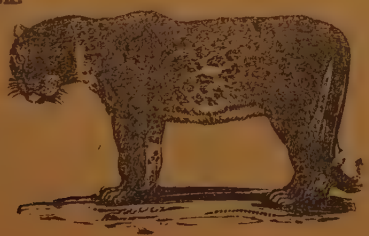
I expected to have found the door of my staircase torn

open and broken, and our new guests ascending and descending; but I saw at once it was closed as I had left it; being of bark, it was not easily distinguished. How had these savages reached the dwelling, forty feet from the ground? I had placed planks before the great opening; they were no longer there; the greater part of them had been hurled to the ground, and I heard such a noise in our house, that I could not doubt Jack's report.

I advanced timidly, holding up in the air the branch and my offerings, when I discovered, all at once, that I was offering them to a troop of monkeys lodged in the fortress, which they were amusing themselves by destroying. We had numbers of them in the island; some large and mischievous, against whom we had some difficulty in defending ourselves when crossing the woods, where they principally dwelt. The frequent report of firearms round our dwelling had kept them aloof till now, when, emboldened by our absence, and enticed by the figs on our tree, they had come in crowds. These vexatious animals had got through the roof; and, once in, had thrown down the planks that covered the opening; they made the most frightful grimaces, throwing down everything they could seize.

Although this devastation caused me much vexation, I could not help laughing at their antics, and at the humble and submissive manner in which I had advanced to pay homage to them. I called my sons, who laughed heartily, and rallied "*prince of the monkeys*" without mercy, for not knowing his own subjects. Fritz wished much to discharge his gun amongst them, but I forbade him. I was too anxious to reach Tent House, to be able to turn my thoughts on these depredators just now.

We continued our journey——but I pause here; my heart is oppressed. My feelings when I reached home require another chapter to describe them, and I must summon courage for the task.



CHAPTER XLVII.

BITTER DISAPPOINTMENT AT TENT-HOUSE.

We soon arrived at Family Bridge, where I had some hopes of meeting Francis, and perhaps his mother, who was beginning to walk very well; but I was disappointed—they were not there. Yet I was not uneasy, for they were neither certain of the hour of our return, nor the way we might take. I expected, however, to find them in the colonnade—they were not there. I hastily entered the house; I called aloud, "Elizabeth! Francis! where are you?" No one answered. A mortal terror seized me, and for a moment I could not move.

"They will be in the grotto," said Ernest.

"Or in the garden," said Fritz.

"Perhaps on the shore," cried Jack; "my mother likes to watch the waves, and Francis may be gathering shells."

These were possibilities. My sons flew in all directions in search of their mother and brother. I found it impossible to move, and was obliged to sit down. I trembled, and my heart beat till I scarcely breathed. I did not venture to dwell on the extent of my fears, or, rather, I had no distinct notion of them. I tried to recover myself. I murmured, "Yes,—at the grotto or the garden—they will return directly."

Still, I could not compose myself. I was overwhelmed with a sad presentiment of the misfortune which impended over me. It was but too soon realized.

My sons returned in fear and consternation. They had no occasion to tell me the result of their search; I saw it at once, and, sinking down motionless, I cried, "Alas! they are not there."

Jack returned the last, and in the most frightful state; he had been at the sea-shore, and, throwing himself into my arms, he sobbed out—

"The savages have been here, and carried away my mother and Francis; perhaps they have devoured them; I have seen the marks of their horrible feet on the sands, and the print of dear Francis' boots."

This account at once recalled me to strength and action.

"Come, my children, let us fly to save them. God will

pity our sorrow, and assist us. He will restore them. Come, come!"

They were ready in a moment. But a distracting thought seized me. Had they carried off the pinnace? If so, every hope was gone. Jack, in his distress, had never thought of remarking this; but, the instant I named it, Fritz and he ran to ascertain the important circumstance; Ernest, in the meantime, supporting me, and endeavoring to calm me.

"Perhaps," said he, "they are still in the island. Perhaps they have fled to hide themselves in some wood, or amongst the reeds. Even if the pinnace be left, it would be prudent to search the island from end to end before we leave it. Trust Fritz and me, we will do this; and, even if we find them in the hands of the enemy, we will recover them. Whilst we set off on this expedition, you can be preparing for our voyage, and we will search the world from one end to the other, every country and every sea, but we will find them. And we shall succeed. Let us put our whole trust in God. He is our Father, He will not try us beyond our strength."

I embraced my child, and a flood of tears relieved my overcharged heart. My eyes and hand were raised to Heaven; my silent prayers winged their flight to the Almighty, to him who tries us and consoles us. A ray of hope seemed to visit my mind, when I heard my boys cry out, as they approached—

"The pinnace is here! they have not carried that away!"

I fervently thanked God—it was a kind of miracle; for this pretty vessel was more tempting than the canoe. Perhaps, as it was hidden in a little creek between the rocks, it had escaped their observation; perhaps they might not know how to manage it; or they might not be numerous enough. No matter, it was there, and might be the means of recovering the beloved objects those barbarians had torn from us.

How gracious is God, to give us hope to sustain us in our affliction! Without hope we could not live; it restores and revives us, and, even if never realized below, accompanies us to the end of our life, and to our grave!

I imparted to my eldest son the idea of his brother, that they might be concealed in some part of the island; but I dared not rely on this sweet hope. Finally, as we ought not to run the risk of abandoning them, if they were still here, and perhaps in the power of the savages, I consented

that my two eldest sons should go to ascertain the fact.

Besides, however impatient I was, I felt that a voyage such as we were undertaking into unknown seas might be of long duration, and it was necessary to make some preparation—I must think on food, water, arms, and many other things. There are situations in life which seize the heart and soul, rendering us insensible to the wants of the body—this we now experienced. We had just come from a painful journey on foot of twenty-four hours, during which we had little rest and no sleep. Since morning we had eaten nothing but some morsels of the bread-fruit; it was natural that we should be overcome with fatigue and hunger But we none of us had even thought of our own state—we were supported, if I may use the expression, by our despair.

At the moment that my sons were going to set out, the remembrance of their need of refreshment suddenly occurred to me, and I besought them to rest a little, and take something; but they were too much agitated to consent. I gave Fritz a bottle of Canary, and some slices of roast mutton I met with, which he put in his pocket. They had each a loaded musket, and they set out taking the road along the rocks, where the most hidden retreats and most impenetrable woods lay; they promised me to fire off their pieces frequently to let their mother know they were there, if she was hidden among the rocks—they took also one of the dogs. Flora we could not find, which made us conclude she had followed her mistress, to whom she was much attached.

As soon as my eldest sons had left us, I made Jack conduct me to the shore, where he had seen the footmarks, that I might examine them, to judge of their number and direction. I found many very distinct, but so mingled, I could come to no positive conclusion. Some were near the sea, with the foot pointing to the shore; and amongst these Jack thought he could distinguish the boot-mark of Francis. My wife wore very light boots also, which I had made for her; they rendered stockings unnecessary, and strengthened her ankles. I could not find the trace of these; but I soon discovered that my poor Elizabeth had been here, from a piece torn from an apron she wore, made of her own cotton and dyed red. I had now not the least doubt that she was in the canoe with her son. It was a sort of consolation to think they were together; but how many mortal fears accompanied this consolation! Oh! was I ever again to see these objects of my tenderest affection!

Certain now that they were not in the island, I was impatient for the return of my sons, and I made every preparation for our departure. The first thing I thought of was the wrecked chest, which would furnish me with means to conciliate the savages, and to ransom my loved ones. I added to it everything likely to tempt them; utensils, stuffs, trinkets; I even took with me gold and silver coin, which was thrown on one side as useless, but might be of service to us on this occasion.

I wished my riches were three times as much as they were, that I might give all in exchange for the life and liberty of my wife and son.

I then turned my thoughts on those remaining to me. I took, in bags and gourds, all that we had left of cassava-bread, manioc-roots, and potatoes; barrel of salt-fish, two bottles of rum, and several jars of fresh water. Jack wept as he filled them at his fountain, which he perhaps might never see again, any more than his dear Valiant, whom I set at liberty, as well as the cow, ass, buffalo, and the beautiful onagra. These docile animals were accustomed to us and our attentions, and they remained in their places, surprised that they were neither harnessed nor mounted. We opened the poultry-yard and pigeon-cote. The flamingo would not leave us, it went and came with us from the house to the pinnace. We took also oil, candles, fuel and a large iron pot, in which to cook our provisions. For our defence, I took two more guns, and a small barrel of powder, all we had left. I added besides some changes of linen, not forgetting some for my dear wife, which I hoped might be needed.

The time fled rapidly while we were thus employed; night came on, and my sons returned not. My grief was inconceivable; the island was so large and woody that they might have lost themselves, or the savages might have returned and encountered them. After twenty hours of frightful terror, I heard the report of a gun—alas! only *one* report! it was the signal agreed on if they returned alone; *two* if they brought their mother; *three* if Francis also accompanied them; but I expected they would return alone, and I was still grateful. I ran to meet them; they were overcome with fatigue and vexation.

They begged to set out immediately, not to lose one precious moment; they were now sure the island did not contain those they lamented, and they hoped I would not return

without discovering them, for what would the island be to us without our loved ones? Fritz, at that moment, saw his dear Lightfoot, capering round him, and could not help sighing as he caressed him, and took leave of him.

"May I find thee here," said he, "where I leave thee in such sorrow; and I will bring back thy young master," added he, turning to the bull, who was also approaching him."

He then begged me again to set out, as the moon was just rising in all her majesty.

"The queen of night," said Ernest, "will guide us to the queen of our island, who is perhaps now looking up to her, and calling on us to help her."

"Most assuredly," said I, "she is thinking on us; but it is on God she is calling for help. Let us join her in prayer, my dear children, for herself and our dear Francis."

They fell on their knees with me, and I uttered the most fervent and earnest prayer that ever human heart poured forth; and I rose with confidence that our prayers were heard.

I proceeded with new courage to the creek that contained our pinnace, where Jack arranged all we had brought. We rowed out of the creek, and, when we were in the bay, we held a counsel to consider on which side we were to commence our search. I thought of returning to the great bay, from whence our canoe had been taken; my sons, on the contrary, thought that these islanders, content with their acquisition, had been returning homewards, coasting along the island when an unhappy chance had led their mother and brother to the shore, where the savages had seen them, and carried them off. At the most they could be but a day before us; but that was long enough to fill us with dreadful anticipations. I yielded to the opinion of my sons, which had a great deal of reason on its side; besides, the wind was favorable in that direction; and, abandoning ourselves in full confidence to Almighty God, we spread our sails, and were soon in the open sea.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

VOYAGE IN THE PINNACE.

A gentle wind swelled our sails and the current carried us rapidly into the open sea. I then seated myself at the helm, and employed the little knowledge I had gained during our voyage from Europe in directing our bark, so that we might avoid the rocks and coral banks that surrounded our island. My two eldest sons, overcome with fatigue, had no sooner seated themselves on a bench, than they fell into a profound sleep, notwithstanding their sorrows. Jack held out the best; his love of the sea kept him awake, and I surrendered the helm to him till I took a momentary slumber, my head resting against the stern. A happy dream placed me in the midst of my family in our dear island; but a shout from Ernest awoke me; he was calling on Jack to leave the helm, as he was contriving to run the vessel among the breakers on the coast. I seized the helm, and soon set all right, determined not to trust my giddy son again.

Jack, of all my sons, was the one who evinced most taste for the sea; but being so young when we made our voyage, his knowledge of nautical affairs was very scanty. My elder sons had learnt more. Ernest, who had a great thirst for knowledge of every kind, had questioned the pilot on all he had seen him do. He had learned a great deal in theory, but of practical knowledge he had none. The mechanical genius of Fritz had drawn conclusions from what he saw; this would have induced me to place much trust in him in case of that danger which I prayed Heaven might be averted.

What a situation was mine for a father! Wandering through unknown and dangerous seas with my three sons, my only hope, in search of a fourth, and of my beloved helpmate; utterly ignorant which way we should direct our course, or where to find a trace of those we sought. How often do we allay the happiness granted us below by vain wishes! I had at one time regretted that we had no means of leaving our island; now we had left it, and our sole wish was to recover those we had lost, to bring them back to it, and never to leave it more. I sometimes regretted that I had led my sons into this danger. I might have ventured alone; but I reflected that I could not have left them; for

Fritz had said, "If the savages had carried off the pinnace, I would have swam from isle to isle till I had found them."

My boys all endeavored to encourage and console me. Fritz placed himself at the rudder, observing that the pinnace was new and well built, and likely to resist a tempest. Ernest stood on the deck, silently watching the stars, only breaking his silence by telling me he should be able by them to supply the want of the compass, and point out how we should direct our course. Jack climbed dexterously up the mast to let me see his skill; we called him the cabin-boy, Fritz was the pilot, Ernest the astronomer, and I was the captain and commander of the expedition.

Daybreak showed us we had passed far from our island, which now only appeared a dark speck. I, as well as Fritz and Jack, was of opinion that it would be advisable to go round it, and try our fortune on the opposite coast; but Ernest, who had not forgotten his telescope, was certain he saw land in a direction he pointed out to us. We took the glass, and were soon convinced he was right. As day advanced, we saw the land plainly, and did not hesitate to sail towards it.

As this appeared the land nearest our island, we supposed the savages might have conveyed their captives there. But more trials awaited us before we arrived there. It being necessary to shift the sail, in order to reach the coast in view, my poor cabin-boy, Jack, ran up the mast, holding by the ropes; but, before he reached the sail, the rope which he held broke suddenly. He was precipitated into the sea, and disappeared in a moment; but he soon rose to the surface, trying to swim, and mingling his cries with ours. Fritz, who was the first to see the accident, was in the water almost as soon as Jack, and seizing him by the hair, swam with the other hand, calling on him to try and keep afloat, and hold by him.

When I saw my two sons thus struggling with the waves, that were very strong from a land wind, I should, in my despair, have leaped in after them; but Ernest held me, and implored me to remain to assist in getting them into the pinnace. He had thrown ropes to them, and a bench he had torn up with the strength of despair. Fritz had contrived to catch one of the ropes and fasten it round Jack, who still swam, but feebly, as if nearly exhausted. Fritz had been considered an excellent swimmer in Switzerland; he preserved all his presence of mind, calling to us to draw the

rope gently, while he supported the poor boy, and pushed him towards the pinnace. At last I was able to reach and draw him up; and, when I saw him extended, nearly lifeless, at the bottom of the pinnace, I fell down senseless beside him.

How precious to us now was the composed mind of Ernest! In the midst of such a scene he was calm and collected; promptly disengaging the rope from the body of Jack, he flung it back to Fritz, to help him in reaching the pinnace, attaching the other end firmly to the mast. This done, quicker than I can write it, he approached us, raised his brother so that he might relieve himself from the quantity of water he had swallowed; then turning to me, restored me to my senses by administering to me some drops of rum, and by saying, "Courage, father! you have saved Jack, and I will save Fritz. He has hold of the rope; he is swimming strongly; he is coming; he is here!"

He left me to assist his brother, who was soon in the vessel, and in my arms. Jack, perfectly recovered, joined him; and fervently did I thank God for granting me, in the midst of my trials, such a moment of happiness. We could not help fancying this happy preservation was an augury of our success in our anxious search, and that we should bring back the lost ones to our island.

"O, how terrified mother would have been," said Jack, "to see me sink! I thought I was going, like a stone, to the bottom of the sea; but I pushed out my arms and legs with all my strength, and up I rose."

He as well as Fritz was quite wet. I had by chance brought some changes of clothes, which I made them put on, after giving each a little rum. They were so much fatigued, and I was so overcome by my agitation, that we were obliged to relinquish rowing, most unwillingly, as the skies threatened a storm. We gradually began to distinguish clearly the island we wished to approach; and the land-birds, which came to rest on our sails, gave us hopes that we should reach it before night; but, suddenly, such a thick fog arose, that it hid every object from us, even the sea itself, and we seemed to be sailing among the clouds. I thought it prudent to drop our anchor, as, fortunately, we had a tolerably strong one; but there appeared so little water, that I feared we were near the breakers, and I watched anxiously for the fog to dissipate, and permit us to see the coast. It finally changed into a heavy rain, from

which we could with difficulty protect ourselves; there was, however, a half-deck to the pinnace, under which we crept, and sheltered ourselves.

Here, crowded close together, we talked over the late accident. Fritz assured me he was never in any danger, and that he would plunge again into the sea that moment, if he had the least hope that it would lead him to find his mother and Francis. We all said the same; though Jack confessed that his friends, the waves, had not received his visit very politely, but had even beat him very rudely.

"But I would bear twice as much to see mother and dear Francis again. Do you think, father, that the savages could ever hurt them? Mother is so good, and Francis is so pretty! and then, poor mother is so lame yet; I hope they would pity her, and carry her."

Alas! I could not hope as my boy did; I feared that they would force her to walk. I tried to conceal other horrible fears, that almost threw me into despair. I recalled all the cruelties of the cannibal nations, and shuddered to think that my Elizabeth and my darling child were perhaps in their ferocious hands. Prayer and confidence in God were the only means, not to console, but to support me, and teach me to endure my affliction with resignation. I looked on my three sons, and endeavored for their sakes, to hope and submit. The darkness rapidly increased, till it became total; we concluded it was night.

The rain having ceased, I went out to strike a light, as I wished to hang the lighted lantern to the mast, when Ernest, who was on deck, called out loudly, "Father! brothers! come! the sea is on fire!" And, indeed, so far as the eye could reach, the surface of the water appeared in flames. This light, of the most brilliant, fiery red, reached even to the vessel, and we were surrounded by it. It was a sight at once beautiful and terrific. Jack seriously inquired, if there was not a volcano at the bottom of the sea; and I astonished him much by telling him, that this light was caused by a kind of marine animals, which in form resembled plants so much, that they were formerly considered such; but naturalists and modern voyagers have entirely destroyed this error, and furnished proofs that they are, organized beings having all the spontaneous movements peculiar to animals. They feel when they are touched; seek for food, seize and devour it; they are of various kinds and colors, and are known under the general name of zoophytes.

"And this, which glitters in such beautiful colors on the sea, is called *pyrosoma*," said Ernest. "See, here are some I have caught in my hat. You may see them move. How they change color—orange, green, blue, like the rainbow; and, when you touch them, the flame appears still more brilliant; now they are a pale yellow."

They amused themselves some time with these bright and beautiful creatures, which appear to have but a half-life. They occupied a large space on the water, and their astonishing radiance, in the midst of the darkness of the atmosphere, had such a striking and magnificent effect, that, for a few moments, we were diverted from our own sad thoughts; but an observation from Jack soon recalled them.

"If Francis passed this way," said he, "how he would be amused with these funny creatures, which look like fire, but do not burn; but I know he would be afraid to touch them; and how much afraid mother would be! as she likes no animals she does not know. Ah! how glad I shall be to tell her all about our voyage, and my excursion into the sea, and how Fritz dragged me by the hair, and what they call these fiery fishes; tell me again, Ernest; py—py——"

"Pyrosoma, Mr. Peron calls them," said Ernest. "The description of them is very interesting in his voyage, which I have read to mother; and, as she would recollect it, she would not be afraid."

"I pray to God," replied I, "that she may have nothing more to fear than the pyrosoma, and that we may soon see them again, with her and Francis."

We all said Amen; and the day breaking, we decided to weigh the anchor, and endeavor to find a passage through the reefs to reach the island, which we now distinctly saw, and which seemed an uncultivated and rocky coast. I resumed my place at the helm; my sons took the oars; and we advanced cautiously, sounding every minute. What would have become of us if our pinnace had been injured!

The sea was perfectly calm, and after prayer to God, and a slight refreshment, we proceeded forward, looking carefully round for any canoe of the savages—it might be, even our own; but, no! we were not fortunate enough to discover any trace of our beloved friends, or any symptom of the isle being inhabited; however, as it was our only point of hope, we did not wish to abandon it. By dint of searching, we found a small bay, which reminded us of our own. It was formed by a river, broad and deep enough for our pinnace

to enter. We rowed in; and having placed our vessel in the creek, where it appeared to be secure, we began to consider the means of exploring the whole island.

CHAPTER XLIX.

DISEMBARKATION AND EXPLORATION.

I did not disembark on this unknown shore without great emotion. It might be inhabited by a barbarous and cruel race, and I almost doubted the prudence of thus risking my three remaining children in the hazardous and uncertain search after our dear ones. I think I could have borne my bereavement with Christian resignation, if I had seen my wife and child die in my arms; I should then have been certain they were happy in the bosom of their God; but to think of them in the power of ferocious and idolatrous savages, who might subject them to cruel tortures and death, chilled my very blood.

I demanded of my sons, if they felt courage to pursue the difficult and perilous enterprise we had commenced. They all declared they would rather die than not find their mother and brother. Fritz even besought me, with Ernest and Jack, to return to the island, in case the wanderers should come back, and be terrified to find it deserted; and to leave him the arms, and the means of trafficking with the savages, without any uneasiness about his prudence and discretion.

I assured him I did not distrust his courage and prudence, but I showed him the futility of hoping that the savages would voluntarily carry back their victims, or that they could escape alone. And should he meet with them here, and succeed, how could he carry his recovered treasures to the island?

"No, my children," said I, "we will all search, in the confidence that God will bless our efforts."

"And perhaps sooner than we think," said Ernest. "Perhaps they are in this island."

Jack was running off immediately to search, but I called my little madcap back, till we arranged our plans. I advised that two of us should remain to watch the coast, while the other two penetrated into the interior. The first thing necessary to ascertain was if the island was inhabited, which might easily be done by climbing some tree that overlooked

the country, and remarking if there were any traces of the natives, any huts, or fires lighted, &c. Those who made any discovery were immediately to inform the rest, that we might go in a body to recover our own. If nothing announced that the island was inhabited we were to leave it immediately, to search elsewhere.

All wished to be of the party of discovery. At length Ernest agreed to remain with me, and watch for any arrivals by sea. Before we parted, we all knelt to invoke the blessing of God on our endeavors.

Fritz and Jack, as the most active, were to visit the interior of the island, and to return with information as soon as possible. To be prepared for any chance, I gave them a game-bag filled with toys, trinkets, and pieces of money, to please the savages. I also made them take some food. Fritz took his gun, after promising me he would not fire it except to defend his life, lest he should alarm the savages, and induce them to remove their captives. Jack took his lasso, and they set out with our benediction accompanied by the brave Turk, on whom I depended much to discover his mistress and his companion Flora, if she was still with her friends.

As soon as they were out of sight, Ernest and I set to work to conceal as much as possible our pinnace from discovery. We lowered the masts, and hid with great care under the deck, the precious chest with our treasures, provisions and powder. We got our pinnace with great difficulty, the water being low, behind a rock, which completely concealed it on the land-side, but it was still visible from the sea.

Ernest suggested that we should entirely cover it with branches of trees, so that it might appear like a heap of bushes; and we began to cut them immediately with two hatchets we found in the chest, and which we speedily fitted with handles. We found also a large iron staple, which Ernest succeeded, with a hammer and piece of wood, in fixing in the rock to moor the pinnace to. We had some difficulty in finding branches within our reach; there were many trees on the shore, but their trunks were bare. We found, at last, at some distance, an extensive thicket composed of a beautiful shrub, which Ernest recognized to be a species of mimosa. The trunk of this plant is knotty and stunted, about three or four feet high, and spreads horizontally, clothed with beautiful foilage, and so thickly interwoven,

that the little quadrupeds, who make their dwellings in the thickets, are obliged to open covered roads out of the entangled mass of vegetation.

At the first blow of the hatchet, a number of beautiful little creatures poured forth on all sides. They resembled the kangaroos of our island, but were smaller, more elegant, and remarkable for the beauty of their skin, which was striped like that of the zebra.

"It is the striped kangaroo," cried Ernest, "described in the voyages of Peron. How I long to have one! The female should have a pouch to contain her young ones."

He lay down very still at the entrance of the thicket, and soon had the satisfaction of seizing two, which leaped out almost into his arms. This animal is timid, as the hare of our country. They endeavored to escape, but Ernest held them fast. One was a female, which had her young one in her pouch, which my son took out very cautiously. It was an elegant little creature, with a skin like its mother, only more brilliant—it was full of graceful antics. The poor mother no longer wished to escape; all her desire seemed to be to recover her offspring, and to replace it in its nest. At last, she succeeded in seizing and placing it carefully in security. Then her desire to escape was so strong that Ernest could scarcely hold her. He wished much to keep and tame her, and asked my permission to empty one of the chests for a dwelling for her, and to carry her off in the pinnace; but I refused him decidedly. I explained to him the uncertainty of our return to the island, and the imprudence of adding to our cares; and, "Certainly," added I, "you would not wish this poor mother to perish from famine and confinement, when your own mother is herself a prisoner?"

His eyes filled with tears, and he declared he would not be such a savage as to keep a poor mother in captivity. "Go, pretty creature," said he, releasing her, "and may my mother be as fortunate as you." She soon profited by his permission, and skipped off with her treasure.

We continued to cut down the branches of the mimosa; but they were so entangled, and the foliage so light, that we agreed to extend our search for some thicker branches.

As we left the shore, the country appeared more fertile; we found many unknown trees, which bore no fruit; but some covered with delicious flowers. Ernest was in his element, he wanted to collect and examine all, to endeavor to dis-

cover their names, either from analogy to other plants, or from descriptions he had read. He thought he recognized the *melaleuca*, several kinds of *mimosa*, and the Virginian pine, which has the largest and thickest branches. We loaded ourselves with as much as we could carry, and, in two or three journeys, we had collected sufficient to cover the vessel, and to make a shelter for ourselves, if we were obliged to pass the night on shore.

I had given orders to my sons that both were to return before night, at all events; and, if the least hope appeared, one was to run with all speed to tell it. All my fear was that they might lose their way in this unknown country. They might meet with lakes, marshes, or perplexing forests. Every moment I was alarmed with the idea of some new danger, and never did any day seem so long.

Ernest endeavored, by every means in his power, to comfort and encourage me; but the buoyancy of spirit peculiar to youth, prevented him from dwelling long on one painful thought. He amused his mind by turning to search for the marine productions with which the rocks were covered; seaweed, mosses of the most brilliant colors, zoophytes, of various kinds, occupied his attention. He brought them to me, regretting that he could not preserve them.

"Oh! if my dear mother could see them," said he, "or if Fritz could paint them, how they would amuse Francis!"

This recalled our sorrows, and my uneasiness increased.

CHAPTER L.

CONTINUED MISFORTUNES.

All was so still around us, and our pinnace was so completely hidden with its canopy of verdure, that I could not help regretting that I had not accompanied my sons. It was now too late; but my steps involuntarily turned to the road I had seen them take, Ernest remaining on the rocks in search of natural curiosities; but I was suddenly recalled by a cry from Ernest—

"Father, a canoe! a canoe!"

"Alas! is it not ours?" I said, rushing to the shore, where, indeed, I saw beyond the reefs a canoe, floating lightly, apparently filled with the islanders, easy to distinguish from their dark complexion, This canoe did not resemble ours;

it was longer, narrower, and seemed to be composed of long strips of bark, quite rough, tied together at each end, which gave somewhat of a graceful form to it, though it evidently belonged to the infancy of the art of navigation. It is almost inconceivable how these frail barks resist the slightest storm; but these islanders swim so well, that, even if the canoe fills, they jump out, empty it, and take their places again. When landed, one or two men take up the canoe, and carry it to their habitation. This, however, appeared to be provided with out-riggers, to preserve the equilibrium; and six savages, with a sort of oars, made it fly like the wind.

When it passed the part of the island where we were, we hailed it as loudly as we could; the savages answered by frightful cries, but showed no intention of approaching us on entering the bay; on the contrary, they went on with great rapidity, continuing their cries. I followed them with my eyes as far as I could in speechless emotion; for either my fancy deceived me, or I faintly distinguished a form of fairer complexion than the dark-hued beings who surrounded him—features or dress I could not see. On the whole, it was a vague impression, that I trembled alike to believe or doubt.

Ernest, more active than I, had climbed a sand-bank, and, with his telescope, had commanded a better view of the canoe. He watched it round a point of land, and then came down almost as much agitated as myself. I ran to him and said—

"Ernest, was it your mother?"

"No, father; I am certain it was not my mother," said he. "Neither was it Francis."

Here he was silent. A cold shuddering came over me.

"Why are you silent?" said I, "what do you think?"

"Indeed, father, I could distinguish nothing," said he: "even with the telescope, they passed so quickly. Would that it were my mother and Francis, we should then be sure they were living, and might follow them. But a thought strikes me: let us free the pinnace, and sail after the canoe. With the sail we can go quicker than they; we shall overtake them behind the cape, and then we shall at least be satisfied."

I hesitated, lest my sons should come back; but Ernest represented to me that we were only fulfilling the wishes of Fritz; besides, we should return in a short time. He added, that he would soon disencumber the pinnace.

"Soon," cried I "when we have been at least two hours in covering it."

"Yes," said he; "but we had a dozen journeys to make to the trees then; I will have it ready in less than half an hour."

I assisted him as actively as I could, though not with good heart, for I was uneasy about abandoning my sons. I would have given worlds to see them arrive before our departure; to have their assistance, which was of much consequence in the pinnace, and to know that they were safe. I often left off my work, to take a glance into the interior of the island, hoping to see them. Frequently I mistook the trees in the twilight, which was now coming on, for moving objects. At last I was not deceived, I saw distinctly a figure walking rapidly.

"They are here!" I cried, running forward, followed by Ernest; and we saw a dark-colored figure approaching. I concluded it was a savage; and, though disappointed, was not alarmed, as he was alone. I stopped, and begged Ernest to recollect all the words he had met with in his books of the language of the savages. The black man approached; conceive my surprise when I heard him cry in my own language—

"Don't be alarmed, father; it is I, your son, Fritz."

"Is it possible?" said I; "can I believe it? and Jack? What have you done with my Jack! Where is he? Speak——"

Ernest did not ask. Alas! he knew to well; he had seen with his telescope that it was his dear brother Jack that was in the canoe with the savages; but he had not dared to tell me. I was in agony. Fritz, harassed with fatigue, and overwhelmed with grief, sunk down on the ground.

"Oh, father!" said he, sobbing, "I dread to appear before you without my brother! I have lost him. Can you ever forgive your unfortunate Fritz?"

"O yes, yes; we are all equally unfortunate," cried I, sinking down beside my son, while Ernest seated himself on the other side to support me. I then besought Fritz to tell me if the savages had murdered my dear boy. He assured me that he was not killed, but carried off by the savages; still he hoped he was safe. Ernest then told me he had seen him seated in the canoe, apparently without clothes, but not stained black as Fritz was.

"I earnestly wish he had been," said Fritz, "to that I attribute my escape. But I am truly thankful to God that

you have seen him, Ernest. Which way have the monsters gone?"

Ernest pointed out the cape, and Fritz was anxious that we should embark without delay, and endeavor to snatch him from them.

"And have you learnt nothing of your mother and Francis?" said I.

"Alas! nothing," said he; "though I think I recognized a handkerchief belonging to dear mother on the head of a savage. I will tell you all my adventure as we go. You forgive me, dear father?"

"Yes, my dear son," said I; "I forgive and pity you; but are you sure my wife and Francis are not on the island?"

"Quite sure,' said he. "In fact the island is entirely uninhabited; there is no fresh water nor game, and no quadrupeds whatever, but rats and kangaroos; but plenty of fruit. I have filled by bag with bread-fruit, which is all we shall need: let us go."

We worked so hard that in a quarter of an hour the branches were removed, and the pinnace ready to receive us. The wind was favorable for carrying us towards the cape the savages had turned; we hoisted our sail, and I took my place at the helm; the sea was calm, and the moon lighted our way.

After recommending ourselves to the protection of God, I desired Fritz to commence his melancholy recital.

"It will be melancholy, indeed," said the poor boy, weeping; "if we do not find my dear Jack, I shall never forgive myself for not having stained his skin before my own; then he should have been with you now——"

"But I have you, my dear son, to console your father," said I. "I can do nothing myself, in my sorrow. I depend on you, my two eldest, to restore to me what I have lost. Go on, Fritz."

"We went on," continued he, "with courage and hope; and, as we proceeded, we felt that you were right in saying we ought to judge of the island by the borders. You can form no idea of the fertility of the island, or of the beauty of the trees and shrubs we met with at every step, quite unknown to me. Some were covered with fragrant flowers, others with tempting fruits; which however, we did not venture to taste, as we had not Knips to try them."

"Did you see any monkeys?" asked Ernest.

"Not one," replied his brother, "to the great vexation of

Jack; but we saw parrots, and all sorts of birds of the most splendid plumage. Whilst we were remarking these creatures, I did not neglect to look carefully about for any trace that might aid our search. I saw no hut, no sort of dwelling, nor anything that could indicate that the island was inhabited, and not the slightest appearance of fresh water; and we should have been tormented with thirst if we had not found some cocoa-nuts containing milk, and an acid fruit, full of juice, which we have in our own island—Ernest calls it the *carambolier;* we quenched our thirst with this, as well as with the plant, which we also have, and which contains water in the stem. The country is flat and open, and its beautiful trees stand at such a distance from each other, that no one could lie amongst them.

"But if we found no dwellings, we often discovered traces of the savages,—extinguished fires, remains of kangaroos and of fish, cocoa-nut shells, and even entire nuts, which we secured for ourselves; we remarked, also, footmarks on the sand. We both wished anxiously to meet with a savage, that we might endeavor to make him comprehend, by signs, whom we were in search of, hoping that natural affection might have some influence even with these untaught creatures. I was only fearful that my dress and the color of my skin might terrify them.

"In the meantime, Jack, with his usual rashness, had climbed to the summit of one of the tallest trees, and suddenly cried out, 'Fritz, prepare your signs, the savages are landing. Oh! what black, ugly creatures they are, and nearly naked! you ought to dress yourself like them to make friends with them. You can stain your skin with these,' throwing me down branches of a sort of fruit of a dark purple color, large as a plum, with a skin like the mulberry. 'I have been tasting them, they are very nauseous, and they have stained my fingers black; rub yourself with the juice of this fruit, and you will be a perfect savage.

"I agreed immediately. He descended from the tree while I undressed, and, with his assistance I stained myself from head to foot, as you see me; but don't be alarmed; a single dip in the sea will make me an European again. The good-natured Jack then helped to dress me in a sort of tunic made of large leaves, and laughed heartily when he looked at me, calling me *Omnibou*, of whom he had seen a picture, which he declared I exactly resembled. I then wished to disguise him in the same way, but he would

not consent; he declared that when he met with mother and Francis, he should fly to embrace them, and that he should alarm and disgust them in such a costume. He said I could protect him if the savages wished to devour him:—they were now at hand, and we went forward, Jack following with my bundle of clothes under his arm.

"I had slung my kangaroo-skin, bag of powder and provisions on my shoulders, and I was glad to see that most of the savages wore the skin of that animal, for the most part spread out like a mantel over their shoulders; few of them had other clothes, excepting one, who appeared to be the chief, and had a tunic of green rushes, neatly woven.

"I tried to recollect all the words of savage language I could, but very few occurred to me. I said at first '*Tayo, tayo.*' I don't know whether they comprehended me, but they paid me great attention, evidently taking me for a savage; only one wished to seize my gun; but I held it firmly, and on the chief speaking a word to him, he drew back. They spoke very rapidly, and I saw by their looks they spoke about us; they looked incessantly at Jack, repeating, '*To maitu tata.*' Jack imitated all their motions, and made some grimaces, which seemed to amuse them. I tried in vain to attract their attention.

"I had observed a handkerchief twisted round the head of him who seemed the chief, that reminded me much of the one my mother usually wore. I approached him, touched the handkerchief, saying expressively, '*Metoua aine mere, et tata frere;*' I added, pointing to the sea, '*pay canot.*' But alas! they did not appear to understand my words. The chief thought I wished to rob him of his handkerchief, and repelled me roughly.

"I then wished to retire, and I told Jack to follow me; but four islanders seized him, opened his waistcoat and shirt, and cried out together, '*Alea tea tata.*' In an instant he was stripped, and his clothes and my own were put on in a strange fashion by the savages. Jack mimicking all their contortions, recovered his shirt from one of them, put it on, and began to dance, calling on me to do the same, and in a tone as if singing, repeated, 'Make your escape, Fritz, while I am amusing them; I will then run off and join you very soon.'

"As if I could for a moment think of leaving him in the hands of these barbarians! However, I recollected at that moment the bag of toys and trinkets you had given me.

We had thoughtlessly left it under the great tree where I had undressed. I told Jack, in the same tone, I would fetch it, if he could amuse the savages till I returned, which he might be certain would be very soon. I ran off with all speed, and without opposition arrived at the tree, found my bag well guarded indeed, father; for what was my surprise to find our two faithful dogs, Turk and Flora, sitting over it."

"Flora!" cried I, "she accompanied my dear wife and child into their captivity; they must be in this island—why have we left it!"

"My dear father," continued Fritz, "depend on it, they are not there; but I feel convinced that the wretches who have carried off Jack, hold dear mother and Francis in captivity; therefore we must at all events, pursue them. The meeting between Flora and me was truly joyful, for I was now convinced that my mother and Francis were not far off, though certainly not on the same island, or their attached friend would not have quitted them. I concluded that the chief who had taken my mother's handkerchief had also taken her dog, and brought her on this excursion, and that she had here met with her friend Turk, who had rambled from us.

"After caressing Flora, and taking up my bag, I ran off full speed to the spot where my dear Jack was trying to divert the barbarians. As I approached, I heard cries,—not the noisy laughter of the savages, but cries of distress from my beloved brother,—cries of help, addressed to me. I did not walk—I flew till I reached the spot, and I then saw him bound with a sort of strong cord, made of gut; his hands were fastened behind his back, his legs tied together, and those cruel men were carrying him towards their canoe, while he was crying out, 'Fritz, Fritz, where are you?' I threw myself desperately on the six men who were bearing him off. In the struggle, my gun, which I held in my hand, caught something, and accidentally went off, and—O, father, it was my own dear Jack I wounded! I cannot tell how I survived his cry of 'You have killed me!' And, when I saw his blood flow, my senses forsook me, and I fainted.

"When I recovered, I was alone; they had carried him off. I rose, and followed the traces of his blood, arrived fortunately at the shore just as they were embarking. God permitted me to see him again, supported by one of the savages, and even to hear his feeble voice cry, 'Console

yourself, Fritz, I am not dead; I am only wounded in the shoulder; it is not your fault. Go, my kind brother, as quickly as possible, to father, and you will both'——the canoe sailed away so swiftly, that I heard no more; but I understood the rest——'*you will both come and rescue me.*' But will there be time? Will they dress his wound? Oh! father, what have I done! Can you forgive me?"

Overwhelmed with grief, I could only hold out my hand to my poor boy, and assure him I could not possibly blame him for this distressing accident.

Ernest, though greatly afflicted, endeavored to console his brother. He told him a wound in the shoulder was not dangerous, and the savages certainly intended dressing his wound, or they would have left him to die. Fritz, somewhat comforted, begged me to allow him to bathe, to divest himself of the coloring which was now become odious to him, as being that of those ruthless barbarians. I was reluctant to consent; I thought it might still be useful, in gaining access to the savages. But he was certain they would recognize him in that disguise as the bearer of *the thunder*, and would distrust him.

I now recollected to ask what had become of his gun, and was sorry to learn that they had carried it off whilst he lay insensible. He himself considered that it would be useless to them, as they had fortunately left him the bag of ammunition. Ernest, however, regretted the loss to ourselves, this being the third we had lost—the one we had left in the canoe being also in the possession of the savages. The dogs we missed too, and Fritz could give no account of them; we concluded they had either followed the savages, or were still in the island. This was another severe sorrow; it seemed as if every sort of misfortune was poured out upon us. I rested on the shoulder of Ernest in my anguish. Fritz took advantage of my silence, and leaped out of the pinnace to have a bath. I was alarmed at first, but he was such an excellent swimmer, and the sea was so calm, that I soon abandoned my fears for him.

CHAPTER LI.

SHOAL OF WHALES.—PURSUIT OF THE SAVAGES.

Fritz was now swimming far before us, and appeared to have no idea of turning, so that I was at once certain he projected swimming on to the point where we had lost sight of the savages, to be the first to discover and aid his brother. Although he was an excellent swimmer, yet the distance was so great, that I was much alarmed, and especially for his arrival by night in the midst of the savages. This fear was much increased by a very extraordinary sound, which we now heard gradually approaching us; it was a sort of submarine tempest. The weather was beautiful; there was no wind, the moon shone in a cloudless sky, yet the waves were swollen as if by a storm, and threatened to swallow us; we heard at the same time a noise like violent rain.

Terrified at these phenomena, I cried out aloud for Fritz to return; and, though it was almost impossible my voice could reach him, we saw him swimming towards us with all his strength. Ernest and I used all our power in rowing to meet him, so that we soon got to him. The moment he leaped in, he uttered in a stifled voice, pointing to the mountains of waves, "They are enormous marine monsters! whales, I believe! such an immense shoal! They will swallow us up!"

"No," said Ernest, quietly; "don't be alarmed; the whale is a gentle and harmless animal, when not attacked. I am very glad to see them so near. We shall pass as quietly through the midst of these colossal creatures, as we did through the shining zoophytes. Doubtless the whales are searching for them, for they constitute a principal article of their food."

They were now very near us, sporting on the surface of the water, or plunging into its abysses, and forcing out columns of water to a great height, which occasionally fell on us, and wetted us. Sometimes they raised themselves on their huge tails, and looked like giants ready to fall on us and crush us; then they went down again in the water, which foamed under their immense weight. Then they seemed to be going through some military evolutions, advancing in a single line, like a body of regular troops, one after another, swimming

with grave dignity; still more frequently they were in lines of two and two.

This wonderful sight partly diverted us from our melancholy thoughts. Fritz had, however, seized his oar without giving himself time to dress, whilst I, at the rudder, steered as well as I could through these monsters, who are, notwithstanding their appearance, the mildest animals that exist. They allowed us to pass so closely, that we were wetted with the water they spouted up, and might have touched them; and, with the power to overturn us with a stroke of their tails, they never noticed us; they seemed to be satisfied with each other's society.

We were truly sorry to see their mortal enemy appear amongst them, the sword-fish of the south, armed with its long saw, remarkable for a sort of *fringe* of nine or ten inches long which distinguishes it from the sword-fish of the north. They are both terrible enemies to the whale, and, next to man, who wages an eternal war with them, its most formidable foes.

The whales in our South Seas had only the sword-fish to dread. As soon as they saw him approach, they dispersed, or dived into the depths of the ocean. One only, very near us, did not succeed in escaping; and we witnessed a combat of which, however, we could not see the event. These two monsters attacked each other with equal ferocity; but as they took an opposite direction to that which we were going, we soon lost sight of them, but we shall never forget our meeting with these wonderful giants of the deep.

We happily doubled the promontory, behind which the canoe had passed, and found ourselves in an extensive gulf, which narrowed as it entered the land, and resembled the mouth of a river. We did not hesitate to follow its course. We went round the bay, but found no traces of man, but numerous herds of the amphibious animal, called sometimes the sea-lion, the sea-dog, or the sea-elephant, or trunked phoca; modern voyagers give it the last name. These animals, though of enormous size, are gentle and peaceful, unless roused by the cruelty of man. They were in such numbers on this desert coast, that they would have prevented our approach if we had intended it. They actually covered the beach and the rocks, opening their huge mouths, armed with heavy sharp teeth, more frightful than dangerous. As it was night when we entered the bay, they were all sleeping, but they produced a most deafening noise with their breathing.

We left them to their noisy slumber; for us, alas, no such comfort remained. The continual anxiety attending an affliction like ours destroys all repose, and for three days we had not slept an hour. Since the new misfortune of Jack's captivity, we were all kept up by a kind of fever. Fritz was in a most incredible state of excitement, and declared he would never sleep till he had rescued his beloved brother. His bath had partially removed the coloring from his skin, but he was still dark enough to pass for a savage when arrayed like them.

The shores of the strait we were navigating were very steep, and we had not yet met with any place where we could land; my sons, however, persisted in thinking the savages could have taken no other route, as they had lost sight of their canoe round the promontory. As the strait was narrow and shallow, I consented that Fritz should throw off the clothes he had on, and swim to reconnoitre a place which seemed to be an opening in the rocks or hills that obstructed our passage, and we soon had the pleasure of seeing him standing on the shore, motioning for us to approach. The strait was now so confined, that we could not have proceeded any further with the pinnace; we could not even bring it to the shore. Ernest and I were obliged to step into the water up to the waist; but we took the precaution to tie a long and strong rope to the prow; and when we were aided by the vigorous arm of Fritz, we soon drew the pinnace near enough to fix it by means of the anchor.

There were neither trees nor rocks on that desert shore to which we could fasten the pinnace; but to our great delight and encouragement, we found at a short distance from our landing-place, a bark canoe, which my sons was certain was that in which Jack had been carried off. We entered it, but at first saw only the oars; at last, however, Ernest discovered, in the water which had filled the canoe, part of a handkerchief stained with blood, which they recognized as belonging to Jack.

This discovery, which relieved our doubts, caused Fritz to shed tears of joy. We were certainly on the track of the robbers, and might trust that they had not proceeded further with their barbarity. We found on the sand and in the boat, some cocoa-nut shells and fish-bones, which satisfied us of the nature of their repasts. We resolved to continue our research into the interior of the country, following the traces of the savages. We could not find any traces of Jack's foot,

which would have alarmed us, if Fritz had not suggested that they had carried him, on account of his wound.

We were about to set out, when the thoughts of the pinnace came over us. It was more than ever necessary for us to preserve this, our only means of return, and which moreover contained our goods for ransom, our ammunition, and our provisions, still untouched,—for some bread-fruit, Fritz had gathered, some muscles, and small, but excellent, oysters, had been sufficient for us. It was fortunate that we had brought some gourds of water with us, for we had not met with any. We decided that it would be necessary to leave one of our party to guard the precious pinnace, though this would be but an insufficient and dangerous defence, in case of the approach of the natives. My recent bereavements made me tremble at the idea of leaving either of my sons.

I cannot yet reflect on the agony of that moment without horror—yet it was the sole means to secure our vessel; there was not a creek nor a tree to hide it, and the situation of the canoe made it certain the savages must return there to embark. My children knew my thoughts, by which I alternately regarded them and the pinnace, and, after consulting each other's looks, Ernest said—

"The pinnace must not remain here unguarded, father, to be taken or, at any rate, pillaged by the natives, who will return for their canoe. Either we must all wait till they come, or you must leave me to defend it. I see, Fritz, that you could not endure to remain here."

In fact, Fritz impatiently stamped with his foot, saying—

"I confess I cannot remain here. Jack may be dying of his wound, and every moment is precious. I will seek him —find him—and save him! I have a presentiment I shall; and if I discover him, as I expect, in the hands of the savages, I know the way to release him, and to prevent their carrying off our pinnace."

I saw that the daring youth, in the heat of his exasperation, exposed to the horde of barbarians, might also become their victim. I saw that my presence was necessary to restrain and aid him; and I decided, with a heavy heart, to leave Ernest alone to protect the vessel. His cool and calm manner made it less dangerous for him to meet the natives. He knew several words of their language, and had read of the mode of addressing and conciliating them. He promised me to be prudent, which his elder brother could not be. We took the bag of toys which Fritz had brought, and left those

in the chest, to use if necessary; and, praying for the blessing of Heaven on my son, we left him. My sorrow was great; but he was no longer a child, and his character encouraged me. Fritz embraced his brother, and promised him to bring back Jack in safety.

CHAPTER LII.

A MISSIONARY OF GOD.

After having traversed for some time a desert, a sandy plain, without meeting a living creature, we arrived at a thick wood, where we lost the traces we had carefully followed. We were obliged to direct our course by chance, keeping no fixed road, but advancing as the interwoven branches permitted us. The wood was alive with the most beautiful birds of brilliant and varied plumage; but in our anxious and distressed state, we should have been more interested in seeing a savage than a bird. We passed at last through these verdant groves, and reached an arid plain extending to the shore.

We again discovered numerous footsteps; and, whilst we were observing them, we saw a large canoe pass rapidly, filled with islanders: and this time I thought that, in spite of the distance, I could recognize the canoe we had built, and of which they had robbed us. Fritz wished to swim after them, and was beginning to undress himself, and I only stopped him by declaring that if he did, I must follow him, as I had decided not to be separated from him. I even proposed that we should return to Ernest, as I was of the opinion the savages would stop at the place where we had disembarked, to take away the boat they had left, and we might then, by means of the words Ernest had acquired, learn from them what had become of my wife and children.

Fritz agreed to this, though he still persisted that the easiest and quickest mode of return would have been by swimming. We were endeavoring to retrace our road, when, to our great astonishment, we saw, at a few yards' distance, a man clothed in a long black robe advancing towards us, whom we immediately recognized as an European.

"Either I am greatly deceived," said I, "or this is a missionary, a worthy servant of God, come into these remote regions to make Him known to the wretched idolaters."

We hastened to him. I was not wrong. He was one of those zealous and courageous Christians, who devote their energies and their lives to the instruction and eternal salvation of men born in another hemisphere, of another color, uncivilized, but still our brothers. I had quitted Europe with the same intention, but Providence had ordered it otherwise; yet I met with joy one of my Christian brethren, and unable to speak from emotion, I silently embraced him.

He spoke to me in English—a language I had fortunately learned myself, and taught to my children—and his words fell on my soul like the message of the angel to Abraham, commanding him to spare his son.

"You are the persons I am seeking;" said he, in a mild and tender tone, "and I thank Heaven that I have met with you. This youth is Fritz, your eldest son, I conclude; but where have you left your second son, Ernest;"

"Reverend man," said Fritz, seizing his hands, "you have seen my brother Jack. Perhaps my mother? You know where they are. Oh! are they living?"

"Yes, they are living, and well taken care of," said the missionary; "come, and I will lead you to them."

It was, indeed, necessary to lead me; I was so overcome with joy, that I should have fainted; but the good missionary made me inhale some volatile salts which he had about him; and, supported by him and my son, I managed to walk.

My first words were a thanksgiving to God for his mercy: then I implored my good friend to tell me if I should indeed see my wife and children again. He assured that an hour's walk would bring me to them; but I suddenly recollected Ernest, and refused to present myself before the beloved ones, while he was still in danger.

The missionary smiled, as he told me he expected this delay, and wished to know where we had left Ernest. I recounted to him our arrival in the island, and the purpose for which we had left Ernest; with our intention of returning to him as soon as we saw the canoe pass, hoping to obtain some intelligence from the savages.

"But how could you have made yourself understood?" said he. "Are you acquainted with their language?"

I told him Ernest had studied the vocabulary of the South Sea Islanders.

"Doubtless that of Tahiti, or the Friendly Islands," said he; "but the dialect of these islanders differs much from theirs. I have resided there more than a year, and have

studied it, so may be of use to you; let us go. Which way did you come?"

"Through that thick wood," replied I; "where we wandered a long time; and I fear we shall have some difficulty in finding our way back."

"You should have had the precaution to notch the trees as you came," said our worthy friend; "without that precaution, you were in danger of being lost; but we will find my marks, which will lead us to the brook, and, following its course, we shall be safe."

"We saw no brook," remarked Fritz.

"There is a brook of excellent water, which you have missed in crossing the forest; if you had ascended the course of the stream, you would have reached the hut which contains your dear friends; the brook runs before it."

Fritz struck his forehead with vexation.

"God orders all for the best," said I to the good priest; "we might not have met with you; we should have been without Ernest; you might have sought us all day in vain. Ah! good man, it is under your holy auspices that our family ought to meet, in order to increase our happiness. Now please to tell me—"

"But first," interrupted Fritz, "pray tell me how Jack is? He was wounded, and—"

"Be composed, young man," said the calm man of God; "the wound, which he confesses he owes to his own imprudence, will have no evil consequences; the savages had applied some healing herbs to it, but it was necessary to extract a small ball; an operation which I performed last evening. Since then he suffers less; and will be soon well, when his anxiety about you is removed."

Fritz embraced the kind missionary, entreating his pardon for his rashness, and adding, "Did my brother talk to you of us, sir?"

"He did," answered his friend; "but I was acquainted with you before; your mother talked continually of her husband and children. What mingled pain and delight she felt yesterday evening, when the savages brought to her her dear Jack, wounded! I was fortunately in the hut to comfort her, and assist her beloved boy."

"And dear Francis," said I, how rejoiced he would be to see his brother again!"

"Francis," said the missionary, smiling, "will be the pro-

tector of you all. He is the idol of the savages now; an idolatry permitted by Christianity."

We proceeded through the wood as we conversed, and at last reached the brook. I had a thousand questions to ask, and was very anxious to know how my wife and Francis had been brought to this island, and how they met with the missionary. The five or six days we had been separated seemed to me five or six months. We walked too quickly for me to get much information. The English minister said little, and referred me to my wife and son for all details. On the subject of his own noble mission, he was less reserved.

"Thank God," said he, "I have already succeeded in giving this people some notions of humanity. They love their *black friend*, as they call me, and willingly listen to my preaching and the singing of some hyms. When your little Francis was taken, he had his reed flageolet in his pocket, and his playing and graceful manners have so captivated them, that I fear they will with reluctance resign him. The king is anxious to adopt him. But do not alarm yourself, brother; I hope to arrange all happily with the divine assistance. I have gained some power over them, and I will avail myself of it."

"A year ago I could not have answered for the life of the prisoners; now I believe them to be in safety. But how much is there yet to teach these simple children of nature, who listen only to her voice, and yield to every impression! The first impulse is good, but they are so unsteady that affection may suddenly change to hatred; they are inclined to theft, violent in their anger, yet generous and affectionate. You will see an instance of this in the abode, where a women more unfortunate than your wife, since she has lost her husband, has found an asylum."

He was silent, and I did not question him further on this subject. We were approaching the arm of the sea where we had left our pinnace, and my heart at ease about the rest, became now anxious solely for Ernest. Sometimes the hills concealed the water from us; Fritz climbed them, anxious to discover his brother; at last I heard him suddenly cry out, "Ernest! Ernest ——"

He was answered by shouts, or rather howls, amongst which I could not distinguish the voice of my son. Terror seized me:

"These are the islanders," said I to the missionary; "and these frightful cries——"

"Are cries of joy," said he, "which will be increased when they see you. This path will conduct us to the shore. Call Fritz; but I do not see him; he has, doubtless, descended the hill, and joined them. Have no fears; recommend your sons to be prudent. The *black friend* will speak to his black friends, and they will hear him."

We proceeded towards the shore, when at some distance, I perceived my two sons on the deck of the pinnace, which was covered with islanders, to whom they were distributing the treasures of the chest, at least those we had put apart in the bag; they had not been so imprudent as to open the chest itself, which would soon have been emptied; it remained snugly below the deck, with the powder-barrel. At every new acquisition, the savages uttered cries of joy, repeating *mona, mona*, signifying *beautiful*.

The mirrors were at first received with the most delight. But this soon changed into terror; they evidently conceived there was something magical about them, and flung them all into the sea.

The colored glass beads had then the preference, but the distribution caused many disputes. Those who had not obtained any, wished to deprive the rest of them by force. The clamor and quarreling were increasing, when the voice of the missionary was heard, and calmed them as if by enchantment.

All left the pinnace, and crowded round him. He harangued them in their own language; and pointed me out to them, naming me, *me toutane*, that is, *father*, which they repeated in their turn. Some approached me, and rubbed their noses against mine, which, the pastor had informed me, was a mark of respect.

In the meantime, Fritz had informed Ernest that his mother and brothers were found, and that the man who accompanied us was an European. Ernest received the intelligence with a calm joy; it was only by the tears in his eyes you could discover how much his heart was affected; he leaped from the pinnace, and came to thank the missionary. I had my share of his gratitude, too, for coming to seek him, before I had seen the dear lost ones.

We had now to think of joining them. We unanimously decided to proceed by water; in the first place, that we might bring our pinnace as near as possible to my dear Elizabeth, who was still suffering from her fall, her forced voyage, and, above all, from her anxiety; besides, I confess that I felt a

little fatigue; and should have reluctantly set out to cross the wood a third time. But, in addition to this, I was assured that it was the promptest mode of reaching our friends; and this alone would have decided me.

The pinnace was then loosened, the sail set, and we entered with thankfulness. Dreading the agitation of my wife if she saw us suddenly, I entreated our new friend to precede us, and prepare her. He consented; but, as he was coming on board, he was suddenly stopped by the natives, and one of them addressed him for some time. The missionary listened with calmness and dignity, till he concluded; then, turning to me he said—

"You must answer for me, brother, the request which *Parabery* makes; he wishes me in the name of the whole, to wait a few moments for their chief, to whom they give the title of king. *Baraourou*, as he is called, has assembled them here for a ceremony, at which all his warriors must assist. I have been anxious to attend, fearing it might be a sacrifice to their idols, which I have always strongly opposed, and wishing to seize this occasion to declare to them the one true God.

"Baraourou is not wicked, and I hope to succeed in touching his heart, enlightening his mind, and converting him to Christianity; his example would certainly be followed by the greatest part of his subjects, who are much attached to him. Your presence, and the name of God uttered by you, with the fervor and in the attitude of profound veneration and devotion, may aid this work of charity and love.

"Have you sufficient self-command to delay, for perhaps a few hours, the meeting with your family? Your wife and children, not expecting you, will not suffer from suspense. If you do not agree to this, I will conduct you to them, and return, I hope, in time to fulfill my duty. I wait your decision to reply to Parabery, who is already sufficiently acquainted with the truth, to desire that his king and his brethren should know it also."

Such were the words of this true servant of God; but I cannot do justice to the expression of his heavenly countenance.

Mr. Willis, for such was his name, was forty-five or fifty years of age, tall and thin; the labors and fatigues of his divine vocation had, more than years, left their traces on his noble figure and countenance; he stooped a little, his open and elevated forehead was slightly wrinkled, and his thin

hair was prematurely gray; his clear blue eyes were full of intelligence and kindness, reading your thoughts and showing you all his own. He usually kept his arms folded over his breast, and was very calm, in speaking; but when his extended hand pointed to heaven. the effect was irresistible; one might have thought he saw the very glory he spoke of. His simple words to me seemed a message from God, and it would have been impossible to resist him.

It was indeed a sacrifice; but I made it without hesitation I glanced at my sons, who had their eyes cast down; but I saw Fritz knitting his brows. "I shall stay with you, father," said I, "happy if I can assist you in fulfilling your sacred duties."

"And you, young people," said he, "are you of the same opinion?"

Fritz came forward and frankly said, "Sir, it was, unfortunately, I who wounded my brother Jack; he has been generous enough to conceal this; you extracted the ball which I discharged into his shoulder; I owe his life to you, and mine is at your disposal; I can refuse you nothing; and, however impatient, I must remain with you."

"I repeat the same," said Ernest; "you protected our mother and brothers, and, by God's permission, you restore them all to us. We will all remain with you; you shall fix the time of our meeting, which will not, I trust, be long delayed."

I signified my approbation, and the missionary gave them his hand, assuring them that their joy on meeting their friends would be greatly increased by the consciousness of this virtuous self-denial.

We soon experienced this. Mr. Willis learned from Parabery, that they were going to fetch their king in our pretty canoe when we saw it pass. The royal habitation was situated on the other side of the promontory, and we soon heard a joyful cry, that they saw the canoe coming.

While the savages were engaged in preparing to meet their chief, I entered the pinnace, and descending beneath the deck, I took from the chest what I judged most fit to present to his majesty. I chose an axe, a saw, a pretty, small, ornamented sabre, which could not do much harm, a packet of nails, and one of glass beads. I had scarcely put aside these articles, when my sons rushed to me in great excitement.

"Oh, father!" cried they, at once, "look! look! summon

all your fortitude; see! there is Francis himself in the canoe. Oh! how curiously he is dressed!"

I looked, and saw, at some distance, our canoe ascending the strait; it was decorated with green branches, which the savages, who formed the king's guard, held in their hand; others were rowing vigorously; and the chief, wearing a red and yellow handkerchief, which had belonged to my wife, as a turban, was seated at the stern, and a pretty, little, blooming, flaxen-haired boy was placed on his right shoulder.

With what delight did I recognize my child! He was naked above the waist, and wore a little tunic of woven leaves, which reached to his knees, a necklace and bracelets of shells, and a variety of colored feathers, mingled with his bright curls; some of these fell over his face, and doubtless prevented him from seeing us. The chief seemed much engaged with him, and continually took some ornament from his own dress to decorate him.

"It is my child!" said I, in great terror, to Mr. Willis, "my dearest and youngest! They have taken him from his mother. What must be her grief! He is her Benjamin—the child of her love. Why have they taken him? Why have they adorned him in this manner? Why have they brought him here."

"Have no fear," said the missionary; "they will do him no harm. I promise you they shall restore him, and you shall take him back to his mother. Place yourselves at my side, with these branches in your hands."

He took some from Parabery, who held a bundle of them, and gave us each one; each of the savages took one also. They were from a tree which had slender elegant leaves and rich scarlet flowers—a species of *mimosa;* the Indians call it the tree of peace. They carry a branch of it when they have no hostile intentions. In all their assemblies, when war is proclaimed, they make a fire of these branches, and if all are consumed, it is considered an omen of victory.

While Mr. Willis was explaining this to us, the canoe approached. Two savages took Francis on their shoulders, two others took the king in the same way, and advanced gravely towards us! What difficulty I had to restrain myself from snatching my child from his bearers, and embracing him! My sons were equally agitated. Fritz was darting forward, but the missionary restrained him.

Francis, somewhat alarmed at his position, had his eyes cast down, and had not yet seen us. When the king was

within a few yards of us, they stopped, and all the savages prostrated themselves before him; we alone remained standing.

Then Francis saw us and uttered a piercing cry, calling out, "Father! dear brothers!" he struggled to quit the shoulders of his bearers, but they held him too firmly. It was impossible to restrain ourselves longer; we all cried out, and mingled our tears and lamentations. I said to the good missionary,—a little too harshly, perhaps—"Ah! if you were a father!"

"I am," said he, "the father of all this flock, and your children are mine; I am answerable for all. Command your sons to be silent; request the child to be composed, and leave the rest to me."

I immediately took advantage of the permission to speak. "Dear Francis," said I, holding out my arms, "we are come to seek you and your mother; after all our dangers, we shall soon meet again, to part no more. But be composed, my child; and do not risk the happiness of that moment by any impatience. Trust in God, and in this good friend that He has given us, and who has restored to me the treasures without which I could not live."

We then waved our hands to him, and he remained still, but wept quietly, murmuring our names: "Father, Fritz, Ernest,—tell me about mother," said he at last, in an inquiring tone.

"She does not know we are so near her," said I. "How did you leave her?"

"Very much grieved," said he, "that they brought me away; but they have not done me any harm,—they are so kind; and we shall soon all go back to her. Oh! what joy for her and our friends!"

"One word about Jack," said Fritz; "how does his wound go on?"

"Oh, pretty well," answered he, "he has no pain now, and Sophia nurses and amuses him. How little Matilda would weep when the savages carried me off! If you knew, father, how kind and good she is!"

I had no time to ask who Sophia and Matilda were. They had allowed me to speak to my son to tranquilize him, but the king now commanded silence, and, still elevated on the shoulders of his people, began to harangue the assembly.

He was a middle-aged man, with striking features; his thick lips, his hair tinged with red paint, his dark brown

face, which, as well as his body, was tattooed with white, gave him a formidable aspect; yet his countenance was not unpleasant, and announced no ferocity.

In general, these savages have enormous mouths, with long white teeth; they wear a tunic of reeds or leaves from the waist to the knees. My wife's handkerchief, which I had recognized at first, was gracefully twisted round the head of the king: his hair was fastened up high, and ornamented with feathers, but he had nearly removed them all to deck my boy. He placed him at his side, and frequently pointed him out during his speech. I was on thorns.

As soon as he had concluded, the savages shouted, clapped their hands, and surrounded my child, dancing and presenting him fruit, flowers, and shells, crying out *Ouraki!* a cry in which the king, who was now standing, joined also.

"What does the word *Ouraki* mean?" said I to the missionary.

"It is the new name of your son," answered he; "or rather of the son of *Baraourou*, who has just adopted him."

"Never!" cried I, darting forward. "Boys, let us rescue your brother from these barbarians!"

We all three rushed towards Francis, who weeping, extended his arms to us. The savages attempted to repulse us; but at that moment the missionary pronounced some words in a loud voice; they immediately prostrated themselves on their faces, and we had no difficulty in securing the child. We brought him to our protector, who still remained in the same attitude in which he had spoken, with his eyes and his right hand raised towards heaven. He made a sign for the savages to rise, and afterwards spoke for some time to them. What would I have given to have understood him! But I formed some idea from the effect of his words. He frequently pointed to us, pronouncing the word *eroue*, and particularly addressed the king, who listened motionless to him.

At the conclusion of his speech, Baraourou approached and attempted to take hold of Francis, who threw himself into my arms, where I firmly held him.

"Let him now go," said Mr. Willis, "and fear nothing."

I released the child; the king lifted him up, pressed his own nose to his; then, placing him on the ground, took away the feathers and necklace with which he had decked him, and replaced him in my arms, rubbing my nose also, and repeating several words. In my first emotion, I threw myself on my knees, and was imitated by my two sons.

"It is well!" cried the missionary, again raising his eyes and hands. "The king, convinced it is the will of God, restores your child, and wishes to become your friend: he is worthy to be so, for he adores and fears your God. May he soon learn to know and believe all the truths of Christianity! Let us pray together that the time may come when on these shores, where paternal love has triumphed, I may see a temple rise to the Father of all,—the God of peace and love!"

He kneeled down, and the king and all his people followed his example. Without understanding the words of his prayer, I joined in the spirit of it with all my heart and soul.

I then presented my offerings to the king, increasing them considerably. I would willingly have given all my treasures in exchange for him he had restored to me. My sons also gave something to each of the savages, who incessantly cried *tayo, tayo.*

I begged Mr. Willis to tell the king I gave him my canoe, and hoped he would use it to visit us in our island, to which we were returning. He appeared pleased, and wished to accompany us in our pinnace, which he seemed greatly to admire, some of his people followed us on board to row, the rest placed themselves in the canoes. We soon entered the sea again, and, doubling the second point, we came to an arm of the sea much wider, and deep enough for our pinnace, and which conducted us to the object of our dearest hopes.

CHAPTER LIII.

JOYFUL RE-UNION.

We were never weary of caressing our dear Francis. We were very anxious to learn from him all the particulars of the arrival of the savages in our island, the seizure of his mother and himself, their voyage and their residence here, and who were the friends they had met with; but it was impossible, his tawny majesty never left us for a moment, and played with the boy as if he had been a child himself.

Francis showed him all the toys from our chest; he was extremely amused with the small mirrors, and the dolls. A painted carriage, driven by a coachman who raised his whip when the wheels turned, appeared miraculous to him. He uttered screams of delight as he pointed it out to his followers. The ticking of my watch also charmed him; and, as I

had several more, I gave it him, showing him how to wind it up. But, the first time he tried to do it, he broke the spring, and when it was silent, he cared no longer for it, but threw it on one side. However, as the gold was very glittering, he took it up again, and suspending it from the handkerchief that was round his head, it hung over his nose, and formed a striking ornament.

Francis showed him his face in a mirror, which royal amusement made him laugh heartily. He asked the missionary if it was the invisible and Almighty God who had made all these wonderful things! Mr. Willis replied, that it was he who gave men the power to make them. I do not know whether Baraourou comprehended this, but he remained for some time in deep thought. I profited by this to ask the missionary what were the words which had terrified them so when they wished to keep my son from me, and which had compelled them to surrender him.

"I told them," answered he, "that the Almighty and unseen God, of whom I spoke to them daily, ordered them by my voice to restore a son to his father. I threatened them with his anger, if they refused; and promised them his mercy if they obeyed, and they did obey.

"The first step is gained; they know the duty of adoring and obeying God; every other truth proceeds from this, and I have no doubt that my savages will one day become good Christians. My method of instruction is suited to their limited capacity. I prove to them that their wooden idols, made by their own hands, could neither create, hear them, nor protect them. I have shown them God in His works, have declared Him to be as good as He is powerful, hating evil, cruelty, murder, and cannibalism, and they have renounced all these. In their late wars they have either released or adopted their prisoners. If they carried off your wife and son, they intended it for a good action, as you will understand."

I could not ask Francis any questions, as Baraourou continued playing with him; so, turning to Ernest, I asked what passed when the savages joined him?

"When you left me," said he, "I amused myself by searching for shells, plants, and zoophytes, with which the rocks abound, and I have added a great deal to my collection.

"I was at some distance from the pinnace, when I heard a confused sound of voices, and concluded that the savages

were coming; in fact ten or a dozen issued from the road you had entered, and I cannot comprehend how you missed meeting them.

"Fearing they would attempt to take possession of my pinnace, I returned speedily, and seized a loaded musket, though I determined to use it only to defend my own life, or the pinnace. I stood on the deck in an attitude as bold and imposing as I could command; but I did not succeed in intimidating them. They leaped one after another, on deck, and surrounded me, uttering loud cries. I could not discover whether they were cries of joy or fury; but I showed no fear, and addressed them in a friendly tone, in some words from Captain Cook's vocabulary. But they did not seem to comprehend me, nor could I understand any of theirs except *ecroute* (father), which they frequently repeated, and *vraiteuo* (woman).

"One of them had Fritz's gun, from which I concluded they were of the party who carried Jack. I took it, and, showing him mine, endeavored to make him understand that it also belonged to me. He thought I wished to exchange, and readily offered to return it and take mine. This would not have suited me; Fritz's gun was discharged, and I could not let them have mine loaded. To prevent accident, surrounded as I was, I decided to give them a fright, and, seeing a bird flying above us, I took aim so correctly, that my shot brought down the bird, a blue pigeon. They were for a moment stupefied with terror; then immediately all left the pinnace, except Parabery; he seemed to be pleased with me, often pointing to the sky, saying *mete*, which means *good*, I believe.

"His comrades were examining the dead bird. Some touched their own shoulders, to try if they were wounded as well as the bird and Jack had been, which convinced me they had carried him off. I tried to make Parabery understand my suspicion, and I think I succeeeded, for he made me an affirmative sign, pointing to the interior of the island, and touching his shoulder with an air of pity.

"I took several things from the chest, and gave them to him, making signs that he should show them to the others, and induce them to return to me. He comprehended me very well and complied with my wishes.

"I was soon surrounded by the whole party, begging of me. I was busy distributing beads, mirrors, and small knives when you came, and we are now excellent friends. Two or three returned to the wood, and brought me cocoa-nuts and

bananas. But we must be careful to hide our guns, of which they have a holy horror.

"And now, dear father, I think, we ought not to call these people *savages*. They have the simplicity of childhood; a trifle irritates them, a trifle appeases them; they are grateful and affectionate. I find them neither cruel nor barbarous. They have done me no harm, when they might easily have killed me, thrown me into the sea, or carried me away."

"We must not," said I, "judge of all savage people by those, who have had the benefit of a virtuous teacher. Mr. Willis has already cast into their hearts the seeds of that divine religion, which command us to do unto others as we would they should do unto us, and to pardon and love our enemies."

While we were discoursing we arrived at a spot where the canoes had already landed. We were about to do the same, but the king did not seem inclined to quit the pinnace, but continued speaking to the missionary. I was still fearful that he wished to keep Francis, to whom he seemed to be more and more attached, holding him constantly on his knee; but at last, to my great joy, he placed him in my arms.

"He keeps his word with you," said Mr. Willis. "You may carry him to his mother; but, in return, he wishes you to permit him to go in your pinnace to his abode on the other side of the strait, that he may show it to the women, and he promises to bring it back. Perhaps there would be danger in refusing him."

I agreed with him; but still there was a difficulty in granting this request. If he chose to keep it, how should we return? Besides, it contained our only barrel of powder and all our articles of traffic; and how could we expect it would escape pillage?

Mr. Willis confessed he had not yet been able to cure their fondness for theft; and suggested, as the only means of security, that I should accompany the king, and bring the pinnace back, which was then to be committed to the charge of Fanabery, for whose honesty he would be responsible.

Here was another delay; the day was so far advanced, that I might not be able to return before night. Besides, though my wife did not know we were so near her, she knew they had carried away Francis, and she would certainly be very uneasy about him.

Saraourou looked impatient, and, as it was necessary to answer him, I decided at once. I resigned Francis to the

missionary, entreating him to take him to his mother, to prepare her for our approach, and to relate the cause of our delay. I told my sons, it was my desire they should accompany me. Fritz agreed rather indignantly, and Ernest with calmness.

Mr. Willis told the king, that, in gratitude to him, and to do him honor, I and my sons wished to accompany him. He appeared much flattered at this, made my sons seat themselves on each side of him, endeavored to pronounce their names, and finished by exchanging names as a token of friendship, calling Fritz *Bara;* Ernest, *Ourou;* and himself, Fritz-Ernest. Mr. Willis and Francis left us; our hearts were sad to see them go where all our wishes centred; but the die was cast. The king gave the signal to depart; the canoes took the lead and we followed.

In an hour we saw the royal palace. It was a tolerably large hut, constructed of bamboos and palm-leaves, very neatly. Several women were seated before it busily employed in making the short petticoats of reeds which they all wore. Their hair was very carefully braided in tufts on the crown of the head; none were good-looking, except two daughters about ten or twelve years old, who, though very dark, were graceful: these, no doubt, he intended for wives for my Francis.

We disembarked about a hundred yards from the hut. The women came to meet us, carrying a branch of the mimosa in each hand. They then performed a singular kind of dance, entwining their arms and shaking their feet, but never moving from the spot, this was accompanied by a wild chant, which was anything but musical. The king seemed pleased with it; and, calling his wives and daughters, he showed them his *tayo, Bara* and *Ourou*, calling himself Fritz Ernest. He then joined in the dance, dragging my sons with him, who managed it pretty well. As for me, he treated me with great respect, always calling me *ecroue*—father, and made me sit down on a large trunk of a tree before his house; which was doubtless his throne, for he placed me there with great ceremony, rubbing his royal nose against mine.

After the dance was concluded the women retired to the hut and returned to offer us a collation, served up in the shells of cocoa-nuts. It was a sort of paste, composed, I believe, of different sorts of fruit, mixed up with a kind of flour and the milk of the cocoa-nut. This mixture was de-

testable to me; but I made up for it with some kernel of cocoa-nuts, and bread-fruit. Perceiving that I liked these, Baraourou ordered some of them to be gathered, and carried to the pinnace.

The hut was backed by a wood of palms and other trees, so that our provision was readily procured. Still there was time for my sons to run to the pinnace, attended by Parabery, and bring from the chest some beads, mirrors, scissors, needles and pins to distribute to the ladies.

When they brought the fruit they had gathered, I made a sign to Baraourou to take them to see the pinnace; he called them, and they followed him timidly, and submitting to his wishes in everything.

They carried the fruit two and two, in a sort of baskets, very skillfully woven in rushes, which appeared to have a European form. They had no furniture in their dwelling but mats, which were doubtless their beds, and some trunks of trees, serving for seats and tables. Several baskets were suspended to the bamboo which formed the walls, and also lances, slings, clubs, and other similar weapons; from which I concluded they were a nation of warriors. I did not observe much, however, for my thoughts were in the future, and I was very impatient for our departure.

I hastened to the pinnace; and my sons distributed their gifts to the females, who did not dare to express their delight; but it was evident in their countenances. They immediately began to adorn themselves with their presents, and appeared to value the mirrors more than their husbands had done. They soon understood their use, and employed them to arrange with taste the strings of beads round their necks, heads, and arms.

At last the signal was given for our departure; I rubbed my nose against that of the king. I added to my presents a packet of nails and one of gilt buttons, which he seemed to covet. I went on board my pinnace, and, conducted by the good Parabery, we took our way to that part of the coast where the dear ones resided whom I so anxiously desired to see. Some of the savages accompanied us in their own canoe. We should have preferred having only our friend Parabery, but we were not the masters.

Favored by the wind, we soon reached the shore we had formerly quitted, and found our excellent missionary waiting for us.

"Come," said he, "you are now going to receive your re-

ward. Your wife and children impatiently expect you; they would have come to meet you, but your wife is still weak, and Jack suffering —your presence will soon cure them."

I was too much affected to answer. Fritz gave me his arm, as much to support me, as to restrain himself from rushing on before. Ernest did the same with Mr. Willis; his mildness pleased the good man, who also saw his taste for study, and tried to encourage it. After half an hour's walk the missionary told us we were now near our good friends. I saw no sign of a habitation, nothing but trees and rocks; at last I saw a light smoke among the trees, and at that moment Francis, who had been watching, ran to meet us.

"Mother is expecting you," said he, showing us the way through a grove of shrubs, thick enough to hide entirely the entrance into a kind of grotto. We had to stoop to pass into it. It resembles much the entrance to the bear's den, which we found in the remote part of our island. A mat of rushes covered the opening, yet permitting the light to penetrate it. Francis removed the matting, calling—

"Mamma, here we are!"

A lady, apparently about twenty-nine years of age, of a mild and pleasing appearance, came forward to meet me. She was clothed in a robe made of palm-leaves sewed together, which reached from her throat to her feet, leaving her beautiful arms uncovered. Her light hair was braided, and fastened up round her head.

"You are welcome," said she, taking my hand; "you will be my poor friend's best physician."

We entered, and saw my dear wife seated on a bed of moss and leaves; she wept abundantly, pointing out to me our dear boy by her side. A little nymph of eleven or twelve years old was endeavoring to raise him.

"Here are your father and brothers, Jack," said she, "you are very happy in having what I have not: but your father will be mine, and you shall be my brother."

Jack thanked her affectionately. Fritz and Ernest kneeling beside the couch embraced their mother.

Fritz begged her to forgive him for hurting his brother; and then tenderly inquired of Jack about his wound.

For me, I cannot describe my gratitude and agitation. I could scarcely utter a word to my dear wife, who on her part, sunk down, quite overcome, on her bed. The lady who was, as I understood, Madame Hirtel, approached to assist her. When she recovered, she presented to me Madame

Hirtel and her two daughters. The eldest Sophia, was attending on Jack; Matilda, who was about ten or eleven years of age, was playing with Francis; while the good missionary, on his knees, thanked God for having re-united us.

"And for life," cried my dear wife. "My dear husband, I well knew you would set out to seek me; but how could I anticipate that you would ever succeed in finding me? We will now separate no more. This beloved friend has agreed to accompany us to the Happy Island, as I intend to call it if I ever have the happiness to reach it again with all I love in the world. How graciously God permit us to derive blessings from our sorrows! See what my trial has produced me: a friend, and two dear daughters; for, henceforward, we are only one family."

We were mutually delighted with this arrangement, and entreated Mr. Willis to visit us often, and to come and live in the Happy Island when his mission was completed.

"I will consent," said he, "if you will come and assist me in my duties; for which purpose you and your sons must acquire the language of these islanders. We are much nearer your island than you think, for you took a very circuitous course, and Parabery, who knows it, declares it is only a day's voyage with a fair wind. And, moreover, he tells me that he is so much delighted with you and your sons, that he cannot part with you, and wishes me to obtain your permission to accompany you, and remain with you. He will be exceedingly useful to you; will teach the language to you all, and will be a ready means of communication between us."

I gladly agreed to take Parabery with us as a friend. But it was no time yet to think of departing, as Mr. Willis wished to have Jack some days longer under his care. We therefore arranged that I and my two sons should become his guests, as his hut was but a short distance off.

We had many things to hear; but, as my wife was yet too weak to relate her adventures, we resolved first to have the history of Madame Hirtel. Night coming on, the missionary lighted a gourd lamp, and, after a light collation of bread-fruit, Madame Hirtel began her story.

CHAPTER LIV.

MADAME HIRTEL'S NARRATIVE.

"My life," she began, "passed without any remarkable events, till the misfortune occurred which brought me to this island. I was married, when very young, to M. Hirtel, a merchant at Hamburgh, an excellent man, whose loss I have deeply felt. I was very happy in this union, arranged by my parents, and sanctioned by reason. We had three children, a son and two daughters, in the three first years of our marriage; and M. Hirtel, seeing his family increase so rapidly wished to increase his income. An advantageous establishment was offered him in a distant island; he accepted it, and prevailed on me to settle there, with my family, for some years. My parents were dead, I had no tie to detain me in Europe. I was going to see new regions, those fortunate isles of which I had heard so much, and I set out joyfully with my husband and children, not foreseeing the misfortunes before me.

"Our voyage was favorable; the children, like myself, were delighted with the novelties of it. I was then twenty-six years old; Sophia, seven; Matilda, six; and Alfred, our pretty, gentle boy, not yet five. Poor child! he was the darling and the plaything of all the crew."

She wept bitterly for a few moments, and then resumed her narration.

"He was as fair as your own Francis, and greatly resembled him. We proceeded first to Bourdeaux, where my husband had a correspondent, with whom he had large dealings; by his means my husband was enabled to raise large sums for his new undertaking. We carried with us, in fact, nearly his whole fortune. We re-embarked under the most favorable auspices;—the weather delightful, and the wind fair; but we very soon had a change. We were met by a terrible storm and hurricane, such as the sailors had never witnessed. For a week our ship was tossed about by contrary winds, driven into unknown seas, lost all her rigging, and was at last so broken, that the water poured in on all sides.

"All was lost, apparently. But in this extremity, my husband made a last attempt to save us. He tied my daughters and myself to a plank, taking the charge of my boy himself,

as he feared the additional weight would be to much for our raft. His intention was to tie himself to another plank, to fasten this to ours, and taking his son in his arms, to give us a chance of being carried to the shore, which did not appear far off.

"Whilst he was occupied in placing us, he gave Alfred to the care of a sailor who was particularly attached to him. I heard the man say, 'Leave him with me, I will take care to save him.' On this, M. Hirtel insisted on his restoring him, and I cried out that he should be given to me. At that moment the ship, which was already fallen on its side, filled rapidly with water, plunged, and disappeared with all on board. The plank on which I and my daughters were fixed, alone floated, and I saw nothing but death and desolation round me."

Madame Hirtel paused, almost suffocated by the remembrance of that awful moment.

"Poor woman!" said my wife weeping, "it is five years since this misfortune. It was at the same time as our shipwreck and was doubtless caused by the same storm. But how much more fortunate was I! I lost none that were dear to to me, and we even had the vessel left for our use. But, my dear, unfortunate friend, by what miracle were you saved?"

"It was He who only can work miracles," said the missionary, "who cares for the widow and the orphan, and without whose word not a hair of the head can perish, who at that moment gave courage to the Christian mother."

"My strength," continued she, was nearly exhausted, when, after being tossed about by the furious waves, I found myself thrown upon what I supposed to be a sand-bank with my two children. I envied the state of my husband and son. If I had not been a mother, I should have wished to have followed them; but my two girls lay senseless at my side, and I was anxious, as I perceived they still breathed, to recover them.

"At the moment M. Hirtel pushed the raft into the water, he threw upon it a box bound with iron, which I grasped mechanically, and still held, when we were left on the shore. It was not locked, yet it was with difficulty, in my confined position, that I succeeded in opening it. It contained a quantity of gold and bank-notes, which I looked upon with contempt and regret.

"But there was something useful in the box. In the morocco portfolio, which contained the bank-notes, there

were the useful little instruments—a knife, scissors, pencils, stiletto, and also a small bottle of Cologne water, which was particularly serviceable in restoring my children. I began by cutting the cords that tied us. I then rubbed my dear children with the Cologne, made them inhale it, and even swallow a little.

"The wind was still blowing, but the clouds began to break, and the sun appeared, which dried and warmed us. My poor children opened their eyes, and knew me, and I felt I was not utterly comfortless; their first words were to ask for their father and brother. I could not tell them they were no more. I tried to deceive myself; to support my strength by a feeble and delusive hope. M. Hirtel swam well, the sailor still better; and the last words I had heard still rung in my ears—'Do not be uneasy, I will save the child.'

"If I saw anything floating at a distance, my heart began to beat, and I ran towards the water; but I saw it was only wreck, which I could not even reach. Some pieces were, however, thrown on shore, and with these and our own raft I was enabled to make a sort of shelter, by resting them against a rock. My poor children, by crouching under this, sheltered themselves from the rain, or from the rays of the sun.

"I had the good fortune to preserve a large beaver hat, which I wore at the time, and this protected me; but these resources gave me little consolation. My children were complaining of hunger, and I felt only of how much we were in want. I had seen a shell-fish on the shore, resembling the oyster or muscle. I collected some; and, opening them with my knife, we made a repast on them, which sufficed for the first day.

"Night came—my children offered up their evening prayer and I earnestly besought the succor of the Almighty. I then lay down beside my babes on our raft, as conveniently as we could, and they soon slept. The fearful thoughts of the past, and dreadful anticipations of the future, prevented me from sleeping. My situation was, indeed, melancholy. But I felt, as a mother, I ought not to wish for death.

"As soon as day broke, I went close to the shore, to seek some shell-fish for our breakfast. In crossing the sand, I nearly plunged my foot into a hole, and fancied I heard a crash. I stooped, and putting my hand into the opening, found it was full of eggs; I had broken two or three, which I tasted, and thought very good. From the color, form, and

taste, I knew them to be turtle's eggs. There were at least sixty, so I had no more care about food. I carried away in my apron as many as I could preserve from the rays of the sun. This I endeavored to effect by burying them in the sand, and covering them with one end of our plank, and succeeded very well. Besides these, there were as many to be found on the shore as we required. I have sometimes found as many as ninety together.

"These were our sole support while we remained here. My children liked them very much. I forgot to add, that I was fortunate enough to discover a stream of fresh water running into the sea; it was the same which runs past this house, and which conducted me here. The first day we suffered greatly from thirst, but on the second we met this stream, which saved us.

"I will not tire you by relating day by day our sad life. Every one was the same, and took away by degrees every hope from me. As long as I dared to indulge any, I could not bear to leave the shore; but at last it became insupportable to me. I was worn out with gazing continually on that boundless horizon, and that moving crystal which had swallowed up my hopes. I pined for the verdure and shade of trees. Although I had contrived to make for my daughters little hats of a marine rush, they suffered much from the extreme heat,—the burning rays of a tropical sun.

"I decided at last to abandon that sandy shore; to penetrate, at all risks, into the country, in order to seek a shady and cooler abode, and to escape from the view of that sea which was so painful to me.

"I resolved not to quit the stream, which was so precious to us; for, having no vessel to contain water, I could not carry it with us. Sophia, who is naturally quick, formed, from a large leaf, a sort of goblet, which served us to drink from; and I filled my pockets with turtles' eggs as provisions for a few days.

"I then set off with my two children, after praying the God of all mercy to watch over us; and, taking leave of the vast tomb which held my husband and my son, I never lost sight of the stream. If any obstacle obliged me to turn a little way from it, I soon recovered my path. My eldest daughter, who was very strong and robust, followed me stoutly, as I took care not to walk too far without resting; but I was often compelled to carry my little Matilda on my shoulders. Both were delighted with the shade of the

woods, and were so amused with the delightful birds that inhabited them, and a pretty little sportive green monkey, that they became as playful as ever. They sang and prattled; but often asked me if father and Alfred would not soon return to see these pretty creatures, and if we were going to see them. These words rent my heart, and I thought it best then to tell them they would meet no more on earth, and that they were both gone to heaven, to that good God to whom they prayed morning and evening.

"Sophia was very thoughtful, and the tears ran down her cheeks; 'I will pray to God more than ever,' said she, 'that he may make them happy and send them back to us.'

"'Mother,' said Matilda, 'have we left the sea to go to heaven? Shall we soon be there? And shall we see beautiful birds like these?'.

"We walked on very slowly, making frequent rests, till night drew on, and it was necessary to find a place for repose. I fixed on a kind of thick grove, which I could only enter by stooping. It was formed of one tree, whose branches, reaching the ground, take root there, and soon produce other stems, which follow the same course, and become, in time, an almost impenetrable thicket. Here I found a place for us to lie down which appeared sheltered from wild beasts or savages, whom I equally dreaded. We had still some eggs, which we ate; but I saw with fear that the time approached when we must have more food, which I knew not where to find. I saw, indeed, some fruit on the trees, but did not know them, and feared to give them to my children, who wished to have them. I saw, also cocoa-nuts, but quite out of my reach; and, even if I could have got them, I knew not how to open them.

"The tree, under whose branches we had found protection, was, I conjectured, an American fig-tree; it bore a quantity of fruit, very small and red, and like the European fig I ventured to taste them, and found them inferior to ours,—insipid and soft, but I thought quite harmless. I remarked that the little green monkeys ate them readily, so I had no more fear; and allowed my children to regale themselves.

"I was much more afraid of wild beasts during the night. However, I had seen nothing worse than some little quadrupeds resembling the rabbit or squirrel, which came in numbers to shelter themselves during the night under our tree. The children wished to catch one, but I could not un-

dertake to increase my charge. We had a quiet night, and were early awaked by the songs of the birds.

"How delightful I was to have escaped the noise of the waves, and to feel the freshness of the woods, and the perfume of the flowers, with which my children made garlands, to decorate my head and their own! These ornaments, during the time of mourning and bereavement, affected me painfully and I was weak enough to forbid them this innocent pleasure. I tore away my garland, and threw it into the rivulet.

"Gather flowers," said I, "but do not dress yourself in them: they are no fitting ornaments for us; your father and Alfred cannot see them. They were silent and sad, and threw their garlands into the water, as I had done.

"We followed the stream, and passed two more nights under the trees. We had the good fortune to find more figs; but they did not satisfy us, and our eggs were exhausted. In my distress I almost decided to return to the shore, where we might at least meet with that nourishment. As I sat by the stream, reflecting mournfully on our situation, the children, who had been throwing stones in the water, cried out, 'Look, mother, what pretty fishes!"

"I saw, indeed, a quantity of small salmon-trout in the river; but how could I take them? I tried to seize them with my hands, but could not catch them. Necessity, however, is the mother of invention. I cut a number of branches with my knife, and wove them together to make a kind of hurdle, or crate, the breadth of the stream, which was very narrow just here. I made two of these; my daughters assisted me, and were soon very skilful.

"We then undressed ourselves, and took a bath, which refreshed us much. I placed one of my hurdles upright across the rivulet, and a second a little lower. The fishes, who remained between, attempted to pass, but the hurdles were woven too close. We watched for their attempting the other passage; many escaped us, but we captured sufficient for our dinner. We threw them out upon the grass, at a distance from the stream, so that they could not leap back. My daughters had taken more than I; but the sensible Sophia threw back those we did not require, to give them pleasure, she said; and Matilda did the same, to see them leap.

"We then removed our hurdles, dressed ourselves, and I began to consider how I should cook my fish; for I had no fire, and had never kindled one myself.

"I had, however, often seen M. Hirtel, who was a smoker, light his pipe by means of the flint and steel; they were in the precious morocco case, together with tinder and matches. I tried to strike a light, and after some difficulty, succeeded. I collected the fragments of the branches used for the hurdles: the children gathered some dry leaves; and I had soon a bright, lively fire, which I was delighted to see, notwithstanding the heat of the climate. I scraped the scales from the fish with my knife, washed them in the rivulet, and then placed them on the fire to broil. This was my apprentice ship in the art of cookery.

"I thought how useful it would be to give young ladies some knowledge of the useful arts; for who can foresee what they may need? Our European dinner delighted us as much as the bath and the fishing that had preceded it. I decided to fix our residence at the side of the rivulet, and beneath the fig-trees; my own objection being the fear of missing some passing vessel which might carry us back to Europe.

"But can you understand my feelings, when I confess to you that, although overcome by sorrow and desolation; having lost husband, son, and fortune; knowing that, in order to support myself and bring up my children, I must depend upon my friends; and to attain this, having to hazard again the dangers of the sea, the very thought of which made me shudder, I should prefer to remain where Providence had brought me, and live calmly without obligation to any one?

"I might certainly have some difficulty in procuring the means of supporting a life which was dear to me for the sake of my children; but even this was as an employment and an amusement. My children would early learn to bear privations; to content themselves with a simple and frugal life; and to labor for their own support. I might teach them all that I knew would be useful to them in future; and, above all, impress upon their young minds the great truths of our holy religion. By bringing this constantly before their unsophisticated understandings, I might hope they would draw from it the necessary virtues of resignation and contentment. I was only twenty-six years of age, and might hope, by God's mercy, to be spared to them some time; and, in the course of time, who knew what might happen? Besides, we were not so far from the sea but that I might visit it sometimes, if it were only to seek for turtles' eggs. I re-

mained then under our fig-tree at night, and by day on the borders of the stream."

"It was under a fig-tree, also," said my wife, "that I have spent four happy years of my life. Unknown to each other, our fates have been similar; but henceforward I hope we shall not be separated."

Madame Hirtel embraced her kind friend, and, observing that the evening was advanced, and that my wife, after much agitation, needed repose, we agreed to defer till next day the conclusion of the interesting narrative. My elder sons and myself followed the missionary to his hut, which resembled the king's *palace*, though it was smaller. It was constructed of bamboos, bound together, and the intervals filled with moss and clay; it was covered in the same way, and was tolerably solid. A mat in one corner, without any covering, formed his bed; but he brought out a bear skin, which he used in winter, and which he now spread on the ground for us. I had observed a similar one in the grotto, and he told me we should hear the history of these skins the next day, in the continuation of the story of Emily, or *Mimi*, as she was affectionately called by all. We retired to our couch, after a prayer from Mr. Willis, and, for the first time since my dear wife was taken from me, I slept in peace.

CHAPTER LV.

CONTINUATION OF THE NARRATIVE.

We went to the grotto early in the morning, and found our two invalids much improved. My wife had slept much better, and Mr. Willis found Jack's wound going on well. Madame *Mimi* told her daughters to prepare breakfast; they went out and soon returned with a native woman and a boy of four or five years old carrying newly-made rush baskets filled with all sorts of fruit—figs, guavas, strawberries, cocoa-nuts, and the bread-fruit.

"I must introduce you," said Emily, "to the rest of my family: this is Canda, the wife of your friend Parabery, and this is their son *Minou-minou*, whom I regard as my own. Your Elizabeth is already attached to them, and will bespeak your friendship for them. They will follow us to the Happy Island."

"Oh, if you knew," said Francis, "what a well behaved

boy Minou is! He can climb trees, run and leap, though he is less than I am. He must be my friend."

"And Canda," said Elizabeth, "shall be our assistant and friend."

She gave her hand to Canda; I did the same, and caressed the boy, who seemed delighted with me, and to my great surprise, spoke to me in very good German—the mother, too, knew several words of the language. They busied themselves with our breakfast, opened the cocoa-nuts, and poured the milk into the shells, after separating the kernel; they arranged the fruits on the trunk of a tree, which served for a table, and did great credit to the talent of their instructress.

"I should have liked to have offered you coffee," said Madame Hirtel, "which grows in this island, but having no utensils for roasting, grinding, or preparing it, it has been useless to me, and I have not even gathered it."

"Do you think, my dear, that it would grow in our island?" said my wife to me, in some anxiety.

I then recollected, for the first time, how fond my wife was of coffee, which, in Europe, had always been her favorite breakfast. There would certainly be in the ship some bags, which I might have brought away; but I had never thought of it, and my unselfish wife, not seeing it, had never named it, except once wishing we had some to plant in the garden. Now that there was a probability of obtaining it, she confessed that coffee and bread were the only luxuries she regretted. I promised to try and cultivate it in our island. Foreseeing, however, that it would probably not be of the best quality, I told her that she must not expect Mocha. But her long privation from this delicious beverage, had made her less fastidious, and she assured me it would be a treat to her.

After breakfast we begged Madame Hirtel to resume her interesting narrative. She continued:—

"After the reflections on my situation, of which I told you last night, I determined only to return to the sea-shore, when our food failed us in the woods. But I acquired other means of procuring it.

"Encouraged by the success of my fishing, I made a sort of net, from the filaments of the bark of a tree, and a plant resembling hemp. With this I succeeded in catching some birds: one, resembling our thrush, was very fat, and of delicious flavor. I had the greatest difficulty in overcoming my repugnance to taking away their life; nothing but the obligation of preserving our own could have reconciled us to it.

My children plucked them; I then spitted them on a slender branch and roasted them before the fire. I also found some nests of eggs, which I concluded were those of the wild ducks which frequented our stream.

"I made myself acquainted with all the fruits which the monkeys and paroquets eat, and which were out of my reach. I found a sort of acorn, which had the flavor of a nut. The children also discovered plenty of large strawberries, a delicious repast; and I found a quantity of honeycomb in the hollow of a tree, which I obtained by stupefying the bees with a smoking brand.

"I took care to mark down every day on the blank leaves of my pocket-book. I had now marked thirty days of my wandering life on the border of the river; for I never strayed beyond the sound of its waters. Still I kept continually advancing towards the interior of the island. I had yet met with nothing alarming, and the weather was most favorable; but we were not long to enjoy this comfort. The rainy season came on: and one night, to my great distress I heard it descend in torrents. We were no longer under our fig-tree, which would have sheltered us for a considerable time.

"The tree under which we now were, had tempted me by having several cavities between the roots, filled with soft moss, which formed natural couches; but the foliage was very thin, and we were soon drenched completely. I crept near my poor children to protect them a little, but in vain. Our little bed was soon filled with water, and we were compelled to leave it. Our clothes were so heavy with the rain, that we could scarcely stand; and the night was so dark, that we could see no path, and ran the risk of falling, or striking against some tree if we moved. My children wept, and I trembled for their health, and for my own, which was so necessary to them.

"This was one of the most terrible nights of my pilgrimage. My children and I knelt down, and I prayed to our Heavenly Father for strength to bear this trial, if it was His will to continue it. I felt consolation and strength from my prayers, and rose with courage and confidence; and, though the rain continued unabated, I waited with resignation the pleasure of the Almighty. I reconciled my children to our situation; and Sophia told me she had asked her father, who was near the gracious God, to entreat Him to send no more rain, but let the sun come back. I assured them God would not forget them. They began to become accustomed to the

rain; only Sophia begged they might take off their clothes, and then it would be like a bath in the brook. I consented to this, thinking they would be less liable to suffer than by wearing their wet garments.

"The day began to break, and I determined to walk on without stopping, in order to warm ourselves by the motion; and to try to find some cave, some hollow tree, or some tree with thick foliage, to shelter us the next night.

"I undressed the children, and made a bundle of their clothes, which I would have carried myself, but I found they would not be too heavy for them, and I judged it best to accustom them early to the difficulties, fatigue, and labor, which would be their lot; and to attend entirely on themselves. I therefore divided the clothes into two unequal bundles, proportioned to their strength, and, having made a knot in each, I passed a slender branch through it, and showed them how to carry it on their shoulders.

"When I saw them walking before me in this savage fashion, with their little white bodies exposed to the storm, I could not refrain from tears. I blamed myself for condemning them to such an existence, and thought of returning to the shore, where some vessel might rescue us; but we were now too far off to set about it. I continued to proceed, with much more difficulty than my children, who were clothed in nothing but their shoes and large hats. I carried the valuable box, in which I had placed the remains of our last night's supper,—an act of necessary prudence, as there was neither fishing nor hunting now.

"As the day advanced, the rain diminished, and even the sun appeared above the horizon.

"Look, my darlings," said I, "God has heard us, and sent his sun to to warm and cheer us. Let us thank him."

"Father has begged it of him!" said Matilda. "Oh, mamma! let us pray him to send Alfred back!"

"My poor little girl bitterly regretted the loss of her brother. Even now she can scarcely hear his name without tears. When the savages brought Francis to us, she at first took him for her brother. 'Oh, how you have grown in heaven!' cried she; and after she discovered he was not her brother, she often said to him, 'How I wish your name was Alfred!'

"Forgive me for dwelling so long on the details of my wretched journey, which was not without its comforts, in the pleasure I took in the development of my children's

minds, and in forming plans for their future education. Though anything relating to science, or the usual accomplishments, would be useless to them, I did not wish to bring them up like young savages; I hoped to be able to communicate much useful knowledge to them, and to give them juster ideas of this world and of that to come.

"As soon as the sun had dried them, I made them put on their dresses, and we continued our walk by the brook, till we arrived at the grove before this rock. I removed the branches to pass through it, and saw beyond them the entrance to this grotto. It was very low and narrow; but I could not help uttering a cry of joy, for this was the only sort of retreat that could securely shelter us.

"I was going to enter it without thought, not reflecting there might be in it some ferocious animal, when I was arrested by a plaintive cry more like that of a child than a wild beast. I advanced with more caution, and tried to find out what sort of an inhabitant the cave contained. It was indeed a human being!—an infant, whose age I could not discover; but it seemed too young to walk; and was, besides, tied up in leaves and moss, enclosed in a piece of bark, which was much torn and rent. The poor infant uttered the most piteous cries, and I did not hesitate a moment to enter the cave, and to take the innocent little creature in my arms; it ceased its cries as soon as it felt the warmth of my cheek; but it was evidently in want of food, and I had nothing to give it but some figs, of which I pressed the juice into its mouth. This seemed to satisfy it; and, rocking it in my arms, it soon went to sleep.

"I had then time to examine it, and to look round the cave. From the size and form of the face, I concluded that it might be older than I had at first thought; and I recollected to have read that the savages carried their children swaddled up in this way, even till they could walk. The complexion of the child was pale olive, which I have since discovered is the natural complexion of the natives, before the exposure to the sun gives them the bronze hue you have seen. The features were good, except that the lips were thicker and the mouth larger than those of Europeans.

"My two girls were charmed with it, and caressed it with great joy. I left them to rock it gently in its cradle of bark, till I went round this cave, which I intended for my palace, and which I have never quitted. You see it—the form is not changed; but, since Heaven has sent me a friend," looking at

the missionary, "it is adorned with furniture and utensils, which have completed my comforts. But to return.

"The grotto was spacious and irregular in form. In a hollow I found, with surprise, a sort of bed, carefully arranged with moss, dry leaves, and small twigs. I was alarmed. Was this grotto inhabited by men or by wild beasts? In either case it was dangerous to remain here. I encouraged a hope, however, that from the infant being here, the mother must be the inhabitant; and that, on her return, finding me nursing her child, she might be induced to share her asylum with us. I could not, however, reconcile this hope with the circumstance of the child being abandoned in this open cave.

"As I was considering whether I ought to remain, or leave the cave, I heard strange cries at a distance, mingled with the cries of my children, who came running to me for protection, bringing with them the young savage, who fortunately was only half awaked, and soon went to sleep again, sucking a fig. I laid him gently on the bed of leaves, and told my daughters to remain near him in a dark corner; then stepping cautiously, I ventured to look out to discover what was passing, without being seen.

"The noise approached nearer, to my great alarm, and I could perceive, through the trees, a crowd of men armed with long pointed lances, clubs and stones; they appeared furious, and the idea that they might enter the cave froze me with terror. I had an idea of taking the little native babe, and holding it in my arms, as my best shield. But this time my fears were groundless.

"The whole troop passed outside the wood, without even looking on the same side as the grotto. They appeared to follow some traces, for which they were looking on the ground. I heard their shouts for some time; but they died away, and I recovered from my fears. Still, the dread of meeting them overcame even hunger. I had nothing left in my box but some figs, which I kept for the infant, who was satisfied with them; and I told my daughters we must go to bed without supper. The sleeping infant amused them so much, that they readily consented to give up the figs. He awoke smiling, and they gave him the figs to suck. In the meantime, I prepared to release him from his bondage, to make him more comfortable; and I then saw that the outer covering of bark was torn by the teeth of some animal, and even the skin of the child slightly grazed. I ventured to

carry him to the brook, into which I plunged him two or three times, which seemed to give him great pleasure.

"I ran back to the cave, which is, you see, not more than twenty yards distant, and found Sophia and Matilda very much delighted at a treasure they had found under the dry leaves in a corner. This was a great quantity of fruits of various kinds, roots of some unknown plant, and a good supply of beautiful honey, on which the little gluttons were already feasting. They came directly to give some on their fingers to their little doll, as they called the babe.

"This discovery made me very thoughtful. Was it possible that we were in a bear's den? I had read that they sometimes carried off infants, and they were very fond of fruits and of honey, of which they generally had a hoard. I remarked, on the earth, and especially at the entrance, where the rain had made it soft, the impression of large paws, which left, me no doubt. The animal would certainly return to his den, and we were in the greatest danger.

"But where could we go? The sky, dark with clouds, threatened a return of the storm; and the troop of savages might still be wandering about the island. I had not courage, just as night set in, to depart with my children, nor could I leave the poor infant, who was now sleeping peacefully after his honey and figs. His two nurses soon followed his example. But for me there was no rest. The noise of the wind among the trees, and of the rain pattering on the leaves, —the murmur of the brook, the light bounds of the kangaroo,—all made my heart beat with fear and terror. I fancied it was the bear returning to devour us.

"I had cut and broken some branches to place before the entrance. But these were but a weak defence against a furious and probably famished animal; and if he did no other harm to my children, I was sure their terror at the sight of him would kill them.

"I paced backwards and forwards, from the entrance to the bed, in the darkness, envying the dear sleepers their calm and fearless rest; the dark-skinned baby slept soundly, nestled warmly between my daughters, till day broke at last without anything terrible occurring. Then my little people awoke, and cried out with hunger. We ate of the fruits and honey brought us by our unknown friend, feeding also our little charge, to whom my daughters gave the pet name of *Minou*, which he still keeps.

"I busied myself with his *toilette*. There was no need to

go to the brook for a bath, for the rain came down incessantly. I then folded Matilda's apron round him, which pleased her greatly. The rain ceased for a-while, and they set off for flowers to amuse him. They were scarcely gone, when I heard the cry of the savages again; but this time they seemed rather shouts of joy and triumph. They sung and chanted a sort of chorus; but were still at such a distance that I had time to recall my daughters, and withdrew them out of sight. I took *Minou* with me as a mediator, and placed myself in the angle of the rock, where I could see without being seen.

"They passed, as before, beyond the wood, armed, and two of them bore, at the end of their lances, something very large and dark, which I could not distinguish, but thought might be some wild beast they had destroyed; afterwards, I flattered myself it might be the bear, whose return I so greatly dreaded. Following the train was a woman, naked, and her hair hanging down, uttering loud cries, and tearing her face and breast. No one attempted to soothe her; but occasionally one of the bearers of the black mass pointed it out to her. She became furious, threw herself upon it, and tried to tear it with teeth and nails. I was quite overcome with horror and pity.

"That woman, my friends, was Canda, whom you have just seen. Canda, usually so mild and gentle, was rendered frantic by the loss of her child,—her first-born,—whom she believed was devoured by the bear. Parabery, her husband, tried to console her, but was himself in great sorrow. These bears, as I have since learnt, for there were two of them, had come from a mountain, at the foot of which was Parabery's hut. They had only this son, and Canda, according to the custom of the country, tying it in a piece of bark, carried it on her back.

"One morning, after having bathed him in the stream, which has its source near their abode, she placed him on the turf a few moments, while she was employed in some household duties. She soon heard his cries, mingled with a sort of growl; she ran to the spot, and saw a frightful beast holding her child in its mouth running off with it. It was then more than twenty yards distant. Her cries brought her husband; she pointed to the horrible animal and darted after it, determined to save her child or perish. Her husband only stopped to seize his javelin, and followed her, but did not overtake her till fatigue and the heat of the day made her

fall, almost senseless, on the ground. Stopping for a moment to raise and encourage her, he lost sight of the bear, and could not recover the track.

"All the night,—that dreadful night of rain, when I was weeping and murmuring, thinking myself the most unfortunate of women,—was Canda exposed, without clothes, to that frightful storm, hopelessly seeking her only child, not even feeling that it did rain.

"Parabery, not less afflicted, but more composed, went to relate his misfortune to his neighbors, who arming themselves set out, with Parabery at their head, following the track of the animal over the wet ground. They discovered it next morning with another bear, so busily devouring a swarm of bees and honey, that the savages were able to draw near them. Parabery pierced one with his spear, and despatched him with a blow of his club; one of his comrades killed the other; and Parabery tasted the truly savage joy of vengeance.

"But the poor mother could not be so comforted. After wandering through the rain all night she reached the party as they were skinning the bears and dividing the flesh. Parabery only asked and obtained the skins, to recompense him for the loss of his son. They returned home in triumph, Canda following them with bitter cries, tearing her face with a shark's tooth.

From observation of these circumstances, I concluded that Canda must be the mother of my little *protégé*. My heart sympathized with her, and I even made some steps forward to restore him; but the sight of the savage crowd with their tattooed bodies, filled me with such terror that I retreated involuntarily to the grotto, where my children, alarmed by the noise, were hiding themselves.

"Why do the people cry out so?" said Sophia, "they frighten me. Don't let them come here, mother, or they will carry Minou away."

"Certainly," said I; "and I should have no right to forbid them. I think they are his friends, who are distracted at losing him; I wish I could restore him to them."

"Oh, no, mother!" said Matilda. "Pray don't give him back; we like him so much and we will be his little mammas, He will be far happier with us than with those ugly savages who tied him up like a parcel in the bark, with the moss which pricked him so much. He is much more comfortable in my apron. How he moves his legs as if he wanted to

walk! Sophia and I will teach him. Do let us keep him, Mimi."

"Even if I had decided, it was now too late; the savages had passed on to some distance. I, however, explained to Matilda the beauty of the divine precept, 'Do unto others as you would they should do unto you;' asking how she would like to be detained by the savages, and what, then, would be the suffering of her own mother.

"She was thoughtful for a moment, and then embracing Minou and me, 'you are right mamma Mimi; but, if she loves her baby, let her come and seek him,' said the little rebel.

"In the meantime, Sophia had been out, and returned with some brilliant flowers, fresh after the rain, with which they made garlands to dress up the infant. 'Oh! if his mother saw him, she would be glad to let us have him,' said Matilda. She then explained to her sister who this mother was, and Sophia shed tears to think of the sorrow of the poor mother.

"But how do you know, mother, that she was Minou's mother!" demanded she. This question proved that her judgment was forming, and I took the opportunity of teaching her what information one may derive from observation. She understood me very well; and when I told her on what I had founded my opinion, she trembled to think that he had been brought here by a bear, and asked me if the bear would have eaten him.

"I cannot answer for it," said I, "If it had been pressed by hunger; they tell us that the bear does no harm to man unless attacked, and is especially fond of children. But, notwithstanding this, I should not like to trust it. At all events the poor babe would have died, if we had not found him."

"Poor babe, he shall not die of hunger now," said she.

"Let us give him some figs; but these are not good; we must go and seek some more."

"The rain having ceased, I consented, passing through the grove, where there are no fig-trees, to search farther. My daughters had fed the child with honey and water; it appeared quite reconciled to us, and had ceased to cry. I judged it might be about eight months old. We soon found some trees covered with the violet-colored figs. Whilst I gathered them, the girls made a pretty bed of moss, adorned with flowers for their little favorite, and fed him with the fresh fruit, which he enjoyed much; and with their fair hair

and rosy faces, and the little native between them, with his arch, dark countenance, they formed a charming picture, which affected me greatly."

CHAPTER LVI.

THE NARRATIVE CONCLUDED.

"We had been more than an hour under the tree, when I heard cries again; but this time I was not alarmed, for I distinguished the voice of the disconsolate mother, and I knew that I could comfort her. Her grief brought her back to the spot where she thought her child had been devoured. She wished, as she afterward told us when we could understand her, to search for some remains of him, his hair, his bones, or even a piece of the bark that bound him; and here he was, full of life and health. She advanced slowly, sobbing, and her eyes turned to the ground. She was so absorbed in her search that she did not see us when we were but twenty yards from her. Suddenly, Sophia darted like an arrow to her, took her hand, and said, 'Come, Minou is here.'

"Canda neither knew what she saw, nor what she heard; she took my daughter for something supernatural, and made no resistance, but followed her to the fig tree. Even then she did not recognize the little creature, released from his bonds, half clothed, covered with flowers, and surrounded by three divinities, for she took us for such, and wished to prostrate herself before us. She was still more convinced of it when I took up her son, and placed him in her arms; she recognized him, and the poor little infant held out his arms to her.

"I can never express to you the transport of the mother; she screamed, clasped her child till he was half-suffocated, rapidly repeating words which we could not understand, wept, laughed, and was in a delirium of delight that terrified Minou. He began to cry, and held out his arms to Sophia, who, as well as Matilda, were weeping at the sight. Canda looked at them with astonishment. She soothed the child, and put him to her breast, which he rejected at first but finally seized it, and his mother was happy.

"I took the opportunity to try and make her comprehend that the great animal brought him here; that we had found

him and taken care of him; and I made signs for her to follow me, which she did without hesitation, till we reached the grotto, when without entering, she fled away with her infant with such rapidity that it was impossible to overtake her, and was soon out of sight.

"I had some difficulty in consoling my daughters for the loss of Minou. They thought they should see him no more, and that his mother was very ungrateful to carry him off, without even letting them take leave of him. They were still weeping and complaining, when we saw the objects of our anxiety approaching; but Canda was now accompanied by a man, who was carrying the child. They entered the grotto, and prostrated themselves before us.

You know Parabery; his countenance pleased and tranquilized us. As a relation of the king, he was distinguished by wearing a short tunic of leaves; his body was tattooed and stained with various colors; but not his face, which expressed kindness and gratitude, united with great intelligence. He comprehended most of my signs. I did not succeed so well in understanding him; but saw he meant kindly. In the meantime, my daughters had a more intelligible conversation with Canda and Minou; they half devoured the latter with caresses, fed him with figs and honey, and amused him so much that he would scarcely leave them. Canda was not jealous of this preference, but seemed delighted with it. She, in her turn caressed my daughters, admired their glossy hair and fair skin, and pointed them out to her husband; she repeated Minou after them, but always added another Minou, and appeared to think this name beautiful.

"After some words with Parabery, she placed Minou-Minou in Sophia's arms, and they both departed, making signs that they would return, but we did not see them for some time after. Sophia and Matilda had their full enjoyment of their favorite; they wished to teach him to walk and to speak, and they assured me he was making great progress.

"They were beginning to hope his parents had left him entirely, when they came in sight, Parabery bending under the weight of two bear-skins, and a beautiful piece of matting to close the entrance to my grotto; Canda carried a basket on her head filled with fine fruit; the cocoa, the bread-fruit (which they call *rima*), pineapples, figs, and finally a piece of bear's flesh, roasted at the fire, which I did not like; but I enjoyed the fruits and the milk of the cocoa-nuts,

of which Minou-Minou had a good share. They spread the bear-skins in the midst of the grotto; Parabery, Canda, and the infant between them, took possession of one without ceremony, and motioned to us to make our bed of the other. But these skins had an intolerable smell, the bears having only been killed the evening before. I made them comprehend this, and Parabery immediately carried them off and placed them in the brook, secured by stones. He brought us in exchange a heap of moss and leaves, on which we slept very well.

"From this moment we became one family. Canda remained with us, and repaid to my daughters all the care and affection they bestowed on Minou-Minou. There never was a child had more indulgence; but he deserved it for his quickness and docility.

"At the end of a few months he began to lisp a few words of German, as well as his mother, of whom I was the teacher, and who made rapid progress. Parabery was very little with us but he undertook to be our purveyor and furnished us abundantly with everything necessary for our subsistence.

"Canda taught my daughters to make beautiful baskets, —some of a flat form served for our plates and dishes. Parabery made us knives from sharp stones. My daughters, in return, taught Canda to sew. At the time of our shipwreck we had, each of us, in her pocket, a morocco housewife, with a store of needles and thread. By means of these we had mended our linen, and we now made dresses of palm leaves. The bear-skins, washed in the stream, and thoroughly dried in the burning sun, have been very useful to us in the cold and rainy season.

"Now that we had guides, we made, in the fine season, excursions to different parts of the island. *Minou-minou* soon learned to walk, and being strong, like all these islanders, would always accompany us. We went one day to the sea-shore. I shuddered at the sight, and Canda, who knew that my husband and child had perished in the sea, wept with me. We now spoke each each other's language well enough to converse. She told me that a *black friend* (Emily bowed to Mr. Willis) had arrived in a neighboring island to announce to them that there was a Being, almighty and all merciful, who lived in heaven and heard all they said. Her comprehension of this truth was very confused, and I endeavored to make it more clear and positive.

"I see very well," said she, "that you know him. It is to

Him that you speak every morning and evening, kneeling as we do before our king Baraourou?"

"Yes, Canda," said I, "it is before Him, who is the King of kings, who gave us our life, who preserves it, and bestows on us all good, who promises us more when this life is past."

"Was it he who charged you to take care of Minou-minou? and to restore him to me?" asked she.

"Yes Canda; all that you or I do that is good, is put into our hearts by Him.

"I thus tried to prepare the simple mind of Canda for the great truths that Mr. Willis was to teach her."

"You left me little to do," said Mr. Willis. "I found Parabery and Canda prepared to believe, with sincere faith, the holy religion I came to teach—the God of the white people was the only one they adored. I knew Parabery, he came to hunt seals on the island where I was established, and I was struck by his appearance. What was my astonishment to find, that, when I spoke to him of the one true God, he was no stranger to the subject. He had even some idea of a Saviour, and of future rewards and punishments.

"It was the white lady," said he, "who taught me this; she teaches Canda and Minou-Minou, whose life she saved, and whom she is bringing up to be good like herself."

"I had a great desire," continued Mr. Willis, "to become acquainted with my powerful assistant in the great work of my mission. I told Parabery of this, who offered to bring me here in his canoe. I came, and found, in a miserable cave, or rather in a bear's den, all the virtues of mature age, united in the charms of youth; a resigned and pious mother, bringing up her children, as women should be brought up, in simplicity, forbearance, and love of industry; teaching them, as the best of knowledge, to love God with all their hearts, and their neighbor as themselves.

"Under the inspection of their mother, they were educating the son of Parabery. This child, then four years and a half old, spoke German well, and knew his alphabet, which Madame Hirtel traced on the floor of the grotto. In this way she taught her daughters to read; they taught Minou-Minou, who in his turn, teaches his parents. Parabery often brings his friends to the grotto, and Madame Hirtel, having acquired their language, casts into their hearts the good seed, which I venture to hope will not be unfruitful.

"Finding these people in such a good state, and wishing to enjoy the society of a family, like myself, banished to a

remote region, I decided to take up my abode in this island.

"Parabery soon built me a hut in the neighborhood of the grotto; Madame Hirtel compelled me to take one of her bear skins. I have by degrees formed my establishment, dividing with my worthy neighbor the useful articles I brought from Europe, and we lived a tranquil and happy life.

"And now comes the time that brought about our meeting Some of our islanders in a fishing expedition, were driven by the wind on your island. At the entrance of a large bay, they found a small canoe of bark carefully moored to a tree.

"Either their innate propensity for theft, or the notion that it had no owner, prevailed over them, and they brought it away. I was informed of this, and was curious to see it. I recognized at once that it was made by Europeans; the careful finish, the neat form, the oars, rudder, mast and triangular sail, all showed that it had not been made by savages. The seats of the rowers were made of planks, and were painted; and what further convinced me was, that I found in it a capital gun, loaded, and a horn of powder in a hole under one of the seats.

"I then made particular inquiries about the island from whence they had brought the canoe; and all their answers confirmed my idea that it must be inhabited by an European, from whom they had perhaps taken his only means of leaving it.

"Restless about this fancy, I tried to persuade them to return and discover if the island was inhabited. I could not prevail on them to return the canoe, but seeing me much agitated, they resolved secretly to produce me a great pleasure as they thought, by returning to the island, and bringing away any one with whom they could meet, whether he would or not. Parabery, always the leader in perilous enterprises, and who was so attached to me, would not be left out in one which was to produce me so much pleasure.

"They set out, and you know the result of their expedition. I leave it to your wife to tell you how she was brought away, and pass on to the time of their arrival.

"My people brought them to me in triumph, and were vexed that they only found one woman and a child, whom I might give to the white lady. This I did promptly.

"Your wife was ill and distressed, and I carried her immediately to the grotto. There she found a companion who

welcomed her with joy. Francis replaced her own lost Alfred and the two good mothers were soon intimate friends.

"But, notwithstanding this solace, your Elizabeth was inconsolable at the separation from her husband and children, and terrified at the danger to which you would expose yourself in searching for her. We were even afraid she would lose her reason when the king came to take away Francis. He had seen him on his arrival, and was much taken with his appearance. He came again to see him, and resolved to adopt him as his son.

"You know what passed on this subject; and now you are once more united to all those who are dear to you.

"Bless God, brother, who knows how to produce good from what we think evil, and acknowledge the wisdom of his ways. You must return all together to your island. I am too much interested in the happiness of Emily to wish to detain her; and if God permits me when my missions are completed, I will come to end my days with you, and to bless your rising colony."

I suppress all our reflections on this interesting history, and our gratitude for the termination of our trials, and hasten to the recital, which, at my particular entreaty, my wife proceeded to give us.

CHAPTER LVII.

EMBARCATION FOR AND ARRIVAL AT THE ISLAND, AND RETURN TO TENT-HOUSE.

"My story," she began, "will not be long. I might make it in two words,—*you have lost me, and you have found me.* I have every reason to thank heaven for a circumstance, which has proved to me how dear I am to you, and has given me the happiness of gaining a friend and two dear daughters. Can one complain of an event which has produced such consequences, even though it was attended with some violence. But I ought to do the savages justice,—this violence was as gentle as it could be. I need only tell you Parabery was there, to convince you I was well treated, and it was solely the sorrow of being parted from you that affected my health. I shall be well now, and, as soon as Jack can walk, I shall be ready to embark for our happy island. I will now tell you how I was brought away.

When you and our three sons left, to make the tour of the island, I was very comfortable. You had told me you might return late, or probably not till next day, and when the evening passed away without seeing you, I was not uneasy. Francis was always with me; we went together to water the garden, and rested in the grotto Ernestine; then I returned to the house, took my wheel, and placed myself in my favorite colonnade, where I should be the first to see you return. Francis, seeing me at work, asked if he might go as far as the bridge to meet you; to which I readily consented. He set out, and I was sitting, thinking of the pleasure I should have in seeing you again, and hearing you relate your voyage, when I saw Francis running, crying out, 'Mother! mother! there is a canoe on the sea; I know it is ours; it is full of men, perhaps savages.'

"Silly little fellow!" said I, "it is your father and brothers, if they are in the canoe, there can be no doubt of it. Your father told me he would bring it, and that they would return by water; I had forgotten this when I let you go. Now you can go and meet them on the shore; give me your arm, and I will go too;" and we set off very joyfully to meet our captors.

"I soon, alas! saw my error; it was indeed our canoe, but instead of my dear ones, there were in it six half-naked savages, with terrible countenances, who landed and surrounded us.

"My blood froze with fright, and, if I had wished to flee I was unable. I fell on the shore, nearly insensible; still, I heard the cries of my dear Francis, who clung to me, and held me with all his strength. At last my senses quite failed me, and I only recovered to find myself lying at the bottom of the canoe. My son, weeping over me, was trying to recover me, assisted by one of the savages, of less repulsive appearance than his companions, and who seemed the chief; this was Parabery. He made me swallow a few drops of a detestable fermented liquor, which, however restored me. I felt, as I recovered, the extent of my disaster, and your grief, my dears, when you should find me missing. I should have been wholly disconsolate, but that Francis was left to me, and he was continually praying me to live for his sake. I received some comfort from a vague notion that, as this was our canoe, the savages had already carried you off, and were taking us to you.

"I was confirmed in this hope, when I saw that the savages

instead of making to sea, continued to coast the island, till they came to the Great Bay. I had then no doubt but that we should meet with you; but this hope was soon destroyed. Two or three more of the savages were waiting there on the shore; they spoke to their friends in the canoe; and I understood, from their gestures, that they were saying they could not find anybody there.

"I have since learned from Canda, that part of them landed at the Great Bay, with instructions to search that side of the island for inhabitants, while the rest proceeded with the canoe to examine the other side, and had succeeded but too well. The night came on, and they were anxious to return, which, doubtless, prevented them from pillaging our house. I believe, moreover, that none of them could have reached Tent-House, defended by our strong palisade, and hidden by the rocks amidst which it is built; and the other party, finding us on the shore, would not penetrate further.

"When all had entered the canoe, they pushed off by the light of the stars into the open sea. I think I must have sunk under my sorrow but for Francis, and, I must confess it, my dear dog Flora, who had never left me. Francis told me that she had tried to defend me, and flew at the savages; but one of them took my apron, tore it, and tied it over her mouth like a muzzle, bound her legs, and threw her into the canoe, where the poor creature lay at my feet moaning piteously. She arrived with us in this island, but I have not seen her since. I have often inquired of Parabery, but he could not tell me what had become of her.

"But I know," said Fritz, "and have seen her. We brought Turk with us, and the savages had carried Flora to that desert part of the island from whence Jack was carried off; so the two dogs met. When I had the misfortune to wound Jack, I quite forgot them; they were rambling off, in chase of kangaroos; we left them, and no doubt they are there still. But we must not abandon the poor beasts. If my father will permit me, I will go and seek them in Parabery's canoe.

As we were obliged to wait a few days for Jack's recovery, I consented on condition that Parabery accompanied them, and the next day was fixed for the expedition. Ernest begged to be of the party, that he might see the beautiful trees and flowers which they had described.

I then requested the narration might be continued, which had been interrupted by the episode of the two dogs. Francis resumed where his mother had left off.

"We had a favorable passage—the sea was so calm, and the boat went so smoothly, that both mother and I went to sleep. You must have come much longer round than necessary, father, as your voyage lasted three days, and we arrived here the day after our departure. Mother was then awake, and wept incessantly, believing she would never more see you nor my brothers. Parabery seemed very sorry for, and tried to console her; at last he addressed to her two or three words of German, pointing to heaven. His words were very plain—'*Almighty God; good;*' and then, '*black friend*,' and '*white lady*,' adding the words '*Canda, bear*, and *Minou-Minou*.'

'We did not understand what he meant; but he seemed so pleased in speaking these words, that we could not but be pleased too; and to hear him name God in German gave us confidence, though we could not comprehend where or how he had learnt the words. Perhaps,' said mother 'he has seen your father and brothers.' I thought so too; still, it appeared strange that, in so short a time, he could acquire and remember these words.

"However it might be, mother was delighted to have him near her, and taught him to pronounce the words *father, mother* and *son*, which did not seem strange to him, and he soon knew them. She pointed to me and to herself, as she pronounced the words, and he readily comprehended them, and said to us with bursts of laughter, showing his large ivory teeth, '*Canda, mother; Minou-minou, son; Parabery, father; white lady, mother.*' Mother thought he referred to her, but it was to Madame Emily. He tried to pronounce this name and two others, but could not succeed; at last, he said, '*girls girls*,' and almost convinced us he must know some Europeans, which was a great comfort to us.

"When I saw mother more composed, I took out my flageolet to amuse her, and I played the air to Ernest's verses. This made her weep again very much, and she begged me to desist; the savages, however, wished me to continue, and I did not know whom to obey. I changed the air, playing the merriest I knew. They were in ecstacies; they took me in their arms one after the other, saying, '*Baraourou, Baraourou.*' I repeated the word after them, and they were still more delighted. But mother was so uneasy to see me in their arms, that I broke from them, and returned to her.

"At last we landed. They carried mother, who was too weak to walk. About a hundred yards from the shore, we

saw a large building of wood and reeds, before which there was a crowd of savages. One who was very tall came to receive us. He was dressed in a short tunic, much ornamented, and wore a necklace of pierced shells. He was a little disfigured by a white bone passed through his nostrils. But you saw him, father, when he wanted to adopt me; it was Baraourou, the king of the island. I was presented to him, and he was pleased with me, touched the end of my nose with his, and admired my hair very much.

"My conductors ordered me to play on the flageolet. I played some lively German airs which made them dance and leap, till the king fell down with fatigue, and made a sign for me to desist. He then spoke for some time to the savages, who stood in a circle round him. He looked at my mother, who was seated in a corner, near her protector Parabery. He called the latter, who obliged mother to rise, and presented her to the king. Baraourou looked only at the red and yellow India handkerchief, which she wore on her head; he took it off, very unceremoniously, and put it on his own head, saying *miti*, which means beautiful. He then made us re-embark with him, amusing himself with me and my flageolet, which he attempted to play on by blowing through his nose, but did not succeed. After turning round a point which seemed to divide the island into two, we landed on a sandy beach. Parabery and another savage proceeded to the interior, carrying my mother, and we followed.

"We arrived at a hut similar to the king's, but not so large. There we were received by Mr. Willis, whom we judged to be the *black friend*, and from that time we had no more fears. He took us under his protection, first speaking to the king and Parabery in their own language. He then addressed mother, in German, mixed with a few English words which we understood very well. He knew nothing of you and my brothers; but, from what mother told him, he promised to have you sought for, and brought as soon as possible to the island.

"In the meantime, he offered to lead us to a friend who would take care of us, and nurse my poor mother, who looked very ill. She was obliged to be carried to the grotto; but, after that, her cares were over, and her pleasures without alloy; for *black friend* had promised to seek you.

"The *white lady* received us like old friends, and Sophia and Matilda took me at first for their own brother, and still love me as if I were so. We only wished for you all to be here.

"Madame Mimi made mother lie down on the bear-skin, and prepared a pleasant beverage from the milk of the cocoa-nut. Sophia and Matilda took me to gather strawberries, and figs, and beautiful flowers; and we caught fish in the brook between two osier hurdles. We amused ourselves very well with Minou-minou, while Canda and Madame Emily amused mother.

"The king came the next day to see his little favorite. He wished me to go with him to another part of the island, where he often went to hunt; but I would not leave mother and my few friends. I was wrong, father; for you were there, and my brothers; it was there Jack was wounded and brought away. I might have prevented all that, and you would then have returned to us. How sorry I have been for my obstinacy! It was I, more than Fritz, who was the cause of his wound.

"Baraourou returned in the evening to the grotto. And think, father, of our surprise, our delight and our distress, when he brought us poor Jack, wounded, and in great pain, but still all joy at finding us again! The king told Mr. Willis he was sure Jack was my brother, and he made us a present of him, adding, that he gave him in exchange for mother's handkerchief.

"Mother thanked him earnestly, and placed Jack beside her. From him she learned all you had done to discover us. He informed Mr. Willis where he had left you, and he promised to seek and bring you to us. He then examined the wound, which Jack wished him to think he had himself caused with Fritz's gun; but this was not probable, as the ball had entered behind, and lodged in the shoulder. Mr. Willis extracted it with some difficulty, and poor Jack suffered a good deal; but all is now going on well. What a large party we shall be, father, when we are all settled in our island; Sophia and Matilda, Minou-minou, Canda, Parabery, you, father, and two mothers, and Mr. Willis!"

My wife smiled as the little orator concluded. Mr. Willis then dressed Jack's wound, and thought he might be removed in five or six days.

"Now my dear Jack," said I, "it is your turn to relate your history. Your brother left off where you were entertaining the savages with your buffooneries; and certainly they were never better introduced. But how did they suddenly think of carrying you away?"

"Parabery told me," said Jack, "that they were struck

with my resemblance to Francis, as soon as I took my flageolet. After I had played a minute or two, the savage who wore mother's handkerchief, whom I now know to be the king, interrupted me by crying out, and clapping his hands. He spoke earnestly to the others, pointing to my face and to my flageolet, which he had taken; he looked also at my jacket of blue cotton, which one of them had tied round his shoulders like a mantle; and doubtless he then gave orders for me to be seized and carried to the canoe.

"They seized upon me; I screamed like a madman, kicked them, and scratched them; but what could I do against seven or eight great savages? They tied my legs together, and my hands behind me, and carried me like a parcel. I could then do nothing but cry out for Fritz; and the knight of the gun came rather too soon. In attempting to defend me, some way or other, off went his gun, and the ball took up its abode in my shoulder. I can assure you, an unpleasant visitor is that same ball; but here he is, the scoundrel. Father Willis pulled him out of the same door as that by which he went in; and, since his departure all goes on well.

"Now for my story. When poor Fritz saw that I was wounded, he fell down as if he had been shot at the same time. The savages, thinking he was dead, took away his gun and carried me into the canoe. I was in despair more for the death of my brother than from my wound, which I almost forgot, and was wishing they would throw me into the sea, when I saw Fritz running at full speed towards the shore; but we pushed off, and I could only call out some words of consolation.

"The savages were very kind to me, and one of them held me up on the outrigger; they washed my wound with sea water, sucked it, tore my pocket-handkerchief to make a bandage, and, as soon as we landed, squeezed the juice of some herb into it. We sailed very quickly, and passed the place where we had landed in the morning. I knew it again, and could see Ernest standing on a sandbank; he was watching us, and I held out my arms to him. I thought I also saw you, father, and heard you call; but the savages yelled, and though I cried with all my strength, it was in vain. I little thought they were taking me to mother.

"As soon as we had disembarked, they brought me to this grotto; and I thought I must have died of surprise and joy when I was met by mother and Francis, and then by Sophia,

Matilda, Madame Emily and Mr. Willis, who is a second father to me. This is the end of my story. And a very pretty end it is, that brings us all together. What matters it to have had a little vexation for all this pleasure? I owe it all to you, Fritz. If you had let me sink to the bottom of the sea, instead of dragging me out by the hair, I should not have been here so happy as I am. I am obliged to the gun, too; thanks to it, I was the first to reach mother, and see our new friends."

The next day Fritz and Ernest set out on their expedition with Parabery, in his canoe, to seek our two valued dogs. The good islander carried his canoe on his back to the shore. I saw them set off, but not without some dread, in such a frail bark, into which the water leaked through every seam. But my boys could swim well; and the kind, skilful and bold Parabery undertook to answer for their safety. I therefore recommended them to God, and returned to the grotto, to tranquilize my wife's fears. Jack was inconsolable that he could not form one of the party; but Sophia scolded him for wishing to leave them, to go upon the sea, which had swallowed up poor Alfred.

In the evening we had the pleasure of seeing our brave dogs enter the grotto; they leaped on us in a way that terrified our poor little girls at first, who took them for bears; but they were soon reconciled to them, when they saw them fawn round us, lick our hands, and pass from one to the other to be caressed. My sons had had no difficulty in finding them; they had run to them at the first call, and seemed delighted to see their masters again.

The poor animals had subsisted on the remains of the kangaroos, but apparently had met with no fresh water; for they seemed dying with thirst, and rushed to the brook as soon as they discovered it, and returned again and again. Then they followed us to the hut of the good missionary, who had been engaged all day in visiting the dwellings of the natives, and teaching them the truths of religion. I had accompanied him; but, from ignorance of the language could not aid him. I was, however, delighted with the simple and earnest manner in which he spoke, and the eagerness with which they heard him. He finished by a prayer, kneeling, and they all imitated him, lifting up their hands and eyes to heaven. He told me he was trying to make them celebrate the Sunday. He assembled them in his tent, which he wished to make a temple for the worship of the true God.

He intended to consecrate it for this purpose, and to live in the grotto after our departure.

The day arrived at last. Jack's shoulder was nearly healed, and my wife, along with her happiness, recovered her strength. The pinnace had been so well guarded by Parabery and his friends that it had suffered no injury. I distributed among the islanders everything I had that could please them, and made Parabery invite them to come and see us in our island, requesting we might live on friendly terms. Mr. Willis wished much to see it, and to complete our happiness, he promised to accompany and spend some days with us: and Parabery said he would take him back when he wished it.

We embarked, then, after taking leave of Baraourou, who was very liberal in his presents, giving us, besides fruits of every kind, a whole hog roasted, which was excellent.

We were fourteen in number; sixteen, reckoning the two dogs. The missionary accompanied us, and a young islander whom Parabery had procured to be his servant, as he was too old and too much occupied with his mission to attend to his own wants. This youth was of good disposition and much attached to him. Parabery took him to assist in rowing when he returned.

Emily could not but feel rather affected at leaving the grotto, where she had passed four tranquil if not happy years, fulfilling the duties of a mother. Neither could she avoid a painful sensation when she once more saw the sea that had been so fatal to her husband and son. She could scarcely subdue the fear she had of trusting all she had left to that treacherous element. She held her daughters in her arms, and prayed for the protection of Heaven.

Mr. Willis and I spoke to her of the goodness of God, and pointed out to her the calmness of the water, the security of the pinnace, and the favorable state of the wind. My wife described to her our establishment, and promised her a far more beautiful grotto than the one she had left; and at last she became more reconciled.

After seven or eight hours' voyage we arrived at Cape Disappointment, and we agreed the bay should henceforth be called the *Bay of the Happy Return.*

The distance to Tent-House from hence was much too great for the ladies and children to go on foot. My intention was to take them by water to the other end of the island near our house; but my elder sons had begged to be

landed at the bay, to seek their live stock, and take them home. I left them there with Parabery. Jack recommended his buffalo to them, and Francis his bull, and all were found. We coasted the island, arrived at Safety Bay, and were soon at Tent-House, where we found all, as we had left it, in good condition.

Notwithstanding the description my wife had given them, our new guests found our establishment far beyond their expectations. With what delight Jack and Francis ran up and down the colonnade with their young friends! What stories they had to tell of all the surprises they had prepared for their mother! They showed them *Fritzia*, *Jackia* and *Franciade*, and gave their friends water from their beautiful fountain. Absence seemed to have improved everything; and I confess I had some difficulty to refrain from demonstrating my joy as wildly as my children.

Minou-Minou, Parabery and Canda, were lost in admiration, calling out continually *miti!* beautiful!

My wife was busied in arranging a temporary lodging for our guests. The work-room was given up to Mr. Willis; my wife and Madame Emily had our apartment, the two little girls being with them, to whom the hammocks of the elder boys were appropriated. Canda, who knew nothing about beds, was wonderfully comfortable on the carpet. Fritz, Ernest and the two natives, stowed themselves wherever they wished, in the colonnade, or in the kitchen; all was alike to them. I slept on moss and cotton in Mr. Willis's room, with my two younger sons. Every one was content, waiting till our ulterior arrangements were completed.

CONCLUSION.

I must conclude my journal here. We can scarcely be more happy than we are, and I feel no cares about my children. Fritz is so fond of the chase and of mechanics, and Ernest of study, that they will not wish to marry; but I please myself by hoping at some time to see my dear Jack and Francis happily united to Sophia and Matilda. What remains for me to tell. The details of happiness, however sweet in enjoyment, are often tedious in recital.

I will only add, that after passing a few days with us, Mr. Willis returned to his charge, promising to visit us, and eventually to join us. The Grotto Ernestine, fitted up by

Fritz and Parabery, made a pretty abode for Madame Hirtel and her daughters, and the two islanders. Minou-minou did not leave his young mammas, and was very useful to them.

I must state, also, that my son Ernest, without abandoning the study of natural history, applied himself to astronomy, and mounted the large telescope belonging to the ship. He acquired considerable knowledge of this sublime science, which his mother, however, considered somewhat useless. The course of the other planets did not interest her, so long as all went on well in that which she inhabited; and nothing now was wanting to her happiness, surrounded as she was by friends.

The following year we had a visit from a Russian vessel, the *Neva*, commanded by Captain Krusenstern, a countryman and distant relation of mine. The celebrated Horner, of Zurich, accompanied him as astronomer. Having read the first part of our journal, sent into Europe by Captain Johnson, he had come purposely to see us. Delighted with our establishment, he did not advise us to quit it.

Captain Krusenstern invited us to take a passage in his vessel. We declined his offer; but my wife, though she renounced her country forever, was glad of the opportunity of making inquiries about her relations and friends. As she had concluded, her good mother had died some years before, blessing her absent children. My wife shed some tears, but was consoled by the certainty of her mother's eternal felicity and the hope of their meeting in futurity.

One of her brothers was also dead; he had left a daughter, to whom my wife had always been attached, though she was very young when we left. Henrietta Bodmer was now sixteen, and Mr. Horner assured us, a most amiable girl. My wife wished very much to have her with us.

Ernest would not leave Mr. Horner a moment, he was so delighted to meet with one so eminently skilful in his favorite science. Astronomy made them such friends, that Mr. Horner petitioned me to allow him to take my son to Europe, promising to bring him back himself in a few years. This was a great trial to us, but I felt that his taste for science required a larger field than our island. His mother was reluctant to part with him, but consoled herself with a notion that he might bring his cousin Henrietta back with him.

Many tears were shed at our parting; indeed the grief of his mother was so intense, that my son seemed almost in-

clined to give up his inclination; but Mr. Horner made some observations about the transit of Venus, so interesting that Ernest could not resist. He left us, promising to bring us back everything for which we wished. In the meantime Captain Krusenstern left us a good supply of powder, provisions, seeds and some capital tools, to the great delight of Fritz and Jack. They regretted their brother greatly, but diverted their minds from sorrow by application to mechanics, assisted by the intelligent Parabery. They have already succeeded in constructing near the cascade, a corn mill and a saw-mill, and have built a very good oven.

We miss Ernest very much. Though his taste for study withdrew him a good deal from us, and he was not so useful as his brothers, we found his calm and considerate advice often of value, and his mildness always spread a charm over our circle, in joy or in trouble.

Except this little affliction, we are very happy. Our labors are divided regularly. Fritz and Jack manage the Board of Works. They have opened a passage through the rock which divided us from the other side of the island; thus doubling our domain and our riches. At the same time, they formed a dwelling for Madame Hirtel near our own, from the same excavation in the rock. Fritz took great pains with it; the windows are made of oiled paper instead of glass. But we usually assemble in our large room, which is well lighted.

Francis has the charge of our flocks and of the poultry, all greatly increased. For me, I preside over the grand work of agriculture. The two mothers, their two daughters, and Canda, manage the garden, spin, weave, take care of our clothes, and attend to household matters. Thus we all work, and everything prospers.

Several families of the natives, pupils of Mr. Willis, have obtained leave, through him, to join us, and are settled at Falcon's nest, and at the farm. These people assist us in the cultivation of our ground, and our dear missionary in the cultivation of our souls. Nothing is wanting to complete our happiness but the return of our dear Ernest.

POSTSCRIPT TWO YEARS AFTER.

We are now as happy as we can desire—our son is returned. According to my wishes he has made out Captain Johnson and Lieutenant Bell, our first visitors, whom the storm had driven from us, but who were still determined to see us again. My son found them preparing for another voyage to the South Seas. He at once seized the opportunity of accompanying them, impatiently desirous to revisit the island and to bring to us Henrietta Bodmer, now become his wife. She is a simple, amiable Swiss girl, who suits us well, and who is delighted to see once more her kind aunt, now become her mother,

My wife is overjoyed; this is her first daughter-in-law, but Jack and Francis, as well as Sophia and Matilda, are growing up; and moreover, my dear wife, who has great ideas of married happiness, hopes to induce Emily to consent to be united to Fritz at the same time as her daughters are married. Fritz would feel all the value of this change. His character is already softened by her society, and, though she is a few years older than he is, she is blessed with all the vivacity of youth. Mr. Willis approves of this union, and we hope he will live to solemnize the three marriages. Ernest and Henrietta inhabit the Grotto Ernestine, which his brothers fitted up as a very tasteful dwelling. They had even, to gratify their brother, raised on the rock above the grotto a sort of observatory, where the telescope is mounted, to enable him to make his astronomical observations. Yet I perceive his passion for exploring distant planets is less strong, since he has so much to attach him to this.

I give this conclusion of my journal to Captain Johnson, to take to Europe to be added to the former part. If any one of my readers be anxious for further particulars respecting our colony and our mode of life, let him set out for the Happy Island; he will be warmly welcomed, and may join with us in Ernest's chorus, which we now sing with additional pleasure—

All we love around us smile,
Joyful is our Desert Isle.